



CHAOTIC SWORD GOD

BOOK 07

Xin Xing Xiao Yao

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Chaotic Sword God

(混沌剑神)

by

Xin Xing Xiao Yao

(心星逍遥)

Synopsis

Jian Chen, the publicly recognized number one expert of the Jianghu. His skill with the sword went beyond perfection and was undefeatable in battle, After a battle with the exceptional expert Dugu Qiubai who had gone missing over a hundred years ago, Jian Chen succumbed to his injuries and died.

After death, Jian Chen's spirit was transmigrated into a completely foreign world. Following an extremely fast growth, his enemies piled up one after another before becoming gravely injured once more. On the gates of death, his spirit had mutated, and from that moment henceforth, he would tread on a completely different path of the art of the sword to become the sword god of his generation.

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Pipipingu @ [Gravity Tales](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 601: Ten-Thousand-Year-Old Heavenly Resource

While Jian Chen could surmise that these three pieces had been left behind by Mo Tianyun, he really couldn't begin to fathom the mystery behind them. If this was some sort of treasure map, there was no hint of a path or even a marking to indicate anything. It looked to be a regular tuft of animal skin, but it was completely unbreakable and hard to the touch.

Jian Chen turned the three pieces around several times. He eventually found the act unbeneficial and stored them back in his Space Ring. One of the three was what remained from the destruction of the Bi family, and Jian Chen had no intention of news leak out.

Afterward, Jian Chen stayed in his room for the next two days. He left his room when the annual auction started.

During the two days that past, the one called Little Spirit didn't come to him again.

Early that morning, Jian Chen took grabbed the tiger cub and then made his way to the auction house. With the purchase of an entry ticket for several purple coins, Jian Chen was able to enter the auction house with the throngs of other people.

The space within the venue was extremely spacious, and there were seven levels to the main hall. Each level was filled with a multitude of seats that spanned as far as the eye could see. There

were at the very least ten thousand of chairs per level, and since there were seven levels, at least seventy thousand people could be seated in this building.

The auction houses of Mercenary City did not have special guest rooms for people to enjoy. Instead, ordinary seating was provided for everyone. Whether it was the head of an illustrious family or a traveling merchant from some unknown land, they could be seen sitting together despite the gap in status.

Still holding the sleeping cub, Jian Chen walked up to a corner of one of the levels and carefully waited for the auction to finally start.

Roughly two hours later, the entire hall had filled with people to max capacity. Despite it being filled with over ten thousand people, the people remained relatively silent while everyone patiently waited for the event to begin. Not a single person tried to start a ruckus, and even the voices of the people conversing stayed whispers. If anything, many of them were using their eyes to do the talking.

Eventually the last remaining strands of light in the room dimmed, plunging the area into darkness. This darkness persisted for a while before several intense beams of light suddenly illuminated the frontmost podium for everyone to see clearly.

Standing on top of this podium was a young, beautiful woman, who seemed to have appeared out of thin air. Her appearance let slip that she was around thirty years old. The azure-blue robes she wore gave her a type of allure that perhaps only the devil himself

could best. At this one moment, a small wooden mallet could be seen on the podium with her.

There had been no need for Jian Chen to even think to know that this beautiful woman would be the host of the auction. However, what surprised Jian Chen was the fact that this woman was a Heaven Saint Master.

Heaven Saint Masters were individuals who would enjoy an illustrious amount of fame if they came to the Gesun Kingdom. For an individual like this to personally lead an auction house was a lavish opportunity that only Mercenary City could afford.

The auction officially started after a few words of greeting by the hostess. One by one, rare oddities and exotic treasures began to take the stage, enticing the audience. The participants, who had been silent before, began to make noise as they shouted their offers.

“Middle Earth Tier Battle Skill for those with the fire Saint Force — starting bid is fifty thousand purple coins...”

“A single Class 7 Radiant Spirit Pill that can heal even the gravest of injuries within minutes — starting bid begins at seventy thousand purple coins.”

“Class 6 Monster Core, a treasure that can rarely be obtained on the continent. A once-in-a-lifetime item! The bid will begin at forty thousand purple coins.”

One by one, the auctioneer showcased rare items to the audience before they started to bid and fight over them. Each time the bid ended, the winning price was at least three times the original amount.

Soon enough, four hours had passed. The auctioneer brought out an antique yet elegant box. As soon as the lid was opened, a fragrant aroma wafted through the air. It covered every inch of the entire room, and caused several people to grow excited at the smell.

From his own seat, Jian Chen's eyes concentrated on the box in the auctioneer's hand. He knew that this item was something that he needed.

“Dear audience, I presume that this is not a strange item to everyone here. The object I hold is an extremely rare heavenly resource. Its name is the Geofruit, a fruit that was grown with spirit dirt that was enriched by the energy of the world. For ten thousands of years, the Geofruit has existed in the world as an extreme rarity even among the other heavenly resources. Not only does it have a life-changing effect of power strengthening, it can also prolong the age span of the eater. Should an Earth Saint Master or a Heaven Saint Master eat it, their lifespan will definitely increase by another two hundred years. It will also elevate their power to a whole different realm.”

The appearance of the Geofruit had inflamed the eyes of everyone there with excitement. Each of the Heaven Saint Masters were not lacking in funds by any means, and they had also several large groups to help supplement their wealth should they need it.

To the Heaven Saint Masters who were almost at the end of their lifespan, worldly items, such as money, were nothing important at all — their lives were far more important.

The auctioneer smiled at the audience to conclude her speech, “Well, this servant will delay no longer with the auction. Everyone is well aware of the effects of the Geofruit I’m sure, and so it should go without saying that this is an opportunity that cannot be missed! It has a starting price of five hundred thousand purple coins and each successive bid must be a minimum of ten thousand. Begin!”

“Five hundred and fifty thousand purple coins.” By the end of the auctioneer’s declaration, someone increased the bid by five times the minimum bid.

“Six hundred thousand.” A person to the side of Jian Chen made a bid as well. He was a burly middle-aged man wearing a rich-purple robe. His facial appearance was nothing special besides his two bright and spirited eyes and his tall, sharp eyebrows. With those two traits and the powerful sword intent that exuded from him, he looked like a strong deity of the sword.

“Heaven Saint Master!” When Jian Chen sensed the man’s strength, he was secretly shocked. As expected, Mercenary City was a place where the strong gathered. It was rare to see Heaven Saint Masters elsewhere, but they were a common sight in the city.

“Seven hundred thousand!”

“Eight hundred thousand!”

.....

The short moment after the Geofruit had been announced, a war between the bidders had already brought the price up to a million purple coins. A price like this was already enough to buy several thousand-year-old heavenly resources.

“One million three hundred thousand.” An elderly voice called out from the first level. By now, the astronomical price of the Geofruit had already scared off many of the bidders so that only a few remained.

“One million three hundred and fifty thousand.” The man next to Jian Chen spoke through clenched teeth. It seemed as if this price was already nearing the limit of what he could afford.

“One million four hundred thousand.” The same elder from before immediately called out.

With a disappointed sigh, the man muttered to himself, “Forget it, I’ll wait for the next auction to buy one.” Even though he had given up, there was still regret found in his voice.

Jian Chen had clearly heard what the man had said. He gave him a quick glance before looking back to the auction stage once more.

“One million seven hundred thousand....”

“One million eight hundred thousand....”

By now, the price of the Geofruit had already skyrocketed to almost two million purple coins. While it looked like the only difference between a thousand year old heavenly resource and a ten thousand year old heavenly resource was age, a ten hundred thousand year old heavenly resource was able to prolong the life of the one who ate it. With just this one factor alone, a ten thousand year old heavenly resource was far better than a thousand year old one.

Furthermore, ten thousand year old heavenly resources were extremely hard to obtain. The ones that managed to survive the harsh winds and stormy rains were few, and many heavenly resources in the several thousand year old ranges were plucked by magical beasts or humans to eat. Thus, raising heavenly resources to such an ancient age was an extremely difficult task.

“Two million eight hundred thousand.” At last Jian Chen broke his silence to offer a bid of his own. His bid beat the previous bid by a whooping million. He knew that plenty of people were fighting desperately for the Geofruit, so in order to deter others from bidding, he would bid an even higher amount.

This time, the auction house grew silent. Two million eight hundred? That was a sky-high price that would wash out the rest of the bidders.

Even the middle-aged man right next to Jian Chen stared

strangely at him. Chuckling, he said, “Brother, you are quite bold if you’re willing to spend so much money for the Geofruit. I presume you’ll be giving it to an elder of yours?”

With a silent smile, Jian Chen shook his head.

Laughing openly, the man replied, “I was mistaken it seems. Then, is it for your own use, brother? A ten thousand year old heavenly resource gives a considerable amount of power to the eater. A Great Saint Master can become an Earth Saint Master with the help of one. One doesn’t even have to worry about the risk of becoming a cripple during that threshold either.”

Jian Chen’s eyes lit up straight away when he heard those words from the man. Cupping his hands, he asked, “Brother, is what you just said true? Can a Great Saint Master really become an Earth Saint Master with this?”

“Of course! This isn’t a secret by any means. Brother, if you don’t believe me, then feel free to ask any other man the same question, but not a single household would waste such a treasure on a Great Saint Master since ten thousand year old heavenly resources are unbelievably rare.” The man replied.

“Three million.” Just then, another offer was given.

“Three million five hundred thousand!” Jian Chen did not hesitate to increase the price again. He would take this heavenly resource with all his power for the sake of his younger cousin.

Chapter 602: Fantasy Star Ocean

Once the price reached three million five hundred thousand purple coins, even more members of the audience gave up bidding. Even the other bidders who were still attempting to purchase the heavenly resource began to balk at the price, and started to have second doubts. Ten thousand year old heavenly resources were rare, but they appeared once every year in Mercenary City. If the bidders didn't purchase one this year, there was always next year.

“Three million six hundred thousand.” For a while, the auction house was silent before another voice finally called out.

“Four million.” Jian Chen immediately gave an even higher bid. While it looked as if he was calm inside, his heart was starting to ache somewhat. Four million purple coins was more than enough to buy a hundred thousand year old heavenly resources.

“Brother, you must be very adamant on taking that Geofruit. Haha, I am Hu Xiaotian, what might your name be, brother?” The middle-aged man next to Jian Chen asked.

Jian Chen turned to study Hu Xiaotian. Seeing how earnest and honest the man looked, Jian Chen decided the man was not someone who would act kind in order to gain someone's trust for their own benefit. “This one is called Jian Chen.” He smiled.

“Jian Chen! The very same one known as the number one mercenary in the Gathering of the Mercenaries and known as the King of Mercenaries, that same Jian Chen?” Hu Xiaotian exclaimed

in surprise.

“I am he!” Jian Chen answered.

Hu Xiaotian was clearly startled by this announcement, but he quickly regained his wits and cupped his hands in salute. “So you were Jian Chen, the King of Mercenaries. It is nice to meet you. What a pity. I was preoccupied when the Gathering of Mercenaries happened and was unable to watch the battles. Otherwise, I would definitely have watched your match.”

After that, Jian Chen and Hu Xiaotian spent the rest of the auction chatting and bidding. In the end, Jian Chen managed to buy the Geofruit at the high price of four million eight hundred thousand purple coins.

While their conversation was happening, everyone in the auction house turned to look at the corner Jian Chen was in. They were all curious to know which grand family this person came from.

On the third floor of the auction house, a white-robed elder slowly creased his eyebrows as he sank deep into thought.

“Strange, why does the voice of the one bidding for the Geofruit sound so familiar?” The elder muttered. Then, a second later, a brilliant gleam of light flashed across his previously dull eyes as he gave a small shout, “Jian Chen! That’s Jian Chen’s voice! But how? Did he survive?”

Now that he had surmised that the bidder had been Jian Chen, the elder got out from his seat and hurried on over to the stairwell. Walking down to the first level, his eyes moved through the dark auction house as he looked for the corner where Jian Chen sat.

Upon seeing Jian Chen, the elder began to tremble as a vicious smile seized his face. “It’s him! It’s really him! I didn’t think that he had survived, but the Seal of Treasure Mountain must still be on him.”

Feeling the sharp glare of the elder, Jian Chen instinctively turned to look at the source of the stare. When Jian Chen saw the elder, he felt startled, but then a meaningful smile appeared on his face. He stood up from his chair and strode over to where the elder was.

With a swagger to his step and a smile, Jian Chen greeted the elder. “If this one’s memory is correct, then you must be the third elder of the Shi family. I didn’t believe we’d meet each other here, how coincidental.”

This elder had been the elder of the Shi family with the wind affinity. Back when Jian Chen had practically been chased to the end of the earth, the feeling of hopelessness caused by this elder had left Jian Chen with an unforgettable memory of him.

“So you really are Jian Chen!” With that confirmation, the third elder was now completely convinced that this youth in front of him was the very same Jian Chen that had stolen the Seal of Treasure Mountain.

Now that he knew Jian Chen was alive, the man couldn't help but feel excited. Ever since Jian Chen's supposed death, they had never once stopped searching for the Ruler Armament. They had spent tons of energy in order to use several secret methods to find the location of the Ruler Armament, but to no avail. They had come out for the worse after each attempt.

However, on a random trip to the annual auction, he had come across the culprit who had stolen the Ruler Armament. This accidental meeting rekindled the elder's hope and glee.

"Jian Chen, you are a resilient one. You're still alive even after receiving such heavy injuries." The elder sneered.

Laughing in return, Jian Chen replied, "Perhaps King Yanluo himself was unwilling to give me shelter, so I escaped death."

"Hmph, it was a mistake on our end to not dispose of your body. If we had, you would not be able to live as happily as you do now. Jian Chen, I don't wish to mince words with you. Since the Jiede clan isn't here, you may as well come back to my Shi family and return the Seal of Treasure Mountain. We will keep silent about your survival if you come with us." The elder suggested.

Still smiling, Jian Chen playfully glared at the man, "Third elder, you should go back. I have some things to buy yet, so I won't have time to accompany you." After that reply, Jian Chen turned around to return to his seat.

Glaring daggers at the back of Jian Chen, the third elder tightly clenched his fist in anger. If it were not the fact that they were in Mercenary City, he would have attacked Jian Chen a long time ago without giving him the chance to escape.

“Jian Chen, I’ll see to it that you won’t escape this time.” The man laughed coldly to himself as he left the auction house. He was no longer in the mood to continue bidding.

“Brother Jian Chen, I can see that old man was giving you a fishy stare. Was there a problem between the two of you in the past?” As soon as Jian Chen sat back down, Hu Xiaotian asked him a question.

Not caring to hide the truth, Jian Chen nodded, “Correct, he is an enemy of mine.”

“Brother Jian Chen, you should be careful then. That old man is a Heaven Saint Master, that is an entity that an Earth Saint Master can’t hope to contend with.” Hu Xiaotian responded in a serious manner.

“Thank you for your concern. This one will be cautious.” Jian Chen smiled. Hu Xiaotian was unable to see just how strong Jian Chen was since he had hidden his strength.

“But brother Jian Chen, you shouldn’t worry too much. If you ever come across an enemy, then you just need to run to Mercenary City. Not a single person would dare to act out in Mercenary City, even Heaven Saint Masters are not exceptions to

this. It's hard to come across a Saint Ruler as an enemy as well, but even they won't cause strife in the city." Hu Xiaotian explained.

Jian Chen's heart had skipped a beat when he heard that. "Even Saint Rulers wouldn't dare fight? Is Mercenary City truly that terrifying?"

"Far more than you could possibly believe!" Hu Xiaotian's face changed to a serious expression. Holding a hand out to point at the sky, he said, "Little brother, you've seen the barrier of Mercenary City for yourself I'm sure. Let me tell you, this barrier has existed for countless of years from when Mo Tianyun himself placed the barrier down. Protecting Mercenary City through the ages in silence, it has struck down anybody that dared to fight or injure another within its boundaries. The more offensive offenders have been killed. That is how terrifying it is."

"I see!" Jian Chen remarked.

The auction continued on for another hour as plenty of strange but rare goods were bought.

Some time later, the auctioneer brought out a small glass bottle that was about the size of one's fist. Inside, there was a small, faint glow that seemed to resemble the dazzling light of a star.

If one were to look carefully, one would be able to see that there were a multitude of small particles of sand slightly moving around in the bottle. Each particle let out a light that resembled starlight itself, and from afar, it looked as if the bottle contained the starry

sky, each light resembling an individual star from the universe.

Holding the bottle up above her head for everyone to see, the auctioneer started with, “Audience, please allow me to introduce our next treasure to be sold. The item I hold in my hand will most likely be a first for everyone to see here. That is because this item is from one of the death zones of the Tian Yuan Continent — Fantasy Star Ocean.”

“What? Fantasy Star Ocean? I’ve heard that, aside from Death’s Nest, the Fantasy Star Ocean is the most terrifying death zone! Even Cross Mountains aren’t even terrifying compared to it. A Heaven Saint Master stands no chance there; even a Saint Ruler would find their death at hand there.”

“Who would have known that this would be an object from such a place? It has to be something that a Saint Ruler brought back.”

“But what use is there for it? If it’s from Fantasy Star Ocean, then there has to be some sort of use for it.”

.....

Like the rock that caused a thousand ripples in a pond, the entire audience buzzed with noise the moment they heard where the item came from. They were all extremely interested in what the auctioneer was holding, and were curious about the bottle.

Looking carefully at the bottle, Jian Chen knew that this was the

item that the two spirits had told him about. It was one of the extremely high quality materials, stardust.

“This is stardust! But it’s only a small amount. If we wish to forge the Azulet swords, then we’d need at least several kilogram worth of stardust.” Ziyang spoke with disappointment in Jian Chen’s mind.

Those words caused no small amount of shock to Jian Chen, who remarked, “What? Forging the Azulet swords requires that much stardust?”

“Yes, the more stardust, the better until we hit the limit itself. The amount of stardust here might be small, but it is good to hear that this Fantasy Star Ocean has plenty more of it. Master, you must go to that place and gather even more stardust.” Ziyang spoke.

Jian Chen couldn’t help but feel a grimace overcome his face. He hadn’t known how dangerous this Fantasy Star Ocean was before, but hearing others talk about it had given him a preliminary idea of the dangers.

A Heaven Saint Master was destined to die if they entered, and even a Saint Ruler would most likely fall to their death. That much was enough to tell him that he wouldn’t even be able to take a step there.

Chapter 603: Followed

The auctioneer's voice continued to reverberate, "The item I hold in my hand possesses a very unique name, Spiritize Dust. Not only is it pretty to look at, but the effects it has will undoubtedly be shocking to anyone that hears them. The stardust contains the energy of the world within each particle, and when worn on the body, one's cultivation speed will skyrocket! It is by no means inferior to when one uses a monster core to cultivate."

There was a tremendous commotion from the audience after they heard such a proclamation. From this, everyone knew just how much the dust was worth.

The next few words that came from the auctioneer's mouth caused everyone to practically go insane.

"The effects of the Spiritize Dust aren't limited to just that. As soon as this dust makes contact with the outside world, it will draw in the energy of the world around it in a never ending stream. If placed around one's home, then that home will become rich with such energy and transform the area into a holy ground for cultivation. Everyone, please take a moment to think about the great benefits of such an item. With this, what worries would your families have?"

The fire in everyone's eyes had practically ignited into a full blaze with those words. To them, this Spiritize Dust possessed effects that were many times better than whatever a ten thousand year old heavenly resource, like the Geofruit, could do. They could, after all, make their homes into a powerful place of cultivation.

Furthermore, this also opened up the Fantasy Star Ocean as a potential source of revenue. Unfortunately, obtaining Spiritize Dust was nearly impossible because of the dangerous location, so that put an end to mass exportation of the dust.

In this one moment alone, everyone had made up their minds. They needed to buy this Spiritize Dust no matter what the cost. For the sake of the growth of their families, this was a crucial item.

“Let us start the bid for the Spiritize Dust at three million purple coins. Each bid will increase the price by another ten thousand. If anyone is interested in the Spiritize Dust, then this is an opportunity that cannot be missed. This Spiritize Dust is an absolute must.” The auctioneer smiled.

After that, another herculean battle took place as everyone began to shout their prices one after another. Rising in price at an astronomical rate, the Spiritize Dust was already well over ten million purple coins within a few moments.

Jian Chen remained seated in his corner in silence without ever making a bid. Since he knew that he needed a tremendous amount of this stardust, there was no point in fighting for this small amount. It would do him no good to obtain such a miniscule amount for an astronomical price.

“It would appear that I must go to Fantasy Star Ocean to obtain enough stardust in order to craft the Azulet swords.” Jian Chen thought to himself.

The stardust was fought over for an hour by the entire audience before finally being bought out by a mysterious buyer on the second floor for a high price of eighty million purple coins. A sum like that was far more than enough to buy an entire nation.

Once the auction house finished auctioning all of its items, the event ended and Jian Chen left the hall. By this time, the outside sky was growing dark.

Hu Xiaotian walked by Jian Chen's side and looked up at the sky with him. "Somehow, an entire day has passed without me knowing it. Brother Jian Chen, which inn might you be staying at?"

"My inn is the one known as the Sweet Fate inn on the westward street. Sire Hu Xiaotian, it's getting late, so I'll be heading back first to rest. And so, I'll be taking my leave here." Jian Chen cupped his hands to bid farewell to him before turning around to leave.

"One moment. As things turn out, I haven't an inn to stay in myself. Would it be possible for brother Jian Chen to take me there?" Hu Xiaotian laughed as he caught up to Jian Chen to walk by his side.

"Ah, brother Jian Chen, you've gone to the holy lands within Mercenary City I remember. That's a place where even Saint Rulers dream of going. Would it perhaps be possible to divulge just what bizarre or fantastic things can be found there?" Hu Xiaotian asked in passing.

“There are many fantastic things to be found there, but what truly interests Saint Rulers are the Saint Tier Battle Skills.” Jian Chen replied honestly to Hu Xiaotian. Mercenary City was a strong place, and there was no need for him to hide or worry about revealing the secret at all. It was something that he believed all Saint Rulers already knew, and thus, thought wasn’t a secret at all.

“As I thought, I figured that there would be one of the Saint Tier Battle Skills they mention in legends, but I didn’t expect these battle skills would be so powerful to destroy even the heavens themselves. Only Saint Rulers are said to be able to start learning them due to the difficulty of comprehension. Anyone who understands how to use a Saint Tier Battle Skill works are all Saint Kings without exception, or so I’ve heard.” Hu Xiaotian remarked.

Jian Chen looked strangely at Hu Xiaotian before smiling, “It seems sire Hu Xiaotian is quite knowledgeable about these matters if you know about them to such an extent.”

Hu Xiaotian chuckled in response, “It is common knowledge, nothing more. As long as you travel the continent long enough, then things like this slowly come to you.”

The two traveled for some time before they finally arrived back at the inn.

Jian Chen walked into his room and closed the door behind him. He walked on over to the window and opened the boards. Looking outside, Jian Chen’s eyes slowly traveled to a giant building off in

the distance. A single white-robed elder could be seen sitting on the roof while staring at Jian Chen with gleaming eyes.

It was the third elder of the Shi family.

When he saw the elder, Jian Chen couldn't help but feel a small smile crawl onto his face. From the very moment he had left the auction house, the third elder had been stalking him. This time the elder was cautious and had stuck close to Jian Chen in order to avoid losing him again.

“Third elder, are you not feeling tired?” Jian Chen smiled playfully at the elder.

With eyes that could leave a smoldering spot, the elder gave a level stare at Jian Chen, “Jian Chen, I advise you to return the Ruler Armament. You cannot escape this time, or do you plan to live your entire life within the confines of Mercenary City?”

Jian Chen said nothing this time, and instead closed the boards to his windows. Sitting on his bed, Jian Chen began to think of what to do next. Should he kill the elder straight away and head to Longevity Valley, or should he wait for the Saint Ruler of the Shi family to come so that he could have elder Xiu in Longevity Valley take care of him?

The only vexation that crossed his mind was the fact that he didn't know just how strong the Saint Ruler of the Shi family was. He didn't know whether or not elder Xiu would be able to handle the Saint Ruler either.

After considering the possibilities for a long period of time, Jian Chen finally reached a verdict on what to do next. He then settled into a state of meditation to recover his strength.

Early next morning, Jian Chen bid farewell to Hu Xiaotian before leaving. He headed to outside of the city with the sleeping tiger cub.

Not too long after he left Mercenary City, Jian Chen continued for another ten kilometers before stopping. Turning to look at the third elder who had been stalking him, Jian Chen smiled, “Third elder, the barrier to Mercenary City stops here. Do you not wish to steal the Ruler Armament from me? How do you plan on doing that now?”

With both arms folded against his chest, the elder spoke, “Jian Chen, I presume you have called for help of some sort if you can stay so calm. Hurry and call them out, you can’t hide anything anymore.”

“If it’s you, I have no need to call anyone else to help me. You worry too much, third elder. I am by myself today. If you wish to take the Ruler Armament from me, then take it yourself.” Jian Chen smiled. His presence had already spread out over fifteen kilometers. If a Saint Ruler were to appear, Jian Chen would run straight for Mercenary City.

“How arrogant!” The third elder spat out. Looking at the open area around him, the man said, “Everyone, come out and let us

take the two Ruler Armaments from him.” The elder had remembered that Jian Chen had stolen the Duanyun Sword from the Jiede clan as well.

With his finishing sentence, four seventy-year old elders suddenly came from the sky in each cardinal direction, surrounding Jian Chen so as to trap him in.

Jian Chen was not disturbed by their appearances at all. Thanks to Jian Chen’s spread out presence, he had been fully aware of their existences. From the moment he had been in the city to now, there had been no way that someone could hide from him. No matter what they used, they were as visible to him as if they were within his line of sight.

A faint azure-colored sword appeared in the third elder’s hand as he glowered at Jian Chen. “I’ll give you one last chance. Will you or will you not return the Ruler Armament?” At the same time, the other four men brandished their own Saint Weapons.

With five Heaven Saint Masters against him, Jian Chen didn’t dare be lazy either. He resolved to use the Origin energy of the sword spirits. A beam of azure and violet light immediately shot forth from his right palm and formed a single blade.

The third elder thought back to the last time he had fought Jian Chen to death when he saw the Origin energy. The look on his face solidified as he grew serious, “Fourth elder, be careful. Jian Chen isn’t as simple as he looks on the surface.”

“Third elder, worry not. The four of us all know of what happened to the Cai brothers. We won’t be following them into the afterlife today.” One of the elders laughed confidently. Afterward, a surge of yellow-brown energy flowed forth from his body to form a protective layering over him like armor.

With this armor for protection, the elder’s confidence had been bolstered as well. He immediately flew toward Jian Chen to strike.

Chapter 604: The Battle Outside The City

Jian Chen laughed. Without fear for his own life, he charged straight for the elder as well. With a thrust of his right arm, the Origin energy, that was surging forth, arced straight toward the elder's chest in a brilliant gleam of light

The elder, covered by his earthen armor, was startled by Jian Chen's course of action. He had no idea that Jian Chen would be that fast.

Up until now, the few individuals of the Shi family had figured that Jian Chen was still an Earth Saint Master. It had been outside of their expectations to learn that Jian Chen had gone from a Second Cycle Earth Saint Master to a Heaven Saint Master in such a short amount of time. The speed at which Jian Chen struck out with his sword had been far faster than what an Earth Saint Master with a wind attribute would even be capable of. Shocked by this, the elders were now reevaluating Jian Chen as an even bigger threat.

Despite the speed of his stab being outside of his expectations, the elder wearing the earthen armor had been equally fast in his reaction. In a flash, his giant sword exploded forth with a yellow light that originated from his body. The light on the sword expanded to match the amount of energy being fed to it before it finally smashed against the Origin energy Jian Chen wielded.

“Boom!” With the collision between Jian Chen's Origin energy and the elder's Saint Weapon, a tremendous amount of Saint Force was expelled from the clash and blanketed the earth below. With

dust pervading the air from the blast, the area between Jian Chen and the elder was completely blocked by dust, making visibility almost impossible.

The other four elders from the Shi family used a thin layer of Saint Force to protect themselves from the incoming dust. They continued to intently stare through it with stunned expressions.

“Third elder, is Jian Chen truly a Second Cycle Earth Saint Master?” One elder asked in disbelief.

The third elder gave a small hum as he tried to think. “One year ago, when I fought him, he was only an Earth Saint Master, but barely a year after that time, his strength has basically toppled the heavens to make a tremendous change. What’s startling is the fact that he isn’t a cripple even after his Saint Weapon was destroyed. His strength should be extremely low and not what it is now.”

“Every man is destined for fortune after surviving a great disaster. I suppose that saying is true because of cases like this.” Another elder sighed.

Within this moment, a single person came flying straight out of the dust toward the third elder.

The elder narrowed his eyes for a moment before letting out a grim laugh, “Unharméd? It seems elder Ma didn’t even leave a single scratch on you! Jian Chen, you really did grow even stronger than before.” Surrounding his body with the wind element, the elder shot fifty meters into the sky without a second to spare.

Jian Chen's figure flew straight into the sky as well. Aided by the wind element permeating the world, Jian Chen chased after the third elder without reprieve.

“What? He's a Heaven Saint Master too!?” The other three elders were astonished. Not a single one of them had expected, or ever thought, that someone who had only been a Second Cycle Earth Saint Master a year ago would become a Heaven Saint Master capable of such speed now. This speed left the three Heaven Saint Masters tongue-tied.

Seeing Jian Chen fly through the air had caused no small amount of shock to the third elder as well. Stupefied, the elder couldn't help but remark, “But how!? Just a year ago, you were merely an Earth Saint Master before you had your Saint Weapon destroyed. How did you become a Heaven Saint Master instead of becoming a cripple!?” The third elder was no longer as calm as before. His face was filled with abject disbelief, and in his heart, waves of shock surged everywhere with great power.

Unable to stop himself from sneering after seeing the look on the elder's face, Jian Chen laughed, “Third elder, I should really pay you back for that debt from one year ago. Don't even think that you'll leave here alive today.” With the final word spoken, Jian Chen closed in on the third elder, and pointed his Origin energy sword straight at the throat of the other man.

The third elder was already aware of just how devastating the Origin energy was and knew better than to cross swords with it. Borrowing the speed boost his wind affinity gave him, the third

elder tried his best to gain some distance. Then, with his Saint Force pulsating into his sword, the elder shouted out loud, “Earth Tier Battle Skill — Cloud Piercer!” The wind attributed Saint Force that had been around the third elder immediately condensed into a thicker wave of energy that helped propel his body toward Jian Chen. Moving at the speed of an arrow shot from a bow, the elder attempt to spear Jian Chen straight through.

Jian Chen coldly laughed once more when he saw the third elder decide to approach him instead of retreating. With the Origin energy, Jian Chen moved to stab the elder when, all of a sudden, something behind him prompted him to turn around and stab at empty space.

“Ding!”

A crisp sound could be heard, and a single figure was levitating in what was once empty space — that figure was the third elder. The third elder that had been approaching him from the other side had been nothing more than a mirror image that disappeared as soon as Jian Chen looked at it.

“What a strange battle skill.” Jian Chen praised with some astonishment. The Cloud Piercer that the third elder had used was nothing more than a diversion. The first body had been a mirror image that moved as he pleased while his actual body used some sort of strange method to hide itself. It had been a silent and strategic course of action that allowed the elder to traverse behind Jian Chen in an attempt at a fatal strike. If not for the presence that Jian Chen had spread out, then the third elder would have most likely delivered a fatal blow.

“Pfft!” A mouthful of blood escaped from the third elder’s lips as his face paled due to the loss of blood. Glancing at his Saint Weapon, there was now a new jagged chip to its edge.

“Elder Hunyuan! Elder Hunyuan is dead! Third elder, Jian Chen has killed elder Hunyuan!” A cry came from down below where the dust was finally beginning to recede. The first Heaven Saint Master that had fought with Jian Chen could be seen on the ground. A single hole, between his eyebrows, was leaking blood.

“What! Elder Hunyuan is dead?” The third elder cried out. Turning to look down, his body grew rigid with shock when he saw the sight for himself.

Taking advantage of the elder’s period of shock, Jian Chen charged forward with the Origin energy to pierce through the elder’s eyebrows. In the blink of an eye, the distance between the two had closed to less than a meter.

Letting out a startled yelp, the elder swung his head as if his life was hanging by a thread. Despite just barely dodging the strike by a hair’s breadth, a single gash was visible on his forehead.

“Whoosh!” The second delivery of Jian Chen’s sword was just as fast as the first, and followed the elder’s movements without leaving him time to breathe.

The elder was dreadfully terrified of the Origin energy and wanted nothing more than to distance himself from it. With no

other choice but to rely on his own speed, he retreated to widen the distance. Unfortunately for him, Jian Chen harbored no desire to allow him such a course of action. Encasing himself with the wind from the world, he dashed toward the third elder in order to pressure him into a situation where he couldn't even retaliate.

“Assist the third elder!” The other three elders snapped out of their shock and immediately shot into the sky to help the elder.

“Don't bother helping me, just use your Heaven Tier Battle Skills! Only those can hurt this bastard. Who would have thought that a single year was enough to cause such a drastic change in his power?” The elder cried out in anger. His heart had been thrown into disarray with today's events; this was a first in his three hundred years of living. A single youth not even fifty years old was giving him a thrashing that not only affected his physical self but also his pride.

Without delay, the three Heaven Saint Masters immediately split into three separate directions and began to charge their Heaven Tier Battle Skills.

The usage of a Heaven Tier Battle Skill by three Heaven Saint Masters was more than enough to cause a tremendous influx of energy. The clouds in the sky above started to swirl around the area and the dirt on the ground was thrown about due to the fierce wind blowing around. As if an angry dragon was about to wake up, the power that was beginning to unfold here started to spread so much that even the inhabitants of Mercenary City could feel the change in weather.

“This is a Heaven Tier Battle Skill! Only those can cause such a tremendous amount of pressure; a Heaven Saint Master must be doing battle somewhere!”

“There’s people outside the city fighting! Looks like they’re about to use a Heaven Tier Battle Skill — two or three of them I’d wager. That’s something that’s extremely hard to come by, let’s go watch!”

Mercenary City was instantly in an uproar with many people running out of the city to see where the battle was taking place.

Hu Xiaotian had been sitting by himself in an inn as he enjoyed a cup of fine liquor and a platter of cooked meat. When he sensed the influx of pressure caused by a Heaven Tier Battle Skill, his eyebrows narrowed together as he thought to himself, “There was a Heaven Saint Master following Jian Chen yesterday, and Jian Chen just left the inn today. Could he be the one fighting?”

“Jian Chen participated in the Gathering of the Mercenaries as an Earth Saint Master, but that was barely four years ago. Did he perhaps become a Heaven Saint Master within those four years? No, that shouldn’t be possible, but only a Heaven Saint Master should be possible of using a Heaven Tier Battle Skill like this. It has to be someone else that’s fighting; I should take a look myself.”

Scattering several golden coins onto the table, Hu Xiaotian left the inn as well.

The sound of a young woman could suddenly be heard in the sky

above Mercenary City.

“Big brother? That’s big brother! He’s fighting someone! There has to be trouble then. Should Little Spirit help big brother?”

“But... but... master told Little Spirit to not interfere in things like this. If Little Spirit interferes, won’t master scold Little Spirit when master gets back? But... but big brother has the scent of master on him. Could Little Spirit really watch big brother get hurt without doing anything?”

“Aiyah. What to do? What to do? How is big brother doing? Should Little Spirit save big brother?” Little Spirit’s voice grew even more frantic by the second. She didn’t know what to do.

Chapter 605: Enduring Four Heaven Tier Battle Skills

The sounds that were coming from the sky of Mercenary City went completely unnoticed by the inhabitants. Many people rushed to the scene of the battle on top of their magical beast mount. They were all in a hurry to watch the battle where even a Heaven Tier Battle Skill was being used.

The weather of the area was growing more and more turbulent by the second due to the amount of pressure being created by the Heaven Tier Battle Skills. Even the air around the battlefield felt as if it had solidified. Jian Chen felt his body grow sluggish because of the three battle skills being used, giving the third elder ample time to escape.

The elder let out a sigh of relief. He had felt like his arms and feet had been shackled by the injuries he had sustained while evading Jian Chen and because of the constant paranoia of being hit by the Origin energy. His true strength couldn't be used which had made him feel rather sullen.

“Jian Chen. Let's see you try to be arrogant this time! Heaven Tier Battle Skill — Heaven's Execution Blade!” The third elder bellowed before unleashing his battle skill. He vowed to injure Jian Chen and vent his earlier frustrations.

Deadlocked by four different Heaven Tier Battle Skills, Jian Chen felt as if he was carrying a gigantic mountain on his back. Moving was extremely difficult for him at this very moment. His movement was restricted so much that he could not dodge them.

“Rah!” Suddenly, Jian Chen let loose a tremendous roar to the heavens that reverberated throughout the area. At the same time, two fierce glows of azure and violet began to blare up in Jian Chen’s eyes as if two demonic will-o-wisps were dancing in them.

With the squall that was going on, sand and dirt was being kicked around hiding the pieces of stone and grass that were also scattering about. In a flash, it all converged to Jian Chen’s position. Just two and a half kilometers away, a strange but attractive force of energy was somehow pulling at the trees in a forest. Soon they too flew to Jian Chen while basked in an azure and violet light.

In no time at all, Jian Chen’s body was completely covered by a dense amount of stones and tree. Under his control, four separate but gigantic blades made from these fragments were formed in an instant. Each blade radiated a faint azure and violet glow as they levitated around him.

At the same time that Jian Chen finished his movements, the four elders also finished charging their Heaven Tier Battle Skills. Three of the Saint Weapons shines furiously with an eye-piercing light. The amount of energy flickering off their blades started to distort the space around them.

Commanding the swords with his mind, Jian Chen made three of them shoot off toward the three elders coming at him so as to abate the strength of the Heaven Tier Battle Skill.

“Boom!” The three swords collided with the Heaven Tier Battle Skills while in mid-air, causing an explosion to occur. The blast caused the ears of everyone nearby to twinge in pain while a shockwave flowed off in every direction. Even the clouds up above were scattered apart while the remaining dregs of energy slammed into the ground and left a crater nearly a meter deep.

The three swords of Jian Chen appeared like tofu in the face of the battle skills. The blades had all shattered apart upon collision while the Heaven Tier Battle Skills themselves remained intact. They continued toward Jian Chen at a slightly slower speed than before. One could see that the power of the battle skills had been weakened.

A wave of earth converged around Jian Chen’s body before forming an incomparably strong looking piece of armor. The original two finger-wide blade of azure and violet Origin energy transformed into a sword about as wide as a palm and ten meters long. The iridescent light radiating off of the sword dyed the area around it a vibrant hue. Jian Chen had brought his usage of the azure and violet Origin energy to its limits. He then shot off three separate rays of Sword Qi to clash with the remaining battle skills.

The clash between the two caused yet another explosion. The Sword Qi was blown apart while the three Heaven Tier Battle Skills were weakened once more. Jian Chen was out of time after completing this additional step. The very last thing to do was to allow the three battle skills to hit him.

“Boom!” Jian Chen’s body was sent flying away, following the third explosion. Even though the three Heaven Tier Battle Skills

had been weakened by several levels, their remaining power was still not to be trifled with. Even the armor he wore had been shattered into pieces from the blow.

“Pfft!” A mouthful of dark-red blood escaped from Jian Chen’s mouth as his face paled by several degrees.

If he had been facing one Heaven Tier Battle Skill, Jian Chen could probably escape without much harm if any. However, there was no way he would be able to escape unharmed against the simultaneous blows of three of them.

Thus, Jian Chen’s body had been catapulted away by the impact of the battle skills, but before his body could even stabilize itself, another wave of pressure locked onto him as the third elder brought both hands over his head. In his hands, a giant sword about a hundred meters in length had materialized with a resplendent beam of light escaping from the blade.

“Heaven’s Executing Blade!” The elder bellowed before swinging his hands down. With that motion, the hundred-meter-long blade came down toward Jian Chen’s head like lightning. Wherever the blade traveled, the space around it slightly shuddered as if it was on the verge of being torn apart.

Without any time to wipe the blood away from his mouth, Jian Chen had commanded the Origin energy to shoot forth from his hand with the utmost seriousness. Along with a ten-meter-long blade, the remaining sword, that had been made from stones and trees, shot forth to smash against the third elder’s Heaven Tier Battle Skill.

“Boom!”

The fierce explosion rocked the entire area. It sounded more like a crack of thunder impacting against the earth than an explosion. Everyone became deaf at that moment as the earth beneath them incessantly trembled. Several places on the ground started to fracture as a series of spiderweb-like cracks crept into the surrounding area.

The last remaining sword had exploded in a mighty spectacle. There was barely any tree bark to be seen anymore. It was as if the Heaven's Executing Blade had utterly decimated the tree bark. Destroying its existence while the blade itself continued toward Jian Chen.

Jian Chen stared at the battle skill with a grim face. The third elder's usage of the Heaven's Execution Blade was several times stronger than when the other three Heaven Saint Masters had used it. This was a fact that caused Jian Chen to feel even more somber than before. Up against such a powerful battle skill, his movements were limited once more which meant there was no room nor time to dodge. His only remaining option was to endure this fourth battle skill.

A crazed glare crept into Jian Chen's eyes as he exhausted the very last vestige of his energy by using the Origin energy to defend against the mighty Heaven's Execution Blade. He also reapplied another layer of the earthen armor surrounding his body. Although it was powerless to defend him against a Heaven Skill Battle Skill, it would still bolster his defenses by a small portion,

allowing him to resist even more.

The Heaven's Execution Blade moved quickly, and before Jian Chen could shoot more than three bursts of Sword Qi, it collided with his body. It instantly shattered the armor he had been wearing. Suffering yet another heavy wound, Jian Chen's body rocketed away like a bullet. Blood from his mouth pervaded the air as a bloody mist, and his chest was a mangled mess as well. Defending against four Heaven Tier Battle Skills was more than what he could take at a comfortable level.

He flew for another three hundred meters before finally coming to a rest far away. His face was as white as sheet due to blood loss, but even though he was injured, he was not powerless to stop himself from falling to the ground. He somehow managed to remain in the air.

“Jian Chen, you're as good as captured. Hand over what we want or we won't even let you die with your body intact.” The third elder gasped out. The Heaven Tier Battle Skill had taken a lot of energy from him, and the Heaven's Execution Blade itself had taken more than half of his Saint Force.

The other three elders convened around the third elder while gasping for air as well. Each one of them stared at Jian Chen as if they were looking at some sort of monstrous being. Not once did they ever imagine that Jian Chen would be able to handle four Heaven Tier Battle Skills at once and still remain in the sky. This result wasn't within their expectations.

“What an unordinary brat he is. I had thought that he would be

crippled after sustaining four Heaven Tier Battle Skills, if not dead. But even now, he's still alive with manageable wounds. How inconceivable." One of the elders spoke with astonishment.

"I see he's deserving of the title King of Mercenaries if he can handle even that." The elder to his right sighed in admiration.

Staring deeply at Jian Chen, the third elder said, "The power he wields in his hands is extremely strong. With just him alone, the four Heaven Tier Battle Skills we used were weakened several times over. By the time they had hit him, the power wasn't even at half of what it started out to be. Otherwise, there'd be no way he'd handle all that without damage."

"I wonder just what freakish power it is that he uses." The elder whispered with a small hint of envy in his voice.

"That's simple. Wait for when we capture him, we'll know all about this strange energy then." The third elder laughed before looking back to Jian Chen, "Well, do you still think you can face off against us?"

Remaining silent from his spot in mid-air, Jian Chen tilted his head to look down at his mangled chest. He knew that if he had not tempered his body with the Chaotic Force to make it even stronger than before, then the third elder's battle skill would have most likely blown a hole straight through his chest. If that had to happened, then it would have been impossible for Jian Chen to survive the rest of the battle.

With such a grievous wound, any other Heaven Saint Master would have most likely have lost their ability to fight. However, Jian Chen still possessed considerable fighting strength. The plethora of strength that had been granted to his body had allowed him to take on a wound like this with enough energy to spare.

Glaring at the four elders in front of him, Jian Chen's body slowly began to seep with energy as if raring to fight. The Origin energy in his right hand grew brighter and brighter, allowing the beams of light to take on a more definitive form of energy.

A year ago, Jian Chen had been powerless against the third elder's Heaven Tier Battle Skill, but, today, he was completely capable of withstanding four of them.

Sensing the intent to battle from Jian Chen, the third elder's expression changed to reveal his surprise of Jian Chen's willingness to still fight.

Jian Chen had been able to take on four Heaven Tier Battle Skills and still have energy. This type of prowess was something that even a Sixth Cycle Heaven Saint Master was unable to pull off. After all, the combination of skills used earlier could kill any Heaven Saint Master!

Chapter 606: Imprint Of Death (One)

By now, a large group of people had gathered from Mercenary City. They watched the battle take place between Heaven Saint Masters from far away. Several Heaven Saint Masters had already flown up into the air to watch it from another perspective.

Hu Xiaotian had been one of those Heaven Saint Masters. Although they were all standing far away, their eyesight was strong enough to allow them to clearly watch the battle.

When Hu Xiaotian saw Jian Chen floating in the air, he was surprised, “Eh? Isn’t that brother Jian Chen? So he really did become a Heaven Saint Master. I underestimated him, but isn’t he amazing. He’s fighting against four other Heaven Saint Masters and managed to withstand four Heaven Tier Battle Skills. Perhaps brother Jian Chen has become a Sixth Cycle Heaven Saint Master?”

“Look! The one fighting those four Heaven Saint Masters, isn’t that the one who took first place in the Gathering of Mercenaries, Jian Chen?” Several figures had realized Jian Chen’s identity, and had cried out in shock.

“Eh? It really is Jian Chen! But wasn’t he an Earth Saint Master when he was in the Gathering of the Mercenaries? How is he a Heaven Saint Master now after a single year?”

“Is that really him? Heavens, he’s already a Heaven Saint Master. What’s more, he’s able to fight against four other Heaven Saint

Masters using their Heaven Tier Battle Skills? How inconceivable. Jian Chen was in the Gathering of the Mercenaries, so he can't be over the age of fifty!"

"What? Fifty? Have you seen how old he looks? According to what I know, Jian Chen's true age can't be over the age of thirty."

"You're kidding? He isn't even in his thirties? Good heavens, becoming a Heaven Saint Master at that age is really unbelievable."

"Those four Heaven Saint Masters used their Heaven Tier Battle Skills just now, but Jian Chen managed to defend himself from them. That's really something else! I'd have to guess he's a Fourth Cycle Heaven Saint Master at the very least."

"Why just a Fourth Cycle? Even a Sixth Cycle Heaven Saint Master would be hard-pressed to survive four Heaven Tier Battle Skills. I say that Jian Chen has to be a Saint Ruler!" Another elder announced. His expression was complex as he thought about how Jian Chen had managed to defend against four Heaven Tier Battle Skill. A feat like that was bordering on the unbelievable.

"What!? Saint Ruler!? How could that be!?"

Jian Chen's identity was quickly revealed to everyone there, but his revealment as a Heaven Saint Master was particularly shocking. The people looking at him felt shocked as they discussed with one another.

When someone suggested that Jian Chen had already become a Saint Ruler, the entire area became deathly silent. Not a single one of them spoke since news like that was far too incredulous to even imagine.

“Jian Chen becoming a Saint Ruler before he even reaches his thirties would be far too terrifying. With the entire continent as a scale, talent like that would be hard to come by every millenia.” After a very long time, another elder spoke with a sigh.

“Jian Chen entered the holy lands of Mercenary City, and with his talent already, it will only be a matter of time before he becomes a Saint Ruler.” A frail looking elder slowly exhaled.

On another side, three black-robed men stood together as they watched the scene with calm expressions. One of the three held a single fan in his hands as he muttered, “A Heaven Saint Master younger than the age of thirty who can withstand four Heaven Tier Battle skills, that Jian Chen really is something special. His potential for the future is practically unlimited. If we rope him into our clan before he becomes a Saint Ruler, it’d be a great boon for us. Elder Zhou, go and make the inquiries on Jian Chen’s background later. See just what type of person he is and where he’s from.”

The middle-aged man standing behind the fan holder nodded without hesitation, “It’ll be difficult, but I will try my best.”

With his strength revealed, Jian Chen’s overwhelming talent had caught the attention of the more influential households. It went without exception that every person was determined to be in his

good graces no matter what. If they couldn't, then at the very least, they wouldn't be enemies with him.

Everyone knew that to offend Jian Chen was tantamount to offending a figure that was close to becoming a Saint Ruler! This person had a very good chance of becoming a Saint King in the future too!

.....

Meanwhile, in the sky, Jian Chen was injured, but he was still as imposing as ever. Just like a sword being unsheathed, the power emanating from him was filled with the intent to make battle.

The elders of the Shi family all thought about the results of making an enemy with Jian Chen, but an unwashable blood debt had already formed between the two. The differences between them couldn't be solved amicably, so they needed to take advantage of the time before Jian Chen became an actual threat to the Shi family. They needed to kill him first. Like killing the baby in the cradle, they would have to act now or be forced to witness a disaster to their family when it was too late.

“Everyone together now! We must make sure to capture Jian Chen today. If we cannot, then we must make sure he dies here instead. We cannot let him escape again this time!” The third elder shouted. Without giving Jian Chen anymore time to rest, he and the other three charged straight at him.

Jian Chen was not afraid, even with the situation. Instead of

retreating, he dashed forward with the Origin energy ready to fight once more.

“Brother Jian Chen, I’m here to lend you a hand!” Just at that moment, a loud voice exploded forth from the direction of Mercenary City. Seconds after, Hu Xiaotian could be seen flying toward him.

“Jian Chen, we are here to help you as well!” Not even moments after Hu Xiaotian had spoken, the three black-robed men from earlier flew through the air to help Jian Chen as well. The three of them wished to gain Jian Chen’s good favor, so helping him out in this moment was an extremely rare opportunity that had to be taken advantage of.

“You have us as well!” Several more voices cried out from the crowd as another four Heaven Saint Masters shot forth. Each one bore an intent that was more than willing to fight with the four elders of the Shi family. They were all borrowing this opportunity to help create a bridge between them and Jian Chen to gain even more power. After all, helping someone in their time of need was the best way to start a friendship.

“And my axe!”

Within several seconds, eight different Heaven Saint Masters were flying through the sky to help Jian Chen fight off the four elders from the Shi family.

This sudden aberration had caused the four elders to grow

extremely grim. They had never thought that an event like this would happen.

“I appreciate everyone’s willingness to lend me a hand, but I alone will be enough to deal with these four. Everyone, please just stay by the side and continue to watch. Today, I will slaughter these four myself.” Jian Chen spoke to the eight. Only the four Heaven Tier Battle Skills frightened him, but without those, Jian Chen didn’t fear these four at all. With his Origin energy helping him, he had nothing else to worry about.

He wasn’t willing to place himself in debt to another person since he knew that their intentions weren’t as pure as snow. All in all, the best option was to just refuse their kindness.

As he spoke, Jian Chen closed in on the four elders. He was just several hundred meters away from clashing with them.

When those eight Heaven Saint Masters heard Jian Chen, they could only stop there mid-flight. They too wished to see the true strength of someone who had managed to withstand four Heaven Tier Battle Skills. Furthermore, they wanted to see just how an injured person like Jian Chen could kill four Heaven Saint Masters.

“If brother Jian Chen wishes to kill those four himself, then I won’t stop him in doing so.” Hu Xiaotian smiled from his spot.

“If brother Jian Chen needs our help, all you need to do is just ask and the three of us will do our best to help out.” The fan-holding middle-aged man in black robes smiled as well. He did not

care who the four elders fighting Jian Chen were.

“If sire Jian Chen wishes to kill those four personally, then we won’t interfere with him, but sire Jian Chen, if you truly do need our help, just mention it.” The other Heaven Saint Masters repeated one after another politely. If these men dared to stand against the Shi family, that meant that their own statuses were perhaps quite considerable as well.

Chapter 607: Imprint Of Death (Two)

Without another word to be said, Jian Chen began to do his best to fight the four elders.

Wielding the Origin energy, he chased down the four to stab at them. The unbelievable speed in which he swung his weapon had been fast enough for several mirror-images to form. Stroke by stroke, the Origin energy struck out accurately and swiftly. Fast, accurate, and unrelenting were the three aspects needed to master the art of the sword.

While the four elders held the advantage of numbers, they were all deeply afraid of the power of the Origin energy, and thus, were limited in their ability to fight. Since they were handicapped as such, the result was that they were being completely overwhelmed by Jian Chen, and they all felt sullen about it.

Jian Chen's presence remained spread out, helping him by serving as a radar monitoring every direction possible. No matter where they tried to turn to get to Jian Chen, their attempts were completely without success. Jian Chen would manage to evade their strikes each and every time. He would sometimes swing his Origin energy at their Saint Weapon instead. As a result, they would have to dodge as well.

“This bastard is clearly injured, so why can he still fight like this?” After several dozen exchanges, one elder let out an angry curse as he dodged Jian Chen's strike.

“We can’t go on like this! The four of us will have to use a Heaven Tier Battle Skill together now!” Another elder spoke. With one arm tied behind their backs, they could only resort to this.

However, the third elder refused, “No, a Heaven Tier Battle Skill is far too tiring to use at this moment. A single use of one is enough to take out fifty to sixty percent of our Saint Force. If we use it a second time, that’d use up the rest of our Saint Force, so we’d be powerless to fight. That serves us no use.” The third elder was loath to admit it, but if he had known that Jian Chen was this strong, then he would have notified the family to dispatch some people. If he had sent a message to the Jiede clan, then the two households could fight Jian Chen together. There would have been no need for his own household to fall into such disrepair and lose a member.

“Ah!” Suddenly, a cry could be heard from one of the elders. The reason for this outcry was due to the fact that Jian Chen had speared his chest through with the Origin energy.

“Elder Mark!”

The third elder and the other two let out a startled cry before they launched an Earth Tier Battle Skill at Jian Chen in order to save the elder.

However, Jian Chen’s mobility was even better than they inferred. Before they could unleash their Earth Tier Battle Skill, Jian Chen stabbed his Origin energy into the forehead of the elder and extinguished his soul.

“Elder Mark!” The three cried out in misery. It had been a very painful experience for them to witness the death of elder Mark in front of them.

Jian Chen didn’t bother to stop after killing elder Mark. His right hand lashed out with three separate rays of Sword Qi to strike at the three dazed elders.

The death of elder Mark weighed heavily on the remaining three elders. Only the third elder was able to regain his wits in time to dodge the Sword Qi. The other two reacted too late, and the Sword Qi pierced straight through their chests.

Knowing that this was a chance to kill the other two, Jian Chen immediately rushed forward with the Origin energy flashing in his hand. Swiftly, Jian Chen moved to slice their necks.

“Pft!” Two jettisons of blood could be seen as the decapitated heads of the two elders flew through the air. Since their lives had not yet completely ended, looks of complete terror could be seen in their eyes.

With a flick of his finger, two bursts of Sword Qi erupted from his hands. They stabbed a hole straight through the middle of their foreheads, extinguishing their souls.

In an instant, three Heaven Saint Masters had been killed out of the four. Only the third elder was left.

At this sight, the third elder had lost all color in his face as well as all his fighting spirit. Turning around, he began to run away. With the four of them, they were no match for Jian Chen, so with just him now, it would only be a matter of time before he too would die.

The Jian Chen of today was vastly different to the Jian Chen a year ago. He was no longer the same Jian Chen that he could chase down to the ends of the earth.

“Don’t even think about running!” Jian Chen laughed. With the wind element wrapping around his body, Jian Chen chased after the third elder. His speed was even greater than the third elder’s, and Jian Chen unleashed a burst of Sword Qi halfway through his flight. It chased after the third elder.

“Whoosh!” The sound of the Sword Qi flying through the air could be heard before it stabbed straight through the third elder’s chest at a lightning-quick speed.

A mouthful of blood escaped from the third elder’s mouth, causing his face to pale even more. His figure shook slightly as it floated in the sky, almost like he was on the verge of losing control. However, he managed to slow his descent and regain control of his flight in a timely manner.

Experiencing that escape was impossible, the third elder gave up the notion. A resolute look appeared on his face as he turned to stare down Jian Chen. “Jian Chen! Even if I die, I won’t let you live

in peace after! My Shi family will never renounce our anger for you, and you won't live to see yourself outlive it — Imprint of Death!" The third elder howled. The next moment, a faint red mist began to rise from his body while his body itself began to dry up. Within seconds, it looked as if his body had lost all of its moisture, leaving him as a dried husk of a skeleton.

The red mist gathered above the third elder's body before forming a grotesque bloody pattern. The second after it formed that pattern, it flew at Jian Chen with unbelievable speed.

Jian Chen didn't have enough time to dodge the bloody pattern due to the unbelievable speed of it. It was almost as if it was made of lightning with how fast it traveled. In no time at all, it embedded itself into Jian Chen's body and disappeared out of sight.

Seeing that the blood pattern had buried itself into Jian Chen's body, the third elder's eyes slowly closed as he fell to the ground. His body resembled a mummy that had been deprived of moisture for an extremely long time.

Paling with fright, Jian Chen didn't even bother to look at the third elder as he hastily checked his body. A seal had formed where the blood pattern had touched him. It looked like he had been branded.

Grim, Jian Chen thought back to what the third elder said before he died. "Imprint of Death," he muttered, "What kind of black magic is this?"

“The Imprint of Death is something that makes use of the three vital energies of the human body to leave an unwashable mark on their enemy for easy tracking.” As soon as Jian Chen had finished speaking, Hu Xiaotian’s voice could be heard as he flew over.

Staring at Jian Chen with a complicated expression, Hu Xiaotian’s mind was far more chaotic than what his expression showed. The fact that Jian Chen had killed four Heaven Saint Masters was something that he still found hard to believe.

Arriving by Jian Chen’s side, Hu Xiaotian let out a long sigh as if trying to calm himself. Giving himself some time to think, Hu Xiaotian then said, “There is a huge cost for using the Imprint of Death. One will only use this technique when all hope is lost and death is inevitable. Once it is used, the caster will have all of their energy sucked away and their spirit will be vanquished. All of the lifeblood in the body will evaporate and the body will wither away just like that man just now. But the one marked with the Imprint of Death, will be easily tracked by it wherever he might go. No matter how far he runs, he will be unable to evade detection.”

Still staring at Jian Chen, Hu Xiaotian said, “Brother Jian Chen, you must pay attention to this next part. The people behind this elder will definitely use the Imprint of Death to find you. No matter how far you go, you cannot escape them. If you can’t handle this future, then you should hide in Mercenary City.”

Jian Chen had felt his mind cloud over with those words. According to what Hu Xiaotian was saying, then the Saint Ruler of the Shi family would be able to find him with ease. There was no

use in running to throw him off.

Chapter 608: Arrival Of Two Saint Rulers (One)

Seeing the miserable expression on Jian Chen's face, Hu Xiaotian could infer that there was likely no one supporting Jian Chen that could handle the power behind the third elder. As if to console him, he said, "Brother Jian Chen, don't fret too much. Mercenary City is considered the safest spot on the continent. If you can't deal with those people, then stay within the city. I'm sure these people here will be more than willing to help you out as well." Hu Xiaotian pointed to the Heaven Saint Masters that had been willing to help Jian Chen fight off the four Heaven Saint Masters a few moments ago.

"Hahaha, Jian Chen, you are truly powerful beyond imagination. I hadn't expected to see you kill those four with nearly a single strike! I can say now that my eyes are fully opened to the world." The man in black-robos spoke. Holding his fan, the man laughed out loud, but his words had been indeed spoken from the heart. They were all truly stunned by just how strong Jian Chen was.

"Sire Jian Chen, the Imprint of Death on you is something that the men behind the third elder could use to rapidly find your position. If sire Jian Chen can't fight them off, then my Vulcan Shrine would be more than happy to help you. Don't worry about the Shi family, our Vulcan Shrine does not fear them." A red-robed elder smiled amicably as he tried to gain Jian Chen's favor.

"You have my Dayong clan. If sire Jian Chen requires it, then my clan would be more than happy to help you deal with the Shi family." The black-robed man was unwilling to give up their

chance to earn Jian Chen's favor as well.

Wiping away the blood from the corners of his mouth, Jian Chen cupped his hands to everyone. "I am thankful for everyone's willingness to assist me, but I will deal with this matter myself. I won't be imposing my troubles on you all." There was no such thing as a free meal in this world, and Jian Chen knew just what had prompted these people to help him. He would not let himself owe another a favor so easily.

"Well then, there isn't much use in chatting for now. Brother Jian Chen is injured something fierce. We should treat his wounds back in Mercenary City first." Hu Xiaotian piped up. Taking a pure-white pill out of his Space Ring, he handed it over to Jian Chen, "Brother Jian Chen, this is a Class 6 Radiant Spirit Pill. It won't be enough to heal your wounds, but it should speed it up a bit. Take a bite."

Looking at the thumb-sized pill in Hu Xiaotian's hand, Jian Chen hesitated for a moment before finally taking it from him. With a word of thanks, he swallowed the pill. Jian Chen possessed a rather favorable impression of Hu Xiaotian, and wouldn't refuse the pill that he had offered him. That would be impolite to Hu Xiaotian.

After taking the pill, Jian Chen felt his wounds healing faster than before. Even his pale face was beginning to regain some of its red flush from before.

Jian Chen took the Space Rings from the corpses of the elders he had just killed before the other people around him left. They

returned to Mercenary City together, leaving behind a stunned audience that was still standing far off to the side of the wreckage of battle.

Jian Chen's true strength had astounded every single person in attendance. It had been far beyond their imagination. His name would soon rapidly spread throughout the entire continent with tremendous speed.

A man who had reached the Heaven Saint Master realm before the age of thirty. Furthermore, this same person was able to survive not one Heaven Tier Battle Skill but four. Even combined, those elders had been no match for Jian Chen. This was a gargantuan piece of information that would spread across the continent with great fervor.

"Big brother, you're hurt! Are you okay?" The very moment Jian Chen stepped across the barrier of Mercenary City, the clear sounds of a young woman could be heard echoing in his ear.

Jian Chen's figure shook slightly as he looked around, but Little Spirit couldn't be seen.

"Big brother, Little Spirit is right here!" Following the voice, the young figure of a woman suddenly materialized in front of Jian Chen. It was the very same Little Spirit that had appeared in his room the night before, but this time, her body was slightly transparent. One would be able to see straight through her body.

"Big brother, it's good that you were able to beat those idiots!

Otherwise, Little Spirit would have gone against master's orders to not interfere with the world! Big brother, do your wounds hurt?" Little Spirit asked in concern from her perch a meter high in the sky. There was a pained look on her face, as if she was looking at a hurt family member of hers.

The fact that this Little Spirit, a being that had only just been crying over the loss of her long-lost master yesterday, was so pained at his current situation made Jian Chen feel slightly emotional as well. He had taken a liking to Little Spirit, and his feelings of her felt like a fellow orphan that was all alone in the world.

Stopping in his tracks, Jian Chen smiled to Little Spirit, "I'm fine. It's only a relatively minor injury, it won't take long before I heal up completely."

"Yea! Big brother, you have to make sure to heal up. Little Spirit feels really bad to see you like this." She replied in concern.

Seeing the expression on her face, Jian Chen couldn't help but smile inwardly to himself.

"Hey, brother Jian Chen, who are you talking to? Talking to yourself like that, are you sure you're fine?" Hu Xiaotian asked from beside Jian Chen. He had been waving his palm in front of Jian Chen's face with an odd look.

Jian Chen stared blankly back at him as he turned away from Little Spirit. Looking at Hu Xiaotian and the other men, he could

see that each of them were looking at him rather strangely.

“I was talking with Little Spirit. Can you not see her?” Jian Chen asked curiously.

Looking around the area, Hu Xiaotian answered, “Brother Jian Chen, have you gone blind perhaps? There’s no such Little Spirit anywhere. I can only see you standing off by yourself speaking to no one but yourself. No matter where I look, I can’t see anyone else.”

“Big brother, Little Spirit doesn’t wish to let them see Little Spirit, only you can.” Little Spirit explained in the midst of his confusion.

Hearing her explanation, Jian Chen realized what was happening. He smiled to everyone and continued to walk. Jian Chen awkwardly smiled to himself while trying his best to not ‘talk to himself’ any longer.

Jian Chen looked for an inn to rest in for the night. When he found one, he holed himself up for the night while Hu Xiaotian and the other two groups returned to their own rooms.

Shutting the door to his room, Jian Chen tore off the clothes he had been wearing with a pained grunt. He used a clean towel to wipe off the dried blood on his chest. The wounds on his chest could clearly be seen. In some parts of his chest, parts of his bones were visible.

“How fortunate that my body has been tempered by the Chaotic Force, making it far stronger than before. If not, then I would likely have not had the strength to stand anymore after that.” Jian Chen muttered. He set down the tiger cub, and let it continue to sleep in peace on the bed.

Since the cub was sleeping off the heavenly resources it ate, the cub was completely unaware of the outside world. While Jian Chen had been fighting those four elders, it had remained asleep and was not shaken awake. Jian Chen himself had no solution on how to change that either.

After a simple treatment of his wounds, Jian Chen took out two Radiant Spirit Pills from his Space Ring and swallowed them down. There were plenty of experts and major families within Mercenary City, so he didn't dare use his Radiant Saint Force to heal himself. Furthermore, Jian Chen wouldn't disclose the fact that he was a Radiant Saint Master until he was a Saint Ruler.

Just as Jian Chen closed his eyes to focus on healing, Little Spirit suddenly materialized within the middle of the room. When she saw the horrifying wound on Jian Chen's chest, Little Spirit's eyes flashed with a pained look. Reaching out with a finger, a small burst of energy emanated from her before entering Jian Chen's body.

Following the energy entering Jian Chen's body, the wounds began to heal at an extremely accelerated pace. The speed at which the wounds were healing was far faster than if he were to use his Radiant Saint Force to heal.

Sensing the drastic change within his body, Jian Chen's heart skipped a beat. Opening his eyes, he realized that Little Spirit was in the room with him. From her appearance, he could infer just what had just happened.

"Big brother!" Seeing Jian Chen open his eyes, Little Spirit revealed a sweet and affectionate smile.

"Little Spirit, thank you for your assistance!" Jian Chen thanked her.

"Hee hee, as long as big brother is fine, then Little Spirit will be happy to help." She giggled.

With her assistance, Jian Chen didn't need to do a thing. His own body recovered at a terrifyingly rapid rate. What would have needed two or three full days to heal before was taking a scant minute to fully recover. Jian Chen was shocked beyond belief.

"Big brother, Little Spirit wants to ask a question. Big brother better not lie to Little Spirit." She stared carefully at him with apprehension.

"Little Spirit, what question is it? As long as I know the answer, I'll be sure to help you." Jian Chen asked.

Hesitating for a brief moment, she looked hopefully at Jian Chen, "Big brother, have you really not seen master before?"

Jian Chen shook his head with no hesitation. “Little Spirit, I won’t lie to you. I have never seen your master before.” He sighed regretfully.

Little Spirit became melancholic as she listened to Jian Chen’s denial, and her head drooped down. She was more than aware that her master had been gone for plenty of years, but she was desperate to see her master once more since he was like a parent to her. He was an important figure that she longed to see.

“Big brother, Little Spirit will be leaving first then.” She spoke as her body began to fade away from the room.

Looking to where Little Spirit had previously been, Jian Chen let out another long sigh before washing away the rest of the blood trails on him. After changing into a new set of clothes, he sat on his bed and began to think about the Imprint of Death the third elder had placed on him.

The Imprint of Death looked like a very complicated pattern formed from a series of abstruse runes that imprinted itself on his body as if it were branded deep into his skin. Jian Chen could sense nothing out of the ordinary from it.

The fact that these runes had been embedded in him made him feel worried. Although he had killed the third elder, this blood debt did not leave any feeling of happiness in him.

Since the Imprint of Death was on him, Jian Chen had no other choice but to give up on going to Longevity Valley. He had to stay

within the confines of Mercenary City in order to evade being killed by the Saint Ruler of the Shi family. While elder Xiu in Longevity Valley was a Saint Ruler himself, Jian Chen had no idea just how strong he was. In case elder Xiu stood no chance against such an enemy, then Jian Chen would have allowed harm to befall Longevity Valley.

Furthermore, there was no guarantee that elder Xiu would even help Jian Chen fight the other Saint Ruler. Becoming the enemy of a Saint Ruler was a request that would require a far closer relationship with elder Xiu before Jian Chen would even suggest it.

Chapter 609: Arrival Of Two Saint Rulers

(Two)

Meditating on his bed, Jian Chen tried hard to think of the best way to get rid of this Imprint of Death. If he couldn't, he wouldn't be able to leave Mercenary City.

“The Imprint of Death is formed from the three vital energies that can be found in a person. Its importance is the fact that they will leave behind an unerasable mark on the body that can easily be tracked.” Hu Xiaotian's words came to mind, causing Jian Chen to feel even more grim.

He knew that Hu Xiaotian knew far more about this than he did. If he said that there was no way to erase this imprint, then it was perhaps impossible to really erase the mark the third elder left on him.

If that was true, then Jian Chen had to become strong enough to not fear even a Saint Ruler. Otherwise, he would be helpless to do anything besides stay in Mercenary City if the Saint Ruler from the Shi family came to dispose of him. Even if he used a Space Gate to travel countless of kilometers away, the Imprint of Death on him would make him unable to hide. No matter where he ran, the Saint Ruler would give chase.

Jian Chen's mind raced to find a solution to his problems. Ming Dong's uncle, the grand elder of Mercenary City, Tian Jian, came to mind as well as the Saint Rulers from the Qinhuang Kingdom. Right now, only those two factions would be able to help him fight off the Shi family.

However, Tian Jian was unwilling to interfere in most matters. The last time he had helped out with the Huang family was because of Ming Dong. Tian Jian was an extremely respectful figure within Mercenary City, so unless he personally called out to Jian Chen, there would be no way to meet him again for help. Therefore, he was ruled out.

The Qinhuang Kingdom had four other Imperial Protectors and each one of them was a Saint Ruler. Even the Shi family would be afraid of their strength, but the Shi family was not his only enemy. There was still the Jiede clan with their own Saint Ruler. If the two of them were to unite against the Qinhuang Kingdom, then even the Qinhuang Kingdom would feel slightly pressured.

Jian Chen thought back to when two of the Qinhuang Kingdom's Saint Rulers had met the Saint Ruler of the Sect of Dragon and Tiger and came back with gloomy expressions. This caused some concern for him since he didn't know what kind of exchange had occurred between the two parties in the first place. Whether it was some sort of invisible pressure or something else of importance, Jian Chen did not know. However, he knew it was just one disaster on top of another whatever the case. Thus, having the Qinhuang Kingdom help him with the Shi family and the Jiede clan was not a desirable option.

Jian Chen spent almost half the day in a grim mood trying to think of a solution. He had no idea just how he would manage both the Shi family and the Jiede clan. Even though he could also ask the patriarch of the Huang family, it would without a doubt add to the troubles of their family. They had more than enough to deal with at the moment with their current feud.

“Am I really going to have to stay within Mercenary City and cultivate until I breakthrough to become a Saint Ruler?” Jian Chen thought as he massaged his temples in frustration. The promise he had made to the little fatty was reaching a year by now with not much time left. If he were to delay any longer, then he would really go over the year long promise he had made with him.

“Ziying, Qingsuo, would you two perhaps know of a way to erase this Imprint of Death?” With no other options, Jian Chen could only hope that the two sword spirits would be able to help. Although Hu Xiaotian said there was no way, Jian Chen was unwilling to give up.

This time, Ziying and Qingsuo did not quickly reply to him. After waiting for a very long time, Jian Chen finally heard Qingsuo’s soft voice, “Master, Ziying and Qingsuo possess the power to erase it, but our current power is far too weak for it to be optimal. The imprint on your body was made from the three energies of a person, and are not just pure energy, which means it won’t be easy. We will take some time to erase it.”

Jian Chen was happy to hear they could erase it, “How long will it take?”

“With our current strength, I’m afraid it will take three months.” Ziying responded before continuing, “There is a second option. If master raises the Chaotic Force to a considerable degree, then it will swallow the imprint. That is because the Chaotic Body is something that will not allow any foreign thing to invade it.”

“We’ll go with the first option then, but I’ll bring up the Chaotic Body another time.” Upon mention of the Chaotic Body, Jian Chen felt a headache. The Chaotic Body was indeed strong, but it was also extremely hard to achieve. The amount of Chaotic Force he needed was immense. A single Ruler Armament was equivalent to a sliver of Chaotic Force. Jian Chen was at a loss for how many Ruler Armaments he needed to refine in order to fabricate the Chaotic Body. If he had to absorb the energy of the world, then it would perhaps be tens of years for him to gain that equivalent sliver of Chaotic Force.

Afterward, Jian Chen discussed the process of getting rid of the Imprint of Death with Ziyang and Qingsuo. He remained oblivious to the fact that his feat of killing four Heaven Saint Masters was already spreading all around the land with frightening speed. Many people and factions were hearing of Jian Chen’s achievements, so his name was spreading further and further on the continent.

At this current moment within a mountain range, there stood a giant building made of wood. In the center of one of the rooms, a giant beast could be seen sitting peacefully on the ground. Also in the room were several men of considerable age seated to the side.

“Everyone, I’ve just received some unfortunate news. The third elder and the ones with him have all died.” One of the elders with long hair spoke in a sorrowful tone.

Everyone was startled upon hearing the news.

“What? The third elder is dead? My lord, how could that have

happened? The third elders and the others were all killed?” One of the elders asked in agitation. There was clearly some relationship between him and the third elder.

The man seated at the very front of everyone else sighed in sorrow. With a low voice, he said, “I am sure everyone remembers the one that stole our Ruler Armament, the Seal of Treasure Mountain.”

“Of course! That man is the first ranker of the Gathering of the Mercenaries, Jian Chen. But he was killed by the combined efforts of the third elder and the ones from the Jiede clan. Even now, he has hidden the Seal of Treasure Mountain from us. We haven’t found hint nor hair of it ever since. We even used countless of methods to try and forcibly recall it, but everything ended in failure.” One elder spoke with clenched teeth from his hatred of Jian Chen.

“My lord, why did you mention Jian Chen? Could the third elder’s death relate to him?” Another middle-aged man asked.

“Correct. It has to do with Jian Chen.” The lord of the Shi family continued with a serious expression. “Yesterday, I received a report from the third elder using our closed line of communication. The Jian Chen who stole the Seal of Treasure Mountain is still alive. Furthermore, he showed up in Mercenary City once more. We had four elders go with the third elder to help him capture and reclaim the Seal of Treasure Mountain, but what I learned just now was very startling to hear. The third elder and the other four are all dead. It was at a great cost that the third elder used his life to place the Seal of Death on Jian Chen.”

After the man finished speaking, everyone remained deathly quiet. All of them were far more than tongue-tied. They simply couldn't believe their ears. It was truly hard to believe that the third elder and the other four had all been killed by Jian Chen. They had heard of Jian Chen's strength before, but hearing about his strength now was beyond their scope of prediction. His future potential was just that dazzling.

"That Jian Chen is far too talented. That talent of his allowed him to kill five Heaven Saint Masters! It's only a matter of time before he becomes a Saint Ruler. My lord, our blood debt with Jian Chen is irreconcilable, we must not let this person live." An elderly voice rang out, breaking the silence of the hall. The one who had spoken was an elderly old man with wrinkled skin.

"Yes!" The leader of the Shi family nodded. "That's right. Jian Chen cannot be allowed to live. Otherwise, he will come seeking our family for trouble the day he becomes a Saint Ruler. We must take advantage of the fact that he is still within our scope and exterminate him with the speed of lightning itself. Notify the Jiede clan of this information. Have them bring some men so that they can stop anyone that Jian Chen might invite. We must lessen the damage on our side as much as possible.

"Second elder, fifth elder, sixth elder, elder Shiqing, elder Shiming, elder Tianhe, and elder Gumu, prepare yourselves. Notify us when the men of the Jiede clan are here, and we will go off to capture Jian Chen."

"Yes, my lord!" The aforementioned people responded.

“We will adjourn our meeting here today. Everyone may leave.”
The leader announced, allowing everyone to leave the halls.

Just as they were about to exit the halls, a monumental amount of energy suddenly manifested within the area. It was almost as if some sort of malevolent beast of antiquity had awakened from its slumber, basking the entire world with the power it brought. It squashed the air of the Heaven Saint Masters back into their throats.

“That’s the aura of the patriarch! The patriarch has broken through!”

“The patriarch has broken through to the next layer!”

“Fantastic! At our time of need, the patriarch has overcome his obstacles!”

.....

The elders of the Shi family felt stunned by this change of events, but their confusion quickly gave way to joy.

Chapter 610: Arrival Of Two Saint Rulers (Three)

The area near the back of the Shi family compound was a forbidden place that many people were not allowed to enter. Only the lord of the Shi family and the elders could convene and gather there. One by one, they looked to a hole in the mountain with reverent gazes.

The sounds of stones being moved rang out as a heavy stone gate slowly started to rise. It was situated on the mountain, and revealed a pitch black hole behind it. From within, a middle-aged man dressed in white slowly made his presence known to everyone.

Upon seeing this middle-aged man, everyone — the lord of the Shi family included — genuflected to him and respectfully said, “Congratulations to the patriarch for breaking through. Congratulations on becoming stronger!”

“Hahahaha, I’ve been behind closed doors for twenty years now, but I have finally took a step down the road of comprehending the mysteries of the world. I’ve reached the Fifth Heavenly Layer. I’ve made yet another step to becoming a Saint King.” The man cheerfully laughed.

“The patriarch is talented beyond all else. Becoming a Saint King is only just around the corner. Our Shi family is only great because of the patriarch!” One elder smiled as he flattered the patriarch.

In return, the patriarch smiled, “Wait until I reach the Ninth Heavenly Layer of the Saint Ruler realm and attempt to fuse with the Seal of Treasure Mountain. If I manage to do so, then my chances of becoming a Saint King will become exponentially higher.” However, his expression went askew as he looked to the group with suspicion. “Where is the Seal of Treasure Mountain? Why can I not sense its existence?”

His words caused the high ranking elders of the family to grow nervous. Delaying a reply for some time, the head of the Shi family finally explained, “Patriarch, the Seal of Treasure Mountain was lost to us because of our inabilities.”

“What!? The Seal of Treasure Mountain was stolen?” The patriarch’s face blanched. The joy that he had felt from making the breakthrough instantly slipped off his face.

After that, the lord of the Shi family began to recount the tale of what happened to the patriarch without leaving a single word out. After all was told to him, the anger on the patriarch’s face slowly drained away.

“It would appear my initial command for you to steal the Solunar Bow from the Huang family was a mistake. I had not thought that the barrier I placed on my great-grandson would fail and lead to his death. The Seal of Treasure Mountain was taken as a result as well.” The patriarch softly hummed.

“Patriarch, the third elder left an Imprint of Death on Jian Chen’s body before he died. No matter where he may run, Jian Chen cannot escape from us. We will reclaim the Ruler Armament

with most haste.” The lord nervously explained.

Slowly closing his eyes, the patriarch thought for a moment. His mouth opened a little later, “I’ve sensed his location, but what is strange is that I cannot sense the existence of the Seal of Treasure Mountain. It is almost as if my connection with it has been broken. Has this Jian Chen perhaps found a way to hide it from even my perception? Not only can I not sense it, I cannot even recall the Seal of Treasure Mountain even if I exhausted a tremendous price for it.”

The patriarch hummed. “There has been no conflict between us and the Jiede clan. They themselves are quite strong as well. Since we’ve already made enemies with the Huang family, it wouldn’t do to make even more enemies. Go and notify the Jiede clan of this.”

“Yes, patriarch!” The lord bowed reverently.

“You may all leave. I will go find Jian Chen. The Seal of Treasure Mountain must be returned as soon as possible to avoid any other unforeseen circumstances.” With that said, the patriarch’s figure instantly dissolved into a bolt of lightning that shot straight into the sky. His speed was just as fast as real lightning.

The patriarch was filled with dread since he couldn’t sense the Seal of Treasure Mountain. He feared that his inability to sense it meant the Ruler Armament was eternally lost. Without it, his chances of making the breakthrough to become Saint King would become all the harder.

After the patriarch had left, the lord of the Shi family sent men to the Jiede clan to spread the news and tell them of the whereabouts of the Duanyun sword.

The Jiede clan had actually received news of what had happened in Mercenary City at the very same time the Shi family did. They learned that the one who stole the Duanyun sword, Jian Chen, was still alive. Furthermore, they learned that he was the one who killed five elders from the Shi family. When they heard the news, they immediately sent a group of people to run to Mercenary City as fast as possible. Even their Saint Ruler set out when he heard the news to ensure that the operation would succeed without failure. In the eyes of the Jiede clan, Jian Chen killing five Heaven Saint Master was far too important to disregard.

In the blink of an eye, two days had passed since Jian Chen had killed the five Heaven Saint Masters. During those two days, Jian Chen spent all of his time in his room with the sword spirits. They were trying to purify the Imprint of Death on his body. It had not been that easy, and even after two days, the sword spirits had only managed to get rid of a small speck of it. At this pace, it would take the complete three months, the initial projection timeframe, to fully eliminate the Imprint of Death.

Two days after that, Jian Chen was just opening his eyes when a wriggling sensation could be felt. Looking down, Jian Chen saw the tiger cub sprawled over his legs in boredom.

As if sensing Jian Chen wake up, the tiger cub looked at him with a pitiful glance. Opening its kitten-like maw, the cub began to purr with a barely audible sound. One of its paws also scratched at the

Space Ring Jian Chen wore on his finger.

Petting the head of the cub with a soft caress of his fingers, Jian Chen said, “You are beginning to want even more and more heavenly resources. You’ve eaten quite a few thousand year old resources already and you’re still a Class 4 Magical Beast. It seems that you will require plenty more heavenly resources before you become a Class 5 Magical Beast. That’s more than I have.” Despite that, Jian Chen was not too stingy with his heavenly resources as he handed the tiger cub another five or six heavenly resources to eat.

The cub let out an excited purr before immediately wolfing down the items given to it. A short few seconds later, it had eaten them all.

With all six heavenly resources eaten, the cub relaxed on the bed, content. It then closed its eyes in order to fall back asleep.

Seeing the cub act this way, Jian Chen helplessly shook his head, but he allowed the cub to sleep while he walked out of the room.

Jian Chen wasn’t worried about anyone harming the tiger cub since he was residing in Mercenary City. The cub hadn’t attracted any outside attention so far, and the only ones that knew about it were Ming Dong and the others.

Arriving at the dining halls below, Jian Chen sat down at a table and said, “Waiter, a platter of roast meat and your finest wine.”

The waiter gave only one look at Jian Chen before his eyes lit up with recognition, “Oh my! You’re lord Jian Chen, the King of Mercenaries! Please wait one moment, lord Jian Chen, this server of yours will go notify the chefs to prepare your food with all haste!” With that said, the waiter flew to the kitchens as if the floor beneath his feet was slick with oil.

There had been a numerous amount of people in the area, so plenty of people turned to look over when the waiter had cried out. When their eyes landed on Jian Chen, they too let out gasps of both shock and admiration.

At that moment, a middle-aged man and an elderly figure walked over from their own tables. Without even giving a greeting, the two of them sat down, giving hard looks to Jian Chen.

The middle-aged man looked to be around forty years old, and wore simple clothing, a cheap azure robe. His hair was tossed freely behind him without anything to dress it. His appearance gave him a sense of being a messy person, and there was not a sense of aura coming from him. He looked to be just an average commoner.

The other elder wore white robes, and his hair was tied together. His seventy-year-old face was peaceful-looking, and he seemed to carry around a sagely presence. Yet, he did not have an aura to him either, but his face spoke volumes of the man, marking him to be an extremely capable person.

Jian Chen looked at the two without a single sound, but his mind had grown serious. He had no way of ascertaining their strengths. Even his presence had come up with nothing definitive. His presence was something that could even detect a Heaven Saint Master if they tried to conceal themselves from him. The only thing he knew that could overcome his presence was an expert at the Saint Ruler realm.

“Are you Jian Chen?” The middle-aged man calmly asked. Not a hint of emotion could be heard from him.

“Correct, I am he. Who might you two be?” Jian Chen replied just as calmly. Although two Saint Rulers were seated in front of him, they were no different than any other person in Mercenary City.

“We’ve waited for you for one whole day. At last you’ve finally come out. This must be the very first time a mere Heaven Saint Master has received such treatment in history.” The middle-aged man spoke. This time, his voice carried a cold edge to it. “Jian Chen, I am from the Shi family, and he is from the Jiede clan. We are both Saint Rulers and came today to make you return our items to us. You must know that much.” The Saint Ruler from the Shi family explained. He must have realized that Jian Chen knew the two of them were Saint Rulers and had thus mentioned it so readily.

However, to his disappointment, Jian Chen did not react at all to this revelation. He remained as calm as before as if this piece of information had no effect on him at all.

“So you are the predecessors of the Shi family and the Jiede clan, greetings!” Jian Chen smiled with his hands cupped together. Even faced against two Saint Rulers with less than agreeable feelings for him, he remained calm.

“Jian Chen. You know why we are here. So, are you willing to return what is rightfully ours? From here, we will write off our debts if you do and won’t seek trouble with you in the future.” The Saint Ruler from the Jiede clan calmly inquired.

Giving an apologetic smile, Jian Chen replied, “My apologies, but the items you wish for are no longer in my possession.”

The two Saint Rulers grew rigid straight away as the Saint Ruler from the Shi family questioned, “Then where are they now?”

Chapter 611: Death Of The Saint Ruler Of The Shi Family (One)

“Gone, they don’t exist anymore!” Jian Chen responded honestly. He didn’t fear Saint Rulers as long as he was in Mercenary City.

“What!? Gone!? They don’t exist anymore?” The Saint Ruler from the Jiede clan found it hard to remain his calm. He looked confused. His eyes coldly narrowed as if he was staring daggers at Jian Chen.

A Ruler Armament was far too important to them. It was more than a family treasure, it was also an extremely powerful weapon.

“Correct, the items you want back no longer exist.” Jian Chen smiled.

A series of emotions flickered over the two Saint Ruler’s faces, but they quickly calmed down. They didn’t believe that Jian Chen had managed to destroy the Ruler Armaments since Jian Chen was only a Heaven Saint Master, and a Heaven Saint Master wouldn’t even be able to put a scratch in it with even a Heaven Tier Battle Skill. They were after all items that a Saint Ruler left behind. How could they be that easy to break?

Sneering, patriarch Shi said, “Jian Chen, I see that you’re not willing to give back our items. Then let me tell you, the Seal of Treasure Mountain has gone through many years as a bonded item to the Shi family. Only those who possess the bloodline of the Shi

family can use it. You are not of my family, nor are you part of my bloodline. Even if you used some secret method, it would be useless. The item serves no use to you and only adds to your troubles. Why not return it to us and we'll wipe away this grudge. My Shi family won't send people to kill you anymore."

"That is right. Jian Chen, I must insist on the return of our Ruler Armament. Take advantage of when I am willing to negotiate with you and return the Ruler Armament to me. My Jiede clan will write off our debts as well and cause no more trouble for you. You won't need to stay within Mercenary City your entire life." The Saint Ruler from the Jiede clan spoke prudently.

Even though Jian Chen was sitting right in front of two Saint Rulers, even they wouldn't move a finger to hurt him while he remained in Mercenary City. If Jian Chen stayed within the city without leaving, then they would be powerless to retake their Ruler Armaments. Rather than waiting around in vain, they would try to take the suave approach and try to reclaim them another way.

"My apologies, but what I just said should explain it all. The items you want are no longer on my person." Jian Chen explained, unmoved by their attempts.

The Saint Rulers revealed cross looks. This was an awful situation since they were now worried that their Ruler Armaments were now in the hands of another great faction. If that was the case, then it would be very hard for them to be reclaimed.

"Then who has the Seal of Treasure Mountain!" Patriarch Shi

boomed.

Pointing up at the sky, Jian Chen replied, “No one has it. It has already been lost to this world, or perhaps better to say, it has already become a part of me.” The Duanyun sword and the Seal of Treasure Mountain had already been turned into Chaotic Force to temper his body, so he found this way of saying it to be quite fitting.

Jian Chen’s words were like a clap of thunder to the two Saint Ruler’s ears. Confused and stunned, they stared at him.

“What? The Seal of Treasure Mountain has become a part of you? Have you fused with it?” Patriarch Shi shot straight up his seat and gave a wide-eyed stare at the other Saint Ruler in disbelief.

Jian Chen’s heart skipped a beat when he saw their reactions and heard their questions. He realized that there was some sort of use for the Ruler Armament.

“Could it be that a Ruler Armament can be fused with the body?” Jian Chen thought to himself. This piece of information was rather valuable since he lacked a weapon at the moment. If he could truly fuse with a Ruler Armament, and then forge it with the Azulet swords, he could perhaps find a Ruler Armament compatible with the Light Wind Sword.

Unfortunately, while he now knew that the Ruler Armament could fuse with the body, he didn’t know the specific method. The

two Saint Rulers in front of him knew, but Jian Chen couldn't simply ask them since it would be a complete fail to do so. Moreover, even if he did know, finding a Ruler Armament that was compatible with the Light Wind Sword would be a very hard task. Thus, Jian Chen knew that this thought, that had just popped up, would not be something he could accomplish in any reasonable amount of time.

“No, that can't be possible! The Ruler Armament is something a Saint Ruler left behind. In order to fuse with it, one would have to be a Saint Ruler at the Ninth Heavenly Layer! You are nothing but a Heaven Saint Master. How could you fuse with a Ruler Armament? Jian Chen, do you take us to be three year old children that knows nothing better about the world?” The Saint Ruler of the Jiede clan shook his head. In his mind, he was secretly aghast. If his Ruler Armament was truly fused with Jian Chen's body, then it would be forever lost to him.

The words of the Saint Ruler of the Jiede clan made Jian Chen sigh. If he wanted to fuse with a Ruler Armament, he would need to be a Saint Ruler of the Ninth Heavenly Layer, and that was still quite a distance away.

“I've said it before. If you two don't believe me, then my apologies. Your junior still has some matters to take care and cannot accompany you any longer. Goodbye.” Jian Chen no longer felt inclined to talk to them any longer. He stood up from the table to walk back to his room. In no time at all, he disappeared from the eyes of the two Saint Rulers.

The two Saint Rulers stared at the back of Jian Chen until he had

disappeared away from sight. For a good while, neither talked. This was the very first time they had met a Heaven Saint Master that did not show them courtesy ever since they had become Saint Rulers.

Finally, patriarch Shi tightly clenched his fists as he stared at the spot where Jian Chen had last been before disappearing. Clenching his teeth, he spat, “Jian Chen, if you refuse the carrot, then you’ll not be spared the whip. Do not blame us.”

The other Saint Ruler sighed at his words, “It’s unfortunate that this is Mercenary City. We have no way of touching him, nor do we know where the Ruler Armaments are. Why can we not sense them if they are so close?”

“They have to be on his body. He must have used some sort of secret method to separate the connection between our Ruler Armaments and us, but what can we do about it? Hmph, he still has the Imprint of Death on his body. No matter where he runs off to, we’ll be able to find him. That is, unless he stays in Mercenary City his entire life.” Patriarch Shi spoke under his breath before leaving the inn with the other.

Not too long after the two Saint Rulers left, a good portion of the patrons exited the inn as well. Every person who left was from a different faction and had been there to spy on the meeting. They left to report back to their respective factions.

In a corner of the inn, Hu Xiaotian had been eating a platter of barbecued meat by himself. Giving only a vague soliloquy to himself, he said, “Even after that loud conversation, not a single

bit of it could be heard. That must be the power to control space itself. Only a Saint Ruler can do magic like that. It seems that the enemies of Jian Chen aren't unordinary themselves. Should I help him? I wonder."

After a moment's consideration, Hu Xiaotian sighed, "The clan has never once meddled with the affairs of the continent, and I'm powerless to help with my strength as a heaven Saint Master."

.....

Jian Chen spent the next series of days within his room as the sword spirits tried to remove the Imprint of Death. Not once did he ever step out of the inn.

During this time, plenty of people from many factions came to seek out Jian Chen with greetings and promises to help him with his problem. Each request came with the condition that Jian Chen join their faction, and some of the factions offers had been extremely generous so that Jian Chen would be tempted. However, Jian Chen had no desire to join them since he did not want to owe anyone anything.

As more and more factions attempted to recruit Jian Chen into their ranks, the Shi family and Jiede clan grew more and more worried. The factions that wanted to recruit Jian Chen weren't too much weaker than their own groups, and some of them were organizations that even the two of them were afraid of. Up against this deadly situation, the two of them had no other solution but to watch in silence.

Although the two of them had plenty of connections, they both knew that it would be useless if they tried to call upon those connections to fight Jian Chen.

Several days later, the third prince of the Qinhuang Kingdom, Qin Ji, and several other Imperial Advisors arrived at Mercenary City to find Jian Chen. He and the other four gave Jian Chen a message that told Jian Chen to stay even longer in Mercenary City and to not make any more enemies for the Qinhuang Kingdom.

Qin Ji didn't stay within the city for long. He and Jian Chen only exchanged a few sparse words of conversation before the prince left. He had been in a hurry, giving Jian Chen a bad feeling that something was about to happen to the kingdom.

In the blink of an eye, two months passed. During these two months, Jian Chen had spent day and night trying to remove the Imprint of Death. Two-thirds of the Imprint of Death had been successfully removed after these two months of vigorous work. He wouldn't have as much to worry about if it was completely removed. He could think of a way to escape the Shi family and Jiede clan and gain a new leash on his freedom.

In an inn not too far away, the two Saint Rulers were currently watching the window that led to Jian Chen's room. The Ruler Armaments were far too important for them to give up, so they could only spend their time observing him to make sure he didn't escape.

“It’s been well more than half a month since his last step out of his room. I’ve heard that he once managed to escape detection while under close watch. Shi Qing, Jian Chen has the Imprint of Death on him thanks to your family, so why don’t you check up on it? We should avoid a situation where he escapes from under our noses.” The Saint Ruler suggested.

Patriarch Shi nodded his head and closed his eyes to sense the Imprint of Death, but as soon as he did, his eyes flew open in disbelief, “The Imprint of Death is weakening! It’s practically gone! He’s managed to remove most of it in such a short amount of time!”

Even the Saint Ruler of the Jiede clan was surprised, “What? He has a way to remove the Imprint of Death? We have to hurry. Once that imprints gone, making sure he’s around will become significantly harder.”

Chapter 612: Death Of A Saint Ruler Of The Shi Family (Two)

Throughout the history of the Tian Yuan Continent, each and every person afflicted by the Imprint of Death had been unable to remove it. This was due to the vital energies that were used to create it. The complexity of the patterns was far too much for pure energy to completely remove. The only way to remove the Imprint of Death was to completely exhaust the vital energies of one's the body.

In this case, a Heaven Saint Master had used the energies he had accumulated over many years to create the Imprint of Death. The amount of energy used was tremendous. Several hundred years would be required if it was even able to be removed. However, Jian Chen had not only managed to find a way to expel it, he had found a way to expel it quickly. This was something that the two Saint Rulers felt incredulous about.

The two of them knew just how important the Imprint of Death was. It meant Jian Chen had escaped their range if there was no reaction from it. Even as Saint Rulers, it would be hard to find Jian Chen without the Imprint of Death. The Tian Yuan Continent was far too vast, and Jian Chen could blend in with the sea of people that lived on it. All in all, it was like finding a needle in a haystack.

Jian Chen, at this moment, was currently resting on the bed while the azure and violet sword spirits working hard to erase the Imprint of Death. He remained completely oblivious to the fact that the two Saint Rulers were now aware of what he was doing.

Just then, a knock on the door made itself known. The door had been bolted shut with an iron lock, but it had been knocked off its hinges and unceremoniously thrown to the floor. Two Saint Rulers walked into the room.

Slowly opening his eyes, Jian Chen looked at the two Saint Rulers with calm eyes.

“I’ve underestimated you, Jian Chen. I didn’t expect to learn that you possessed a way to remove the Imprint of Death. Hmph, how could there be such an easy way to remove the Imprint of Death?” Patriarch Shi dangerously wondered. He was secretly glad of the fact that the other Saint Ruler had reminded him. Otherwise, Jian Chen might have really escaped under his nose as soon as the Imprint of Death was gone.

Knowing that the fact that he could remove the Imprint of Death was now discovered, Jian Chen was not discouraged. He knew that in Mercenary City, there was nothing the two could do even with that knowledge.

“Seniors, you are quite powerful to realize what I was up to with such little information, but even now that you know this, what can you do? If I had only a little longer, I would have thrown off the Imprint of Death and escaped.” Jian Chen smiled.

“You dare!” Patriarch Shi boomed with anger as he pointed a finger at him. The Imprint of Death had been cast by a Heaven Saint Master. If it was easily removed, then that Heaven Saint Master died in vain.

Smiling at the Saint Ruler as if to ridicule him, Jian Chen said, “This junior would never dare, but don’t forget that this is Mercenary City. Would you seniors really try to fight me here?”

The expression on patriarch Shi’s face grew even more murderous. His eyes looked as if they could spit fire at Jian Chen, and if looks could kill, then Jian Chen would have been dead just from the man’s glance alone.

Seeing that Jian Chen was smug, the other Saint Ruler couldn’t help but give a small smile. “Jian Chen, you shouldn’t count your eggs before they hatch. Even if you remove the Imprint of Death, you cannot escape from us still. I’ve a secret technique that allows me to place a seal on a person and know of their location. It isn’t as powerful as the Imprint of Death, but it will serve us nicely in this situation.” At that, the Saint Ruler began to go through a series of hand gestures. Several illusionary patterns began to exude forth from his hands, and with each hand seal, a strange energy began to form in those patterns.

Jian Chen blanched at that and lost all of his initial calmness. If the Saint Ruler wasn’t lying, Jian Chen would be no better off than before with whatever technique the Saint Ruler used on him. This was not something Jian Chen had expected.

His eyes narrowed with a brilliant cold light as he cautioned the Saint Ruler from the Jiede clan, “This is Mercenary City, are you really going to move a hand against me?”

“This technique of mine doesn’t hurt the person and neither does it go against any rules of the city. I will be fine and worry-free from the rules.” The man spoke with confidence. His hands hadn’t stopped moving since his previous statement, and the energy that was forming in them grew even more condensed as the patterns in the air became more complicated.

“Bastard!” Jian Chen cursed to himself. With no desire to be stuck with whatever tracking technique the Saint Ruler possessed, Jian Chen grabbed the still sleeping tiger cub and leaped out the window to escape.

“Pah! Jian Chen, do you think you can escape from my grasp?” The Saint Ruler sneered before rushing out with patriarch Shi.

The outside city had been very busy when Jian Chen had dropped to the ground. Bursting with speed into a random direction, Jian Chen was under no delusions that he would be able to escape the two Saint Rulers. They would be able to catch up with him at any time, so Jian Chen was desperately thinking of what to do as he ran.

The most important thing to do at the moment was to escape direct contact with the two. Hence, he would be able to avoid the placement of the Jiede clan’s Saint Ruler’s technique. It was unfortunate that there were barely any hiding spots in Mercenary City and that his pursuers were Saint Rulers. If he perhaps met the conditions allowing him to enter the general headquarters of Mercenary City, then he would probably be safe. However, as of right now, he could not fill those requirements.

“Jian Chen! In front of a Saint Ruler, you are powerless to run away!” At that moment, an elderly voice could be heard as the Saint Ruler from the Jiede clan appeared directly in front of him and blocked his path. Before Jian Chen could even react, the energy in the Saint Ruler’s hands shot forth and melted into Jian Chen’s body with a speed like lightning.

As this strange energy entered Jian Chen’s body, he immediately felt his entire body grow tense as the energy transformed into a net that surrounded him. He felt as if his mobility had been limited, thanks to the technique, in a fashion that was not too different from the pressure created from a Heaven Tier Battle Skill.

He grew cold when the implications of this technique hit him. Not only did this technique make it easier for the Saint Ruler to find him, but it also limited his very own mobility. As of right now, Jian Chen could feel that it was significantly harder to move in comparison to before.

“Jian Chen, how does this feeling suit you? This technique of mine doesn’t have the same length of range as the Imprint of Death, but even the Imprint of Death doesn’t boast the same effectiveness of this. It can restrict your movement as long as you are weaker than I am. And until then, there is no way you can break free of this technique.” The Saint Ruler laughed in sadistic delight.

Tightly clenching his fist, Jian Chen grew even more furious at the man. He had never thought that this would happen to him. The Imprint of Death embedded in him had nearly been removed before this sudden development. This event only meant that his

plans would be further delayed by a long length of time.

“Big brother! Did you come across trouble again? Are these two people chasing you bad guys?” A voice suddenly made itself clear in Jian Chen’s mind. The ethereal body of Little Spirit suddenly materialized right in front of Jian Chen’s eyes. Her transparent feet hovered just a meter above the ground.

It seemed as if her body was only visible to Jian Chen. The entire street was filled with people, but not a single one of them seemed to have noticed her existence.

Little Spirit sensed the technique that had been used on Jian Chen’s body, causing her pure and childlike body to twist up in anger. “Big brother! You’re being bullied! Those two must be bad guys! If they are, don’t worry big brother! Little Spirit will help you!” With that, she pointed a finger at Jian Chen. A strange beam of energy flew out from her extended finger. As it met Jian Chen’s body, it instantly dispelled the entrapment that had been placed on him.

The Saint Ruler sensed his technique break. Confused, the Saint Ruler said to Jian Chen with some startled disbelief, “But how? I can see that you broke my technique somehow. No, that shouldn’t be possible! Not possible at all! How could you have enough power to overwhelm my technique?”

Patriarch Shi heard what the other Saint Ruler said and was equally astounded. “This brat is a freak.” He muttered. “Not only can he remove the Imprint of Death, he can even break free from the technique you placed on him. Perhaps there’s some sort of

treasure on his person?”

“Big brother, don’t be surprised and go after them! Beat them down quickly! Teach those baddies a lesson!” Little Spirit floated down to Jian Chen’s side as she angrily snarled. Little Spirit was glaring hatefully at the two Saint Rulers because of the fact that they were bullying Jian Chen.

“Little Spirit, this is Mercenary City. It’s not a place where I can fight as easily as I want. If I do, then I’ll suffer an extremely terrible punishment.” Jian Chen reluctantly responded.

“Big brother, don’t worry. All of the punishments from Mercenary City were caused by Little Spirit, but Little Spirit won’t punish big brother this time! So, hurry up and teach them a lesson! They can’t fight back, but if they do, then Little Spirit will definitely punish them! If master didn’t prohibit Little Spirit from hurting people, then Little Spirit would have taken revenge for big brother already!”

Jian Chen was motivated by what Little Spirit said. For the past two months, he had been pressured and had felt stifled by the presence of the two Saint Rulers. Today was the day he could finally vent his sufferings on the two without them being able to retaliate. This was something that gave Jian Chen no small amount of joy. He had never once experienced chasing after a Saint Ruler before.

A surge of energy began to bubble out of Jian Chen’s body. The pressure began spread to the two Saint Rulers. Grasping at his right hand, Jian Chen began to unleash the Origin energy so that it

would form into a sword-like item to fight with.

The sudden action of Jian Chen had caught the attention of the entire street. When they saw the strange look in his eyes, everyone thought that they were about to see Jian Chen start to fight within the city. One by one, they shook their heads with laughs of pity. In today's age, just what person didn't know about the prohibition of fighting that Mercenary City enforced?

When the two Saint Rulers saw what Jian Chen was doing, patriarch Shi looked at him as if he was an idiot. "Jian Chen, don't tell me you're planning to start a fight within the city. That's an action of someone who is tired of living."

"Jian Chen, even we two are afraid of fighting in Mercenary City. You are only a Heaven Saint Master. If you wish to continue living, then cease what you're doing. Otherwise, there will be no one to save you." The Saint Ruler from the Jiede clan sneered.

Chapter 613: Death Of A Saint Ruler Of The Shi Family (Three)

Jian Chen could only laugh when the two Saint Rulers spoke. How could they know about the new relationship between Little Spirit and him? With Little Spirit giving her guarantee, Jian Chen could fight within Mercenary City without regard for the rules and the violations. He was after all aware of the connection between Little Spirit and the man known as Mo Tianyun. More accurately, the man known as the founder of Mercenary City. With such a peculiar identity as that, Little Spirit was without a doubt a very important entity of the city itself. It was unknown whether or not Little Spirit had a status greater than Tian Jian.

Without any more hesitation, Jian Chen flickered toward the two Saint Rulers as he stabbed at the forehead of the nearest Saint Ruler without mercy.

Startled, the Saint Ruler from the Jiede clan took a step back. He didn't think that Jian Chen would indeed start a fight in Mercenary City. Instead of fighting back, the man merely stepped away from the attack with a smile. "Jian Chen, you really do fear nothing if you are willing to fight in Mercenary City. Your death is inevitable now; no one can save you anymore."

Jian Chen did not respond. Instead, his figure blurred into thin air as he charged once more after the Saint Ruler. There had been no need to hold back against a Saint Ruler, so the Origin energy of the azure and violet sword spirits had been utilized to the best of his abilities. The bright azure and violet light seemed to light up the entire area as if it were a lantern at night.

The Saint Ruler from the Jiede clan didn't dare fight back while he was in Mercenary City. He knew the consequences of those who did, so he merely dodged Jian Chen's strikes instead of retaliating. Only his body could be seen flickering back and forth between places as he dodged each strike without difficulty. Even though Jian Chen was trying his best, his attacks were completely ineffective against a Saint Ruler.

A Saint Ruler was on a completely different level from a Heaven Saint Master. They were entities that understood the supreme mysteries of the world to some degree and could control the fabric of space to a minor extent. By borrowing the power of space, they could stand motionless, like a wooden stake impaled in the ground, and still remain unharmed by a Heaven Saint Master.

In front of a Saint Ruler, all were ants. To intimidate a Saint Ruler, one would require another Saint Ruler.

Even though Jian Chen couldn't injure the Saint Ruler, he wasn't discouraged. He could fight without fear or needing to hold back unlike the other two. Relentlessly chasing after the Saint Ruler, he managed to 'force' the Saint Ruler into dodging. This served as a cathartic form of delight to him on a personal level. As of right now, he wanted nothing more than to let loose to the heavens and let loose the frustrations that had been accumulating in him.

Leaping up into the air, Jian Chen wielded the sparkling Origin energy like a sword as he stabbed at the Saint Ruler from the Jiede clan.

Once more, the Saint Ruler flickered away, leaving behind only a mirror image at his previous spot. He reappeared several hundred meters away on top of a nearby roof.

The Origin energy that Jian Chen had shot out impacted against the ground, resulting in a tremendous explosion that rocked the entire area and caused several of the nearby buildings to tremble slightly. However, no signs of damage could be seen where the Origin energy had struck the ground despite the power that had been contained in the blow.

The sudden explosion had been carried farther away, resulting in people everywhere being surprised by the sound. One by one, they ‘revealed’ a shocked look. It was unknown just how often they were able to hear the sounds of a battle take place in Mercenary City, but not a single one of them had thought that there would be yet another person that would try to do so.

“There’s someone fighting over there! Who’s the suicidal idiot? To fight in Mercenary City, does he not know the prohibition and the punishment that’ll take place?”

“The guy has to be strong based on the sound of that explosion. I bet it’s a Heaven Saint Master at the very least.”

“Let’s hurry on over to watch! Let’s see just how that offender’s going to die...”

“Aye, let’s hurry on over to see what punishment will befall him. I’ve heard before that trying to fight in this city leads to a painful

experience, but I didn't think that it would actually be death that would befall the offender..."

Plenty of people began to talk to one another on the streets as they converged from every direction to the area where Jian Chen and the two Saint Rulers were fighting. Every single one of them had wanted to see the man who would be struck by the punishment of Mercenary City before he died.

In the blink of an eye, the previously sparse strip of street Jian Chen was on had become a cacophony of sounds. Merchants and mercenaries alike abandoned whatever they were doing to hurry over to the area as soon as possible, arriving on foot or on magical beast.

With the commotion spreading farther and farther away, more and more people began to converge to watch the spectacle. On one hand, they wanted to watch a good fight, and on the other hand, they were curious to see just what punishment would befall the offender. Everyone had heard of how severe the punishment would be, but the details had never been fully divulged.

Soon enough, the fight between Jian Chen and the Saint Ruler from the Jiede clan had drawn practically everyone within the surrounding area. Some of the spectators had even been people of major influence and groups behind them.

"That's Jian Chen! Ai, how could he be so foolhardy? Doesn't he know about the prohibition on fighting that Mercenary City has? Even if he's a Heaven Saint Master, he'll suffer the punishment from the barrier without fail." An elder wearing red robes sighed.

It was the man from the Vulcan Shrine.

The man with the fan from the Dayong clan sighed as well as if he was feeling regret. “Jian Chen’s death is inevitable. It’s truly a shame. It’s hard to come across a genius like this, but he decided to be so foolish as to start a fight in Mercenary City. Even if the grand elders of Mercenary City were to try and intervene, Jian Chen’s fate would still not be changed.”

“I didn’t think that it’d be the King of Mercenaries, Jian Chen, of all people to be the one to start fighting. Ai, how lamentable. He was a genius with no parallel, but now he will fall today here in Mercenary City. Does he not know that Mercenary City has prohibited fighting? In the case the rules are violated, then even a Saint Ruler would not be spared from the following consequences.”

“This Jian Chen is really too reckless. Ai, his unlimited potential will be stopped here today. He could have been a Saint Ruler in the future if it weren’t for this act.”

Recognizing Jian Chen as the offender, plenty of people shook their heads with pity. The prohibition on fighting had been a rule that had been set in stone since countless of years ago. Every person who had broken this prohibition had been severely penalized. Even Saint Rulers had fallen to this rule while the weaker ones would quite often not even have their bones left to bury. Hence, everyone thought that the Heaven Saint Master, Jian Chen, would fall as well, even if he was the King of Mercenaries.

As of right now, Jian Chen was pursuing the Saint Ruler from the

Jiede clan without reprieve. The Origin energy shot forth continuously from his right hand, but it never landed a clean hit on the Saint Ruler. The man dodged the strikes with ease, allowing the rays of Origin energy to fly unimpeded into the buildings on the side of the streets with a loud explosion.

While the streets of the city were protected by a mysterious power to such an extent that the Origin energy couldn't even leave a scratch in them, the buildings were not covered by such a power. The bursts of Origin energy crushed the buildings like tofu and reduced them to scraps of metal.

Watching Jian Chen continue to try and pursue him, the Saint Ruler laughed coldly, "Jian Chen, prepare to die." Then borrowing the power of space, he warped over to another spot a hundred meters away to dodge Jian Chen's strike.

"You from the Shi family, are you willing to fight against me? A mighty Saint Ruler is being forced back by an insignificant Heaven Saint Master. Don't you think that's a bit of an insult to your grand rank?" Jian Chen jeered. It was not a very easy opportunity to find a time to fight a Saint Ruler like this. There was simply no competition between the two because of the tremendous difference in strength, and that difference weighed heavily on Jian Chen.

With a thought, the energy of the world began to rotate the wind elements around his body. With lightning quick speed, he flew at the Saint Ruler from the Jiede clan with extended arms. Three bursts of Sword Qi flew out from his hand and arced through the air with the spectrum of a rainbow.

“Boom!” The Saint Ruler easily dodged to the side as the three bursts of Sword Qi neared him. The Sword Qi caused a nearby restaurant to tremble from the blast, and several wooden splinters could even be seen flying through the air.

“Get out of the way or get hurt in their fight!”

Someone from the crowd cried out a warning so that the people were warned to run as far as they could from the scene of the carnage in fear. Although they were all strong in their own right, they didn’t dare act out in even a defensive manner to protect themselves. They were fearful of being struck down by the punishment of the city. Since they couldn’t use their own power to defend, they could only try to get away and not be mixed up in what Jian Chen was doing.

Patriarch Shi was not angry at Jian Chen’s goading. Instead, he coldly laughed, “Jian Chen, your words mean nothing to me. The commotion you’ve caused in Mercenary City has already incurred severe consequences. You will die today, and I won’t be dragged down to the underworld with you.”

Clenching his teeth tightly, Jian Chen spoke no more and chased down the other Saint Ruler. Despite the fact he couldn’t hit him, he was determined to have him ‘forced’ into something.

“Strange, he’s fought long enough already, and several restaurants were destroyed by him. Why hasn’t the city punished him yet? This isn’t what the legends say about the city at all.” An elder spoke curiously from within the crowd.

Chapter 614: Death Of A Saint Ruler Of The Shi Family (Four)

“There’s a fight going on, but what’s strange is that the offender hasn’t fallen to the barrier’s punishment. Why can’t any energy be felt now when it was always prevalent in the cases before?” A middle-aged man spoke in confusion in the middle of a room.

“Don’t worry about that for now. As men of Mercenary City, we should be upholding the laws of the city and stop them from fighting. Let us move out.” An elder in the center spoke before moving to fly.

However, before he could even get ten meters into the air, the man’s flight had been halted, causing him to float motionlessly in mid-air.

Sensing the oddity that was happening, the elder said in disbelief, “Not good! There’s something locking down my ability to move! Hurry and warn the elders!”

The other Heaven Saint Masters that hadn’t yet moved were startled to hear the elder’s words. Without any delay, they rushed out of sight to get the lord of the city.

Not too long later, three elders flew from the city lord’s mansion. Each one of them wore simple clothing, but their faces were kind and amiable in appearance.

The three of them first stared at the fight with bright eyes before looking at the still deadlocked elder in the air with furrowed eyebrows.

“What is going on?” The elder in the middle asked. The three of them sensed nothing out of the ordinary aside from the fight going on in front of them. There hadn’t been any strange disturbances in the space around them. They felt nothing strange around the elder who was locked in mid-air. In the eyes of the three newcomers, nothing was wrong.

The other people around the elder nodded their heads as if to agree with his confusion. One of them spoke with furrowed eyebrows, “Legend has it that no matter how fast one tries to strike another person, they’ll never be able to land a blow. The reason for that is because it is said that the barrier would strike down the offender before the blow can even land. But judging from this situation, the legends do not quite meet the expectations.”

“Yes, this is utterly strange. The two of them have already played cat and mouse for more than several dozen exchanges, and have caused a tremendous ruckus. Why hasn’t the punishment of Mercenary City befallen him yet?”

“What is going on? Every single person that has violated the rules of Mercenary City fell to the punishment in the past, have they not? So, why hasn’t it happened this time?”

“Perhaps Mercenary City has gone on for such a long time without any incidents like this before that the people in charge of administering punishments have become lazy?”

The longer the attacks continued, the more and more people realized that something wasn't right. They talked to one another, speculating just what was happening. They were trying to find answers to their questions.

Patriarch Shi stared at the gigantic barrier that spanned across the entire Mercenary City in surprise. He then looked at Jian Chen, who was fighting the other Saint Ruler. He muttered, "What is going on? Jian Chen has already fought for long enough. Why hasn't the punishment befallen him yet?"

In the center of Mercenary City not too far away from the statue of Mo Tianyun, there was a giant palace that had been established as the mansion of the city lord. A second city lord had never been declared to uphold Mo Tianyun's sovereignty even after his departure, so the palace had been reformed to serve as a connection to the outside world.

Within the palace, several white-robed Heaven Saint Masters floated in mid-air as they listened to the faraway sounds of battle. Each one of them displayed signs of confusion on their faces.

"A report for the elders! My-my body can't move! Not even a single finger!" The voice of the still-frozen elder could suddenly be heard as he cried out in panic.

"Boom!" Just at that moment, an explosion could be heard as a giant restaurant came crashing down in a midst of smoke that spiralled up into the air. The battle had not seemed to have

weakened in the slightest. Instead, it was ramping up in ferocity.

“There are people fighting there, so why hasn’t the barrier punished the offenders? How peculiar.” One of the elders wondered aloud in confusion. Turning to look at the two elders next to him, he said, “No matter who they are, if they dare fight in Mercenary City, they cannot be pardoned. Twenty-third elder, twenty-fourth elder, you two will go over there and handle the situation. I will see what happens from there.” With that, the elder pointed at the stuck Heaven Saint Master in the sky.

The two elders nodded their head before disappearing in a blur of mirror images toward the scene of the battle, but their bodies seemed to make contact with some sort of invisible barrier after a mere ten meters. The barrier caused their forward momentum to come to a screeching halt before they were sent flying backwards.

“Boom!” The two elders ruthlessly impacted against the walls of the palace, sending a tremendous shake throughout the palace.

“You two! What’s... what’s going on?” The twenty-second elder asked in absolute stupefaction. He couldn’t believe his eyes at what he was seeing.

The twenty-third and twenty-fourth elder staggered up from the ground in pain as they stared at the empty space of air where they used to be. “That’s-that’s the power of the barrier! The barrier just repelled us! But no... that shouldn’t be possible. How could the barrier have the power to stop us?”

“What!? You were stopped by the barrier, is that true?” The twenty-second elder gasped in disbelief.

“It is absolutely true! The two of us have lived in Mercenary City for long enough. Do you think that we would be unfamiliar with what the barrier feels like? It was the barrier that stopped us, but, but I don’t know why! Just why is this happening? This can’t be a small matter, we must notify the grand elder!” The twenty-fourth elder spoke with determination. Disappearing into the palace without further notice, he left behind the still confused twenty-third and twenty-second elder.

This sudden development had caused a tremendous amount of pressure to fill the hearts of the two elders. As soon as the twenty-fourth elder left, the twenty-second and twenty-third elder became immobile. They could only watch the fight from far away.

The barrier surrounding Mercenary City had served as the city’s patron guardian since it was created. It silently protected the entire city for countless of years, making it something like a god to some of the inhabitants of the city that could not be offended. Not only was it a part of the long-standing history of Mercenary City, the most important thing about this barrier was that it was created by the one known as the strongest person on the Tian Yuan Continent, Mo Tianyun. This status brought up a completely different feeling for the barrier than previously considered, and many saw the barrier as something that represented the glory of Mercenary City.

So when the barrier that had been previously silent as it protected the city suddenly prevented the elders from stopping

this battle, the twenty-second and twenty-third elder were left dumbfounded. They had never experienced something like this happen before where even they, members of the city, were stopped.

All of a sudden, the space in front of the two elders began to ripple as if it were water. Then, a fissure formed in the middle of the space. A dimensional gate formed as three white-robed elders stepped through.

One elder was standing in front while the other stood behind him. The one in front was a middle-aged man with black hair and a steadfast face. His eyes were incomparably bright as if they contained all of the stars in the sky. Just by staring at them, it seemed possible to get lost in them.

This person was Ming Dong's uncle — Tian Jian!

The two men behind Tian Jian looked to be in their seventies. With their long hair and time-worn faces, their eyes seemed to show their countless years of living and the many things that had happened in the world. As of now, they looked to be men that had rejected the mundane world in order to live a secluded life, and the auras that they exuded around their bodies were anything but ordinary.

“We pay our respects to the grand elder, second elder, and fourth elder!”

The two elders immediately moved to bow their bodies as a sign

of great respect. The sight of these three elders was enough to instill both respect and fear into the two.

“What is going on here!?” Tian Jian questioned at once.

“Grand elder, there are people fighting in Mercenary City! The twenty-fourth elder and I have tried to stop them, but the barrier not only stopped us, it threw us back into the palace!” The twenty-third elder explained.

The three elders that had just arrived were shocked to hear such an explanation. Turning around to look at the fight, the grand elder had been able to see the situation as if it were happening right in front of him.

“Eh? It’s him!” As soon as the scene was made available to him, Tian Jian let out a surprised sound.

“Grand elder, do you perhaps know the one that is fighting?” The second elder asked.

Nodding his head, Tian Jian responded, “The one fighting the Saint Ruler is called Jian Chen. He’s the one that won the Gathering of the Mercenaries. As far as his talents go, he’s someone that can only be seen once every ten thousand years.”

Smiling, the second elder spoke, “Haha, if the grand elder is able to praise him, then this Jian Chen is surely quite the person, but this youngster is far too rash if he’s starting a fight in Mercenary

City. Does he not know the consequences of fighting in Mercenary City? Still, it's strange; why hasn't the barrier punished him yet?"

"I find that strange as well. But we must move to stop him. If we allow this to continue, we may see the death of such a talented genius happen. That would be far too unfortunate." Tian Jian commanded before urging his body to move out towards the scene of the battle.

"Don't move! You shall not pass!" Suddenly, the voice of a young woman made its way into the elder's ears. Tian Jian's body immediately seized up before he looked around with astonishment.

"Are you the spirit of the barrier?" For a good while, he did not speak, but when he did, his voice was filled with shock. Even as he asked, he felt as if his ears were deceiving him.

"You can say that, but you still can't go there. Don't bother with what's happening, or Little Spirit will hurt you."

Little Spirit's words caused Tian Jian and the others to become as silent as statues. When it came to status, they were the leading figures of Mercenary City and could make use of the city as they saw fit. When it came to power, they stood at the very top of the power pyramid of the continent. So, to have what seemingly felt like a young woman threaten these powerful men, they didn't know whether to laugh or cry.

However, neither Tian Jian nor the second nor the fourth elder had felt discontent at her words. As if everything was as right as

rain, they decided to stand there and obediently observe the situation without interfering. From there, they watched Jian Chen violate the rules of Mercenary City without being able to do a single thing about it.

That was because the spirit of the barrier had an extremely unique status in Mercenary City!

“Spirit of the barrier, I never would have imagined that I would hear it speak. The legends are true after all. The barrier that protects Mercenary City is sentient!” The twenty-third elder passionately remarked.

The fourth elder sighed in response, “I’ve lived in Mercenary City for four millenniums now, but this is the very first time I’ve heard the spirit of the barrier speak. Haha, this is truly an honor to me. What year did I think that it would be before I could hear the legendary spirit of the barrier. Even if it is just the voice, I am satisfied with this.”

“To what I know, the spirit of the barrier hasn’t been seen or heard for ten thousand years, but it has appeared now with the appearance of Jian Chen. It has forbidden us to take action. Perhaps there is a connection between the two? Otherwise, why would the spirit of the barrier protect Jian Chen to the extent where no punishment has been inflicted?” The second elder murmured with confusion and disbelief. Jian Chen and the spirit of the barrier had a connection? That was quite hard to believe.

“I am curious about this matter as well. It would seem that Jian Chen isn’t as normal as I thought.” Tian Jian spoke while full of

questions.

.....

Continuing to pursue the Saint Ruler, Jian Chen, without fail, continued to try to attack the man, much to the surprise and discussions of everyone in the streets. They were all wondering how Jian Chen had managed to escape punishment.

“What’s going on? Why hasn’t the spirit of the barrier punished you yet? Has the barrier lost its power, or is the punishment no longer in place?” The Saint Ruler could finally hold it in no longer and cried out in frustration.

Patriarch Shi’s eyes light up with a strange light as he listened to the Saint Ruler, “The barrier has to have lost its power! That’s why it hasn’t punished him yet. Jiede Tai, what are you worried about? Attack him!” With that, patriarch Shi immediately moved into action, sending a palm strike at Jian Chen.

Following the palm strike, the space around Jian Chen seemed to solidify. Jian Chen’s body was suddenly rendered unable to move. It was as if he was stuck under water. Not even a finger of his could be moved. Dodging was impossible.

Around the patriarch’s palm was a strong amount of Saint Force that continued to grow faster and faster. The space began to distort and tear around the palm as if threatening to open up a hole in space itself.

The power in this palm strike was far stronger than what a Heaven Saint Master could match even if one used a Heaven Tier Battle Skill.

However, half a step before the palm strike could make contact, a sudden beam of light came flying down from the heavens, striking him down at the speed of lightning.

Chapter 615: Return To The Floating Shrine

The beam of light was scorchingly bright, and basked the entire world in a radiant glow. It had come down on the Shi patriarch's head at such an unbelievable speed that no one could even react.

The rest of the patriarch's body grew rigid following the advent of the light. His palm came to a stop, and the furious energy that had been wrapped around his palm disappeared into the world without a trace since the patriarch could no longer control it. Even the space around Jian Chen's body had begun to return to normal, allowing Jian Chen the freedom of being able to move once again.

As soon as Jian Chen felt his body go back to normal, he immediately leaped back several steps. He was retreating to get as far away from the patriarch as possible. That palm strike had left him completely terrified of the power it contained.

A Saint Ruler's strength was indeed far too strong. The saying that all were like ants in front of a Saint Ruler was without a doubt true. Even with his strength, Jian Chen simply did not possess enough to dodge the Saint Ruler. He would have been forced to patiently await death.

A Heaven Saint Master was only a tier away from a Saint Ruler, but in terms of power, the difference was akin to the difference between heaven and earth. There was nothing that could make up that deficit, and even Heaven Tier Battle Skills wouldn't be enough to bridge the gap.

As if struck by a curse, patriarch Shi's body was stuck hovering in midair. The spirit in his eyes had long since left, leaving his eyes with a vacant expression. Then, his body began to tilt to the side before falling back to the ground. His body crashed against it without any further movements.

In mid-air, Jian Chen stared at the Saint Ruler sluggishly. He had been surprised to see the sight in front of him. A Saint Ruler had actually died?

He hadn't been the only one. The spectators who had originally thought that the punishment of Mercenary City wouldn't fall had all immediately turned silent. They all stared at the motionless body of the Saint Ruler in utter disbelief and did not speak for the longest time.

This sudden development took the Saint Ruler of the Jiede clan completely by surprise. He immediately pulled back his palm when he saw what happened to patriarch Shi as his entire body began to shake. It could be seen from this that even he was completely filled with terror.

“N-no! That can't be! The one who struck first was clearly Jian Chen! Why was he the one to escape punishment instead of patriarch Shi, who struck only after him? This is impossible!” The Saint Ruler cried out in disbelief. The fact that the barrier of Mercenary City did not punish Jian Chen had left him with no small amount of fear. As of now, the Saint Ruler was completely beside himself.

By now, the streets were so jam-packed with people that even

water wouldn't be able to make its way through. However, not a single one of them spoke, leaving the area motionless. Only the continuous sounds of breathing could be heard as everyone stared at the dead corpse of the Saint Ruler in silence.

Even Jian Chen himself was completely still as if some sort of curse had petrified him. He was no longer awe-inspiring with his movements. He was now looking at the completely dead corpse of the Saint Ruler, who had been killed just like that. Jian Chen felt utterly astounded by the situation.

“Aiyah, big brother, what are you so stunned about? There's still a baddy over there, hurry up and beat him! Don't let him get away! If the baddy doesn't fight back, then Little Spirit can't hit him!” Little Spirit's voice suddenly made itself known in Jian Chen's ear before her body materialized in front of him. Both of her fists were brandished as if she was ready to punch the Saint Ruler.

Startled awake by Little Spirit, Jian Chen immediately quashed the feeling in his heart and rushed for the Saint Ruler.

Seeing that Jian Chen was rushing at him, the Saint Ruler blanched. No longer wishing to stay within Mercenary City, his body flickered away with the speed of light before finally disappearing from Jian Chen's sight.

“Don't let the baddy get away! Big brother, chase him down, hurry!” Little Spirit anxiously demanded from the side again and again. If not for the fact that she couldn't attack the Saint Ruler, she would have perhaps helped Jian Chen strike him down earlier.

A bitter smile appeared on Jian Chen's face, "Little Spirit, you overestimate my abilities. He is a Saint Ruler, how could I even catch up to him?"

"Ai! That baddy ran away. He runs too fast." Little Spirit commented with a hateful voice. She held a grudge against the two men that had been bullying the one she regarded as her big brother.

Slowly descending from the sky, Jian Chen looked at the corpse of patriarch Shi in silence for a moment. Then squatting down next to it, Jian Chen took his Space Ring. Inside would be the items that a Saint Ruler would own. They would undoubtedly be far more precious than what could be found within a Heaven Saint Master's ring.

Suddenly, Jian Chen swung his head up only to see several people flying over. In a moment, they arrived right in front of Jian Chen, and when Jian Chen saw the middle-aged man heading the front, he immediately said out of respect.

"Junior Jian Chen pays his respects to senior!" Jian Chen arced his body down politely; the person in front of him was Ming Dong's uncle, Tian Jian.

Tian Jian stared at Jian Chen with an extremely complicated expression before looking to the recently deceased body of patriarch Shi. "Jian Chen, come with me!" At the final syllable, Tian Jian turned around to leave without a single ripple of space

being affected by his movement as he flew away.

At the same time, a strange energy wrapped around Jian Chen's body. It carried him into the air and pulled him toward the center of Mercenary City.

Afterward, Jian Chen followed Tian Jian and the other elders through a series of Space Gates before finally returning to the floating shrine that stood alone in its own special space. The twenty-second elder and twenty-third elder had not followed them. Only Tian Jian, the second, and fourth elder followed Jian Chen into the shrine.

Jian Chen turned around to look at the shrine curiously. This would be the second time he had seen this place, but perhaps it was because his strength was far stronger than before but Jian Chen felt that this shrine was extremely different than before.

Standing at the center of the shrine, Jian Chen felt as if he was some sort of insignificant speck within boundless space. There was a mysterious and profound sensation in the shrine that flowed about and basked Jian Chen within that feeling. Even if Jian Chen were to try and pinpoint this feeling, he would not be able to.

Jian Chen knew that this shrine had to be filled with the profound mysteries of the world and that it was a good place to breakthrough to become a Saint Ruler. Such a great opportunity was standing right in front of him, but he was completely unable to enjoy this great bounty. He could only watch as the profound mysteries of the world flew by his body.

Right in front of Jian Chen, Tian Jian and the two elders stood shoulder to shoulder as they observed him. The second and the fourth elder, in particular, were studying Jian Chen with undisguised shock, praise, and a slight bit of curiosity.

Nervously, Jian Chen stood at the center of the shrine. He knew that these three men held unbelievably important statuses within Mercenary City, and thus, was afraid that he would be reprimanded or punished for violating one of the rules of Mercenary City. After all, he had caused a tremendous ruckus within the city. Not only did he destroy multiple buildings, he had caused Mercenary City itself to be negatively influenced by the fact that he had escaped punishment.

“Jian Chen, are you able to tell me just how you were able to fight within Mercenary City without punishment befalling you?” An echo sounded through the shrine as Tian Jian finally broke the silence. Although he knew that the spirit of the barrier was connected, he wanted to understand just how close the two were and what their relationship was.

Jian Chen gave a small hum to think before replying, “Everything was because of Little Spirit’s help.”

“How did Little Spirit help you? How do you even know Little Spirit?” The second elder suddenly blurted out. As he was now, the second elder was extremely nervous and curious to know the answer to these questions.

“I...” Jian Chen hesitated. He had no idea just how to answer this question since even he was confused how he was connected to Little Spirit. He couldn’t exactly say that he had the scent of Mo Tianyun and that Little Spirit had decided that he would almost be a family member.

“Don’t you bully big brother!” At that moment, Little Spirit’s voice rang through the entire shrine. Her ethereal body made an appearance within the shrine, and even though entrance within the shrine itself was extremely difficult, she had done so without difficulty. This time, she had not bothered to hide her body. Therefore, Tian Jian and the two elders were clearly able to see her.

“Spirit of the barrier!”

The three elders exclaimed all at once in surprise. Looking at Little Spirit, the three of them remained stunned for a very long time. This was the very first time they had ever seen Little Spirit.

Although the spirit of the barrier had existed for countless of years, it had never once appeared in front of them and had long since become a legend of Mercenary City. This was the very first time many of the elders had ever seen or heard the barrier of the spirit. The three elders felt excited and joyous to see her in person.

Floating just three inches away from Jian Chen’s side, Little Spirit spoke earnestly, “Big brother, you don’t need to be afraid. As long as Little Spirit is here, they won’t bully you.” Then turning to the three, she continued to say, “You are not allowed to bully big brother or else Little Spirit will hit you.”

The three elders didn't know whether to laugh or cry when they heard what Little Spirit said. From this exchange, they understand there was undoubtedly a deeper relationship between the two, and that information was very shocking to them. None of them knew just how Jian Chen was able to meet with Little Spirit, and the mystery thickened.

“Spirit of the barrier, worry not. We will not bully your big brother!” Tian Jian smiled as he responded to Little Spirit with respect.

This was the silent guardian that had protected Mercenary City for countless of years. Her position in the city was irreplaceable, and furthermore, as a creation left behind by Mo Tianyun, this meant she was a being that existed during the time of Mo Tianyun.

It was only after hearing his words did Little Spirit begin to relax. Turning to look at Jian Chen, she said, “Big brother, Little Spirit will leave first. We can play after you come out!”

“Understood!” Jian Chen smiled and nodded his head to her in response. Revealing a sweet smile, Little Spirit's body began to fade from sight before disappearing without a trace.

After Little Spirit left, the three elders looked back to Jian Chen once more with an even more complicated look than before.

“Jian Chen, I had no idea that you had such a relationship with the spirit of the barrier. I am truly speechless at this sight.” Tian

Jian sighed, but his eyes suddenly noticed the tiger cub that was starting to look around the place with great curiosity. Brought into a daze once more, his eyes immediately focused into a serious expression as he asked, “Jian Chen, where did you get that magical beast on your shoulder?”

Seeing the sudden change in Tian Jian’s expression, Jian Chen’s heart skipped a beat. Hiding away the cub in his embrace, he gave a hollow smile, “Senior, this is Xiao Bai. I found him in the Magical Beast Mountain Range.”

“Let me see!” Tian Jian boomed. Then without making any visible movements, Tian Jian suddenly surrounded the tiger cub in a mysterious energy while it was in Jian Chen’s arms. Separating the cub from Jian Chen, Tian Jian made the cub float three meters toward him.

Suddenly, two bright golden rays of light shot forth from Tian Jian’s eyes and basked the tiger cub’s body.

Chapter 616: Minor Achievement With The Chaotic Body (One)

“Senior, don’t harm Xiao Bai!” Jian Chen cried out as an uncomfortable feeling appeared in his stomach.

“Jian Chen, don’t worry. We won’t hurt it.” The second elder reassured him as he looked at the tiger cub. His eyes immediately hardened with a strange light as if they were night pearls giving off light.

Even the fourth elder’s extremely serious eyes were attracted to the tiger cub.

Thumping again and again, Jian Chen’s heart was beside itself as he began to worry for the tiger cub. Despite the second elder’s guarantee not to hurt the cub, Jian Chen was still very concerned for its well-being.

“Did they perhaps figure out the true identity of the tiger cub?” Jian Chen thought to himself. He still held his doubts about what the tiger cub’s mother had said about how only Class 7 magical Beasts would be able to figure out the lineage of the Winged Tiger God. At the time, even the elder in Longevity Valley had been able to see through the tiger cub, and now in Mercenary City, there were three elders that could do the same.

“Mrrrrr...” The cub struggled as hard as it could while it floated in mid-air without success. The cub soon let out a miserable growl as it stared at the elders pleadingly.

Seeing how afraid the cub was, Jian Chen could hardly take it, but he could only watch helplessly from the side because he had no way of saving the cub.

Several moments later, the beams of light finally receded from Tian Jian's eyes. For a while longer, he stared at the cub with sparkling eyes, but his thoughts could not be guessed.

“Grand elder, how is it? Is this tiger cub really...” The second elder asked.

Nodding his head, Tian Jian said to Jian Chen, “Jian Chen, tell the truth now. Did you really find this white tiger cub in the Magical Beast Mountain Range?”

Jian Chen hesitated for a moment before responding, “Senior, do you know the truth behind the cub's identity?”

With still gleaming eyes, Tian Jian stared at Jian Chen almost as if he could see straight through him and into his mind. “Correct, I know of its true identity. Seeing how nervous you are, you must be aware of it too!”

Since Jian Chen didn't say a word, Tian Jian continued to say, “Jian Chen, the Winged Tiger Gods are divine beasts even among the magical beast clans. Only one has been seen since antiquity even after the countless of years that have passed. Now that a second one has appeared, there is no doubt that this is a major event. In the foreseeable future, who knows just how many people

on the continent will be flustered about the sighting of one? At that time, even the guardian clans won't be able to stop them even if they come together all at once. You must tell me everything you know about the cub. It pertains to the entire safety of mankind on this continent."

Jian Chen hesitated and considered his possibilities a while longer before finally deciding to reveal everything he knew about the tiger cub. As of now, the king of the Gilligan clan was after the tiger cub, and even the mother of the cub had nearly died to the king. Despite the tiger cub's strength, the leader of the magical beast clan would without a doubt had a blood debt with it. In the future when the cub grew up, it was possible that it would not bring calamity to the continent.

Besides, Jian Chen was convinced that if something were to happen, he would be able to convince the tiger cub to not do anything dangerous because of his relationship with it.

Afterward, Jian Chen revealed all that he knew and all that he had heard to Tian Jian and the two elders, causing the three to furrow their eyebrows.

"The Winged Tiger God is a divine beast, but if the king of the Gilligan clan is chasing after it, it seems the situation is extremely complicated.

"If my expectations aren't wrong, then the ones chasing the Winged Tiger God want to take its corpse and inheritance. Once one of them absorbs the inheritance into their own body, they will

become a second divine beast.”The second elder speculated grimly.

“It’s possible. If any of the magical beasts were to receive the inheritance, then it would be a catastrophe for our continent. Even if the entire continent were to ally itself with the Bai clan, it wouldn’t be a match for the magical beast clan.” The fourth elder added with a serious voice.

Hearing the three speak, Jian Chen knew that the matters were extremely grim, and could not help but think deeply.

Still staring at the cub, Tian Jian said, “Second elder, fourth elder, do you two perhaps remember the first law left behind by the grand elder!”

“Of course! The grand elder’s laws are something that lord Mo Tianyun himself left behind. We have memorized all of the laws. It seems the lord was prophetic with his level of foresight. Perhaps he realized that the continent would see a second Winged Tiger God that would face persecution from one of the magical beast clans. That must be why he wrote the laws!” The fourth elder spoke.

“What laws? Will they harm Xiao Bai?” Jian Chen asked out of concern. As he stood in the shrine, his body could barely hold itself up due to his worry. He couldn’t even protect himself in the shrine, let alone the tiger cub, so he was extremely worried that one of these rules would harm the cub.

Shaking his head with a smile, Tian Jian explained, “Jian Chen, don’t worry. Way back, lord Mo Tianyun made several laws that

contracted all of the grand elders. It is equal to the laws of Mercenary City, and the very first one states that we must lend a Winged Tiger God a helping hand should we ever come across one that hasn't fully matured."

Jian Chen was stupefied. Still skeptical, he asked, "Does that mean that not only will you not cause trouble for Xiao Bai, you'll help it?"

"Correct. It is as you say. Although we don't wish to, for the sake of preventing disaster, we will honor the laws the grand elders put down for the sake of preventing disaster." The fourth elder spoke.

"Thank you very much, seniors!" Jian Chen responded in relief and excitement.

"There's a few scant records about the Winged Tiger God in Mercenary City. Its talent is beyond the norm of anyone and doesn't require the guidance of any human. Thus, what we can do to help is quite limited, yet the growth of this tiger is very slow. The only way for it to grow as fast as it can is to feed it a large amount of heavenly resources. As such, we can only really give it heavenly resources for it to mature." Tian Jian explained before moving his lips slightly to speak in secret to the men outside.

Seeing that Tian Jian was planning on giving the cub even more heavenly resources, Jian Chen was ecstatic. This moment was like receiving charcoal in the middle of a snowstorm since Xiao Bai was currently lacking a stable source of heavenly resources. After using up most of the ones he bought recently, Jian Chen was practically out of heavenly resources to feed the cub.

At that moment, an old man came walking in from the outside of the shrine. Presenting a Space Ring to Tian Jian, he said, “Shrine lord, I’ve accomplished your command. All there is to be found is in this Space Ring!”

Taking the Space Ring, Tian Jian commanded, “You may leave!”

“By your leave, shrine lord!” The elder retreated with a respectful salute.

Walking slowly to Jian Chen, Tian Jian handed the Space Ring to him, “Jian Chen, since the Winged Tiger God is accompanying you, then I may as well give this Space ring to you. Inside is all that was left behind for the Winged Tiger God; in total, there are ten hundred-thousand-year-old heavenly resources, a hundred ten-thousand-year old heavenly resources, and a thousand thousand-year-old heavenly resources.”

Hearing this astronomical number, Jian Chen was stunned. Heavenly resources a hundred thousand years old, he hadn’t ever heard of resources that old before Tian Jian had mentioned them. There were also the hundred ten-thousand-year-old heavenly resources which were each worth several million purple coins per head, and with the thousand thousand-year-old heavenly resources, this was a tremendous windfall of heavenly resources.

It was the hundred ten-thousand-year-old heavenly resources in particular that made this sum extremely priceless.

Jian Chen received the Space Ring from Tian Jian with trembling hands as he responded, “Many thanks, senior!”

Chuckling, Tian Jian said, “There’s no need for your thanks. These heavenly resources were given to you in accordance to the laws put down by the lord many years ago. They are not for you specifically.”

Jian Chen gave an embarrassed smile at that. The tiger cub was now capable of moving by itself and jumped back onto Jian Chen’s neck. The tiger cub tightly gripped his shoulders with its four short paws as it stared at Tian Jian. Although it was a divine beast, it was still a young child equivalent to a three-year-old human.

“The Winged Tiger God requires a tremendous amount of heavenly resources, and the heavenly resources I’ve given you has already emptied our farms by two-thirds. But that alone should be enough to bring the cub up to a Class 6 Magical Beast or the peak of it. Afterward, you must find some more heavenly resources by yourself. After the Winged Tiger God becomes strong enough, thousand-year-old and even ten-thousand-year-old heavenly resources won’t have any effect on its growth.” Tian Jian explained.

“This junior understands. Thank you for your warning, senior.” Jian Chen replied gratefully.

“You may leave, Jian Chen. But remember to safeguard the secret of the Winged Tiger God. Do not let anyone else learn of it.” Tian Jian reminded him in a serious tone.

“This junior understands!”

Afterward, Jian Chen took the Space Ring with the heavenly resources and left the shrine. There was a single Heaven Saint Master that led him through several Space Gates to return to Mercenary City.

“Big brother, did they cause trouble for you?” As soon as he returned to Mercenary City, Little Spirit’s voice could be heard in Jian Chen’s ear as her body materialized near him without a sound.

Shaking his head, Jian Chen looked to her, “Little Spirit, thank you for your help.”

“Heehee, as long as big brother is fine, then all is well. Big brother is the only one that Little Spirit sees as family besides master after all these years!” Little Spirit happily spoke.

Chapter 617: Minor Achievement With The Chaotic Body (Two)

News of the fact that a Saint Ruler had been killed by the barrier of Mercenary City spread like wildfire throughout the city. Practically everyone that heard the news was stunned into silence as they processed the information with great shock.

Saint Rulers were extremely rare individuals on the continent. In the eyes of the general populace, people like them stood at the very top of the power structure. They were the ones who had grasped the profound mysteries of the world and arrived at the realm where only the supernaturals could go. A single lift of their hand was capable of destroying the earth around them, and even gods wouldn't be left unharmed.

When they heard that a person of this legendary status had been killed by the punishment of Mercenary City, everyone had been thoroughly shocked once more by the severity of the punishment. Once again, everyone acknowledged the power of Mercenary City if it could so easily kill a Saint Ruler.

Following the spread of the fact that a Saint Ruler had died, news that Jian Chen had been left relatively unharmed had accompanied it as well. Everyone was especially curious to know just how Jian Chen had been able to escape punishment even though he had been the one to instigate the fight and had destroyed several establishments. No one knew the answer why.

In a small kingdom roughly fifty thousand kilometers away, a single person with a doughty build was drinking a jar of wine and

eating a platter of food by himself in an inn. As he ate, he listened to the random gossip of the people around him with great interest, especially when their conversations pertained to Mercenary City. With a voice just low enough for only himself to hear, he smiled, “The barrier of Mercenary City was placed down by the unparalleled genius Mo Tianyun himself. It gained sentience a long time ago, so how could a measly Saint Ruler compare to it? If a Saint Ruler were to fight, they would die without even a whimper. In all of these years, I wonder just how many Saint Rulers have lost their lives to it?”

“What do you guys think of this Jian Chen? Why do you think he was the only one to escape the punishment even though he started the fight? Do you think it’s because he’s the King of Mercenaries, or that he has some sort of connections with the higher ups of the city?”

“I’d have to say it’s one of those reasons. I’ve heard that, in the end, Jian Chen was brought away by several of the great ones without a fuss. I’d have to say that the most likely answer is that he has some connections with the power holders of the city.”

“There was a pure-white tiger on his shoulder too. That tiger had wings on it. That can’t be your ordinary beast cub.”

“Yeah, can’t be. Jian Chen is a Heaven Saint Master, how could any magical beast cub he carry with him be of ordinary breed? That cub has to be a Class 5 Magical Beast at the very least.”

Many people within the inn were talking about the death of the Saint Ruler, but just as many people were talking passionately

about Jian Chen himself.

“A snow-white tiger with wings on its back. Could that be...?” The man who had been sitting by himself suddenly had a sharp gleam of light enter his eyes as he thought to himself.

“It’s very possible, but whether or not it’s it or not, I have to make sure myself. But Mercenary City...” At the mention of Mercenary City, the man hesitated as fear shone in his eyes, but with a final clench of his teeth in determination, the burly-looking man tossed a purple coin on the table and left the inn.

In Mercenary City, Jian Chen sat on top of a bed with the azure and violet sword spirits attempting to purge the remaining parts of the Imprint of Death on him. Although patriarch Shi had died, the Imprint of Death remained, meaning the rest of the Shi family could still chase after him. Something like that was not a favorable thing for Jian Chen.

Ever since the tiger cub had been given a tremendous sum of heavenly resources, its growth rate was no longer vexing for Jian Chen. The cub could now eat without him being stingy, and Jian Chen had already fed it several dozen thousand-year-old heavenly resources. It had fallen back asleep on his bed to absorb the power into its body.

Jian Chen didn’t step out of his room the following period of time. He stayed silent from the outside world. For an entire month, he remained secluded in his room before the azure and violet sword spirits finally managed to remove the Imprint of Death from him without a single bit of it remaining.

As soon as the Imprint of Death was gone from him, Jian Chen let out a sigh of relief. Jian Chen felt as if there was always someone constantly watching him from the dark when the Imprint of Death had been embedded him. Up until now, he had not felt as free as before and could not relax.

Seeing that only a month had passed, Jian Chen let out a small victorious smile as he said, “I’ve finally gotten rid of the Imprint of Death. Who would have known that this small interlude would have taken three months? Any longer and two years would go by before little fatty and I met again. I can’t put it off anymore. I must head out right away.”

“Big brother, you’re finally awake!” Little Spirit’s voice rang through the room before her body materialized in front of Jian Chen.

“Little Spirit, thank you for your help these past few days, but your big brother has stayed here long enough. I have important matters to attend, and so I must leave right away.” Jian Chen smiled. Over the span of these few days, Jian Chen had begun to see Little Spirit as a little sister. Now that they had to split ways, he was feeling unwell, but there was no other option.

The smile that was on Little Spirit’s face slowly started to fade when she heard Jian Chen. On her face now was a very lonely expression as she softly asked, “Big brother, are you leaving?”

Jian Chen nearly hesitated to answer her after hearing the

loneliness in her voice, “Little Spirit, your big brother has plenty of things that must be done, so I must leave the city. But don’t worry. Your big brother will come see you when there is time.”

“But big brother, Little Spirit doesn’t want you to leave! Could you stay here? Please? Little Spirit has lost master for a long time now. Little Spirit doesn’t wish to lose big brother too.” She pleaded as if she was about to cry.

Giving a faint smile, he said, “Little Spirit, you won’t lose your big brother. Your big brother is only going to be leaving for a short while. I’ll be back soon to see you. I guarantee that within three years, I’ll be here to see you, okay?”

Her mood perked up slightly after that, but Little Spirit still looked at him with reluctance, “Big brother, you have to keep your word, okay? Don’t lie to Little Spirit. You’ll come see Little Spirit in three years or Little Spirit will be lonely.”

Jian Chen nodded his head to guarantee her, “Little Spirit, rest assured. Within three years, your big brother will come back to see you.”

With his promise, Little Spirit finally showed a sweet smile on her face, but when she thought of something, her eyebrows furrowed together, “But big brother, there’s still that one baddy that ran away. What will big brother do if he comes after you outside of Mercenary City?”

Narrowing his eyes to think, Jian Chen grew silent. After a while,

he said, “The continent is large, and there are people everywhere. With the Imprint of Death gone, finding me won’t be an easy task by any means. I say that he would be hard-pressed to find me.”

“But in the case that he does, what will you do? Big brother, you aren’t strong enough to beat that baddy. Little Spirit can see that. In the case that you meet him, that baddy will definitely be stronger than you. You won’t even have the chance to escape.” Little Spirit continued with worry. “It’s sad that Little Spirit can’t leave Mercenary City. Master also forbidden Little Spirit from interfering with the outside world as well. It’s only when someone breaks the rules that Little Spirit can harm them. Otherwise, Little Spirit would go with big brother and beat that baddy that tried to bully you.” She spoke with sadness, but in the next second, she brightened up. “Oh! Big brother, there’s a way! Let Little Spirit increase your strength! If big brother’s strength is stronger than that baddy, then big brother won’t have to worry anymore!”

A surprised light entered Jian Chen’s eyes as he asked, “Little Spirit, don’t tell me you have a way to increase my power?”

“Of course! Big brother, Little Spirit is amazing! Little Spirit can evolve the mysteries of the world into something big brother can understand! This way, big brother will reach the same realm of strength as that baddy!” Little Spirit explained with great pride.

However, Jian Chen shook his head in disappointment, “Little Spirit, to understand the profound mysteries of the world requires the strength of a Sixth Cycle Heaven Saint Master. Only those people have a grasp on the vital energy of the world and by extension contact with the profound mysteries of the world. It

isn't easy to understand those mysteries, and even with your help, I'm sure your big brother would still require a long time to become a Saint Ruler."

"Oh? Then what do we do?" Little Spirit furrowed her eyebrows in frustration.

"If there was a tremendous amount of energy, such as the energy in a Ruler Armament, I could use it to refine it into Chaotic force. Even if I don't become a Saint Ruler, I will at least be able to fight a Saint Ruler." Jian Chen muttered as he thought about the Chaotic force.

"Energy? Big brother, you only need energy to become stronger?" Little Spirit's eyes lit up as she observed Jian Chen.

"Correct!" Jian Chen nodded.

Growing excited, Little Spirit clapped her hands, "Heehee, big brother, you should have said that earlier! Little Spirit can help you! Big brother, let me take you somewhere." As soon as she finished speaking, Jian Chen suddenly felt the space around his body start to ripple and fluctuate wildly. The world around him became an instant blur before he was plunged into darkness.

In this one moment, his entire world was deathly quiet. Jian Chen couldn't hear a single thing, and even the noises from the streets outside his room had disappeared without a trace. During this moment, he had left the noisy Mercenary City and arrived in a never before seen place.

“Big brother, we’re here. This is the place!” Little Spirit’s voice made itself known in Jian Chen’s ear, but Jian Chen could see nothing. Even if he were to reach out with his hand, he wouldn’t even be able to see his fingers.

Closing his eyes, Jian Chen spread his presence out in order to sense the place around him, but what happened next amazed him. There was some sort of powerful barrier that blocked him from being able to sense anything.

“Little Spirit, what is this place?” Jian Chen asked curiously.

“Big brother, this is the space beneath Mercenary City and also Little Spirit’s home. This was also where Little Spirit was born! Big brother, don’t underestimate this place. It may be dark, but it has plenty of energy. Gathered from the plenty of years Little Spirit has spent here!”

Chapter 618: Minor Achievement With The Chaotic Body (Three)

Surveying the area around him, Jian Chen asked in confusion, “Little Spirit, is there really a large amount of energy here? Why can I not sense a single thing?”

“That’s because big brother is surrounded by Little Spirit’s barrier! Of course big brother won’t be able to sense the outside. Big brother, prepare yourself, Little Spirit is about to drop the barrier.” She giggled.

When Little Spirit dropped the barrier, Jian Chen’s body was immediately hit with an influx of energy from the surrounding area. The energy was so powerful and massive that he felt as if an entire mountain had been dropped on top of his body, rendering him immobile. Even his fingers were hardly capable of moving.

Stunned by the tremendous amount of energy that was trapping his body, Jian Chen felt as if he was a small boat stuck in an ocean. He was as insignificant as a speck of sand on the beach.

“Big brother, this place should have plenty of energy. It’s everything Little Spirit accumulated over the years. Hurry up and absorb it. Big brother will become stronger that way and won’t have to worry about the baddy!” Little Spirit spoke in his ear.

Letting out a breath of air, Jian Chen slowly calmed himself down and connected with the sword spirits.

“Wow, master, there’s plenty of energy in this place! It’s very strong too — far stronger than the energy in a Ruler Armament.”

“That’s good then. Since this place has a lot of energy, master, you should borrow this energy and reach the realm of Minor Achievement with the Chaotic Body. You’ll be able to use Chaotic Force that way.”

Qingsuo and Ziying had awakened because of the external sensations they felt. They let out gasps in amazement and joy at the revelation.

Upon hearing that absorbing the energy in this place would be enough to get him to the Minor Achievement realm with the Chaotic Body, Jian Chen was filled with joy. When he heard that he’d be able to use Chaotic Force at that point, he felt ecstatic.

“Ziying, Qingsuo, let’s begin right away. Let’s refine this into Chaotic Force.” Jian Chen ordered right away. He really wanted to see just how strong this Minor Achievement realm was.

“Yes, master!” The two answered right away before flying out of Jian Chen’s body. As soon as they exited his body, a pair of azure and violet lights filled the previously pitch-dark area with their glow.

With the azure and violet glow above his head, they quickly materialized into a semi-transparent body just like Little Spirit, but their physical manifestations happened to be a twenty-something

male and a twenty-something female that seemed to be like lovers.

“Ahh? Strange, who are you two? Did you just come from big brother’s body? Why didn’t Little Spirit sense you?” Little Spirit suddenly asked in confusion. Turning to Jian Chen, she asked, “Big brother, who are those two? They look kinda similar to Little Spirit.”

“Little Spirit, they are very good friends of mine.” He replied.

“Oh, so they’re big brother’s friends, but if they’re friends of big brother, then they’re friends of Little Spirit! Oya! How happy this is! Little Spirit has even more friends! And they’re like me as well!” Little Spirit let out a happy cry from the excitement of meeting two new friends.

Ziying and Qingsuo both looked at Little Spirit for a brief moment before Ziying stated, “A strong soul!”

Qingsuo’s eyes were lit up bright as she spoke, “This soul is a Postcelestial being that has lived for a long time, but her sentience was unable to mature since she was unable to become a Precelestial. That’s why she is stuck as a two-to-three-year-old child. What a shame.”

“Whatever the case, it isn’t a good topic for now. Qingsuo, let us not waste any time. Let’s hurry up and refine the Chaotic Force. The sooner we do so, the sooner master can form the Chaotic Body.” Ziying spoke.

“Yes. Then let us begin.” Qingsuo replied. Holding Ziying’s hand, the two of them began to synchronize their absorption of the energy. All of a sudden, the energy around them began to get sucked into them at an accelerated rate. It was as if a whale was beginning to take in a tremendous amount of water. As the energy gathered around them, it condensed at an alarming rate. It flowed in between their hands before slowly forming the Chaotic Force.

Chaotic Force’s rate of refinement was extremely fast. It took only a short few moments before the first strand formed in Jian Chen’s body.

Jian Chen wasn’t idle himself. Controlling the first strand of Chaotic Force, he circled it around his body to temper it. As the strand of Chaotic Force slowly traveled around his body, a tremendous amount of energy steadily infused itself with Jian Chen’s body. His originally strong body was becoming more and more refined, and it didn’t matter whether it was his blood, muscles, or meridians, they were all being strengthened at a tremendous rate.

By the third rotation, the Chaotic Force had completely lost all resemblance of energy, and it disappeared from existence. With the energy being infused with Jian Chen’s body, Jian Chen himself could feel his body grow drastically in power.

Afterward, Qingsuo and Ziying focused on refining more and more strands of Chaotic Force to put into Jian Chen’s body. With plenty of strands to manipulate, Jian Chen’s body exploded exponentially in might from the strengthening. It was quickly making its way to the realm of Minor Achievement.

Time seemed to have come to a standstill in the dark. There was practically no sensation of time even flowing, and no one inside this space seemed to be aware of anything. However, a crackling sound suddenly broke the silence of the darkness. The skin of Jian Chen's body began to crack in several areas like the webs of a spider, and in a few short seconds, not a single part of Jian Chen's skin was left untouched by these cracks.

It was a grotesque sight that made Jian Chen look as if he was a vase that was threatening to crack and fall into pieces. Even his handsome face was ravaged by the countless cracks. He looked like a monster; an utterly terrifying monster.

The next moment, fingernail-sized pieces of skin began to flake away from his body one by one. As each piece flaked away, a flawless jade-like skin could be seen underneath. His new layer of skin was as white as sheepskin, and it was extremely supple while still flexible to the touch. In short, his skin was as flawless as the skin of a newborn, and would be the target of envy by many women.

While Jian Chen's outer skin was undergoing a process of metamorphosis, his muscles were also being elevated to new heights. Like the cicada shedding its carapace, Jian Chen was undergoing a new level of evolution.

Within a short amount of time, Jian Chen's body underwent a terrifying level of growth. At the same time, Jian Chen could feel the Chaotic Force in his body become a smoother sensation from all the usage. He no longer felt the same pain from before when he

used it. At last, he no longer felt the difference in using the Chaotic Force than when he used the Saint Force. Both could be wielded by him with ease as if he were breathing.

He was unsure how much time had passed, but over a hundred strands of Chaotic Force had been used for the sake of Jian Chen's evolution. By now, the endless source of energy that had been feeding the sword spirits refinement of Chaotic Force had stopped. There was no longer a need for it. Shortly afterward, the voice of Qingsuo could be heard, "Master! You've done it! You've finally reached the Minor Achievement realm with the Chaotic Body! You can now use the Chaotic Force."

Startled awake, Jian Chen retreated from his meditative state of mind and began to pay more attention to the new changes of his body. In fact, his face was unable to hide his joy. Although he didn't know just how strong he had become on a numerical level, he was absolutely sure that the strength of his body had surpassed what a Heaven Saint Master would be able to scratch. All that was left to see was how it would do against a Saint Ruler.

"Ziying, Qingsuo, you two are more understanding of the Chaotic Force than I am. If I were to meet a Saint Ruler, would I stand a chance against him?" Jian Chen asked.

"Master, Ziying and Qingsuo pay very little attention to the outer world so we are not as knowledgeable about the strengths of a Saint Ruler. But with master's current power, if master were to fight that Saint Ruler who ran away some time ago, even if master was unable to beat him, master would be invincible at the very least." Ziying answered.

“Is that right?” Jian Chen smiled joyfully. The Minor Achievement of the Chaotic Force was truly something that would allow him to fight with a Saint Ruler.

“Master, the Chaotic Body is far from being enough. The Chaotic Body must coordinate with the Chaotic Force in order to show off its best strengths! From now on, master must absorb the Chaotic Force into your body and condense it into your neidan.” Ziying explained.

“Big brother, what is this Chaotic Body? And what’s Chaotic Force? Big brother, Little Spirit can see that your body has grown even stronger now. Is that this Chaotic Body?” Little Spirit asked him curiously after listening to Ziying.

“Correct. Your big brother’s body is the Chaotic Body made from Chaotic Force itself. It is a very strong type of power. Little Spirit, your big brother still wants to borrow the energy in this place. It’ll make my power great enough to deal with that baddy.” Jian Chen responded.

“Go ahead! Big brother can absorb as much energy in this place as big brother wants! As long as big brother will be safe from that baddy, then take as much as you want!” Little Spirit enthusiastically agreed.

After her reply, Ziying and Qingsuo held hands once more to absorb even more energy in the area to refine into Chaotic Force. Jian Chen closed his eyes to focus on cultivating. Silently drawing

the Chaotic Force around his body, he converted it into usable power before allowing it to gather in his dantian without it strengthening his body.

An endless flow of Chaotic Force entered his body from the outside darkness. Jian Chen watched as more and more Chaotic Force assembled within his body. It gathered in his dantian to form a small, soybean-sized, gray sphere.

With this gray sphere being formed, Ziying and Qingsuo ceased their actions and held out their hands. The energy that had been flowing into them halted before flying into Jian Chen's body even faster than before. It was as if his body was an endless pit that accepted as much energy as possible like a whale taking in water.

If things were like before, Jian Chen wouldn't have done things as such. This powerful energy would have torn his body apart, but since he had already achieved the level of Minor Achievement with his Chaotic Body, he could easily withstand this energy without a problem or any feeling of pain.

“Master, your Chaotic Body has formed and your neidan has formed as well. There is no need for us to help you convert any more Chaotic Force. As long as there is energy from the outside world flowing into your body, your neidan will convert it into Chaotic Force itself. Master, quickly convert this energy into your neidan. Ziying and Qingsuo will help you absorb it.” Ziying spoke inside of Jian Chen's mind.

With a thought, the soybean-sized neidan within Jian Chen's body began to rotate faster and faster. At the same time, the energy

that was flowing into his body was converted into Chaotic Force.

Chapter 619: Leaving For Longevity Valley

A boundless amount of energy flowed into Jian Chen's body for him to refine into Chaotic Force, making it increase more and more. As a result, the chaotic core he had formed in his dantian slowly increased in size from a small soybean to a small fingernail size.

Following the creation of the chaotic core, Jian Chen felt his body fill with an inexhaustible amount of energy. With a thought, he could easily control the Chaotic Force in his dantian to use as he pleased. He was no longer as powerless as he had been when he had lost his Saint Force.

“Oooh! Big brother, you're amazing! You're absorbing energy so fast! Even faster than Little Spirit! And even with so much energy, big brother doesn't feel ill at all, super amazing!” Little Spirit praised as she observed how Jian Chen was doing with a look of surprise.

It had been unknown just how much time had transpired, but the core that was growing within Jian Chen's body only grew bigger and bigger. It was by now already the size of his thumb, and was still accumulating energy at a speed that Jian Chen had previously thought to be impossible.

Right now, Jian Chen didn't even know just how much energy he had absorbed and processed. By now, the previously boundless amount of energy in Mercenary City had started to thin to a considerable degree.

“Oh! Big brother, you’ve already absorbed fifty thousand years worth of energy Little Spirit accumulated. When will you be done, soon enough, all the energy Little Spirit accumulated will be gone.” Seeing the energy lessen, Little Spirit couldn’t help but speak with a slightly pained look.

However, Jian Chen remained completely entranced in his meditative mind state and did not hear Little Spirit. He knew there would be no dangers here at all since Little Spirit was protecting this place, so he could completely focus on refining the energy. Thus, his guard was at its lowest point.

With the assistance of the sword spirits, a dreadful amount of energy was being absorbed at a consistently fast rate. An unknown amount of time passed before the core in his dantian grew to the size of an egg and the energy underneath Mercenary City was much less than before.

As Jian Chen was basking in this completely euphoric feeling of his power being increased, the flow of energy into his body suddenly stopped. Startled by this change in events, Jian Chen awoke from his meditative state.

As soon as he opened his eyes, Jian Chen could see the still transparent figure of Little Spirit, but on her face was a look of misery as she wailed.

“Little Spirit, what happened?” He asked in confusion.

“Big brother, you can’t absorb any more energy! You’ve already

absorbed almost all of the energy Little Spirit saved up for a hundred thousand years. If this goes on, then the seal won't hold any more!" Little Spirited explained in a pleading manner.

"Seal? What seal?" Jian Chen started. He was shocked since he didn't think that he needed to absorb a hundred thousand years worth of energy, the energy Little Spirit had stored up, to reach the Minor Achievement realm with the Chaotic Body. If not for her, it would have taken an extremely long amount of time to reach the Minor Achievement realm by himself.

That was because a single strand of Chaotic Force was refined from a sea of vital energy of the world. It was tantamount to the strength of a single Saint Ruler.

"Oops!" Little Spirit clasped her mouth shut with both hands before repeatedly shaking her head. "What seal!? Big brother, you heard wrong!"

"Little Spirit, your big brother has exceptional hearing. You just said that if too much energy is absorbed, the seal won't be able to hold anymore. Little Spirit, what seal is this?" Jian Chen gave a smile to her, but in his mind, he was extremely skeptical. Just how many secrets did Mercenary City hide. Was there always a seal? What did this seal do?

"It's nothing! Big brother, you misheard! Little Spirit didn't say anything!" Little Spirit waved her hands while she tried to frantically persuade him.

Seeing Little Spirit act like this, Jian Chen couldn't find it in himself to ask anymore. Although he really wanted to know just what this seal did, seeing Little Spirit guard this secret so much caused him to think that he would be causing trouble for her if he persisted asking questions.

It was all because of Little Spirit's contributions that he was able to reach the Minor Achievement realm so quickly. Thus, he did not wish to do anything that would cause her difficulties.

“Alright, Little Spirit. Your big brother heard wrongly just now. I don't know what this seal you're talking about is.” Jian Chen smiled warmly. He still curiously looked around himself. He wanted to see something at the very least, but it was still pitch-black. Even with the assistance of the glow from the azure and violet sword spirits, he was hardly able to see a short distance away. Everything was a blurry mess and nothing could be seen.

Beaming with joy, Little Spirit said, “Big brother, Little Spirit can see that you've grown extremely strong! You should be able to handle that baddy now! Let Little Spirit take you out of here.”

As she spoke, a barrier enveloped Jian Chen's body and carried him back to his original room in the inn.

As soon as Jian Chen reappeared in the room, the tiger cub jumped onto his shoulder in delight. Using its short paws, the cub wrapped itself around his neck and let out a slow mournful purr.

He pet the cub on its head and spoke several comforting words to

it. Jian Chen then said to the seemingly empty room. “Little Spirit, just how long was I underneath the city?”

“Just about fifteen days, big brother.” Little Spirit spoke as she materialized in front of him.

“Another month has gone by without me knowing. I didn’t even feel two hours go by.” Jian Chen muttered in shock. After speaking, his eyes suddenly widened in shock as he looked down at his completely naked body. His clothes had long since been ruined from the tremendous amount of energy that had been flowing.

Quickly putting on a new set of clothes, Jian Chen inspected his body to see just how much of a difference the Chaotic Force made.

After reaching the Minor Achievement realm, Jian Chen didn’t feel any changes in his physique, but his stature had clearly grown even more firm than before. The biggest change was the fact that his body contained even more power than before. This power was so dreadfully massive that he felt as if a single punch could destroy a mountain.

Clenching his fist tightly, Jian Chen carelessly thrust it forward. As his fist passed through the air, the space around it vaguely distorted. The power in this one fist was enough to cause more stress on the space than what it could even handle. It was something that a Heaven Saint Master could only do after using a Heaven Tier Battle Skill, but he was able to replicate it with a single punch.

“Wow! Big brother’s amazing! If big brother meets that baddy again, then there won’t be any more need to fear him!” Little Spirit excitedly praised.

“Master, the strength of the Chaotic Body is far stronger than what you can believe. You’ve reached the realm of Minor Achievement so the Chaotic Force is now distributed evenly throughout your body. Even if a Saint Ruler were to strike you, the amount of damage shouldn’t be all that bad.” Ziying spoke in Jian Chen’s mind.

At Ziying’s words, Jian Chen felt extremely elated.

“Saint Ruler of the Jiede clan. I, Jian Chen, swear to find you. And the Saint Ruler of the Sect of Dragon and Tiger, wash your neck and wait for me!” Jian Chen coldly smiled. Now that he was at the realm of Minor Achievement, he finally reached a level where fighting a Saint Ruler was possible. There was no longer any need to fear a Saint Ruler.

Afterward, Jian Chen and Little Spirit said their farewells before Jian Chen and the tiger cub left the room.

“Sire Jian Chen...”

“Jian Chen, my friend...”

As soon as Jian Chen walked downstairs, a multitude of people came forward to greet him. Each one of them wished to pull Jian

Chen into their group so that a good relationship would form between them.

Practically every family and household thought that Jian Chen was supported by a very powerful patron because of his actions in Mercenary City. Combined with his talents, he was someone that people would hold no expense to get to know. A connection with him would serve beautifully for them.

After wasting some time dealing with the crowd, Jian Chen gave a small smile and a few words before leaving the inn with Hu Xiaotian.

Soon enough, Jian Chen left the city. He had just stepped over the boundary of the barrier when...

“Big brother, you can’t lie to Little Spirit! You have to come back within three years to see Little Spirit, or else Little Spirit will get angry!” Little Spirit floated a meter high in the air as she sent off Jian Chen with a look of sadness. She was very unwilling to part with Jian Chen.

“Little Spirit. Be at ease, as long as nothing major happens, your big brother will come back to see you.” Jian Chen guaranteed again for the third time before stepping away to become a blur. With his speed, he shot off in the direction of Cross Mountains in no time at all.

The Illusionary Step was a Heaven Tier Battle Skill that Jian Chen had once used. It held no offensive power and only served to

make one even faster than before. With it, Jian Chen had been able to escape the pursuit of a Heaven Saint Master even as an Earth Saint Master. After the loss of his Saint Force, he had been unable to use the Illusionary Step. Though, with the Chaotic Force replacing his Saint Force, he could use the Illusionary Step once again.

Only prairies were around Mercenary City, but Jian Chen could be seen blurring past the prairies at tremendous speeds. Perhaps it was because of his Illusionary Step, but his speed now was far faster than what the power of flight could offer him.

Chapter 620: Meeting The Heiyun Clan Again

“This Illusionary Flash is quite extraordinary. I’ve understood only a portion of it, yet I am still this fast. It’s far faster than flying.” Jian Chen remarked in surprise about the Illusionary Flash.

With the Chaotic Force feeding the Illusionary Flash, he was traveling extremely fast for a tiny amount of energy.

As he sped through the plains and fields, he basked in the sensation of running fast. It had been a very long time since he had last felt this sensation. He flew everywhere ever since he had become a Heaven Saint Master. There hadn’t been a need for him to use his legs to run.

It was a decent distance from Mercenary City to Cross Mountains at well over five hundred thousand kilometers. A distance like that meant that it would take Jian Chen nearly four days worth of traveling with the Illusionary Flash before he finally reached the mountains. Even after the fourth day of continuous traveling, Jian Chen did not feel tired at all.

The topography of Cross Mountains was complex, and the paths were precipitous. When Jian Chen arrived, he didn’t bother with the Illusionary Flash. Instead, he flew the rest of the way to Longevity Valley.

After four hours, Jian Chen finally arrived back in Longevity

Valley. Following the twisting roads to the valley, Jian Chen was able to then enter the hidden village.

As soon the fragrant smell of the soil hit his nose, Jian Chen felt as if he had stepped into a hidden paradise. There was not the bloody smell of the outside dog-eat-dog world to be found here, and Jian Chen felt himself at an impeccable level of tranquility. After spending so long on the violent continent, Jian Chen didn't know if there was ever a time he had been as calm as he was now. It was like there was some sort of hidden power in this land that negated the evil influences of the heart.

It was high noon by the time he arrived at Longevity Valley. Plenty of villagers could be seen walking about, and when Jian Chen entered the village, these villagers noticed him right away.

“Eeeh? Look there, isn't that there the Jian Chen fellow?”

“Brother Jian Chen has returned!”

Many of the villagers excitedly exclaimed — some of them threw down their farming tools in excitement to run to Jian Chen. In a flash, three of the younger villagers had surrounded him, and began to ask all sorts of questions about the outside world.

“Brother Jian Chen, how was the outside world? Was it fun?”

“Big brother Jian Chen, how far away was the outside world to our valley? When can you bring us there to play?”

“Big brother Jian Chen, I heard that the outside world is dangerous. Is it true? Do you face danger out there?”

These three youths blabbered on and on with questions for Jian Chen to answer, but each question related to the outside world. They were villagers that had never stepped out of Longevity Valley and into the outside world. They had never personally seen the outside world for themselves, and were extremely curious about it as a result.

“Jian Chen!” A dignified voice rang out as Xiu Mi came to him. He was shirtless and wore only short pants on his lower half.

“Uncle Xiu Mi!” Jian Chen happily replied to him. He was the uncle of little fatty and was a Sixth Cycle Heaven Saint Master. There was only a small step before he would become a Saint Ruler.

Nodding his head, Xiu Mi looked at Jian Chen carefully, “Jian Chen,” he smiled. “You must have come back for little fatty. That promise you made with him has past several months already.”

Jian Chen smiled apologetically, “Uncle Xiu Mi, please accept my sincerest apologies. I had planned to return earlier, but I had been forced to delay my visit because of some unforeseen events.”

Xiu Mi gave a loud laugh as he answered, “No worries, I know what the outside world is like. Whenever there is trouble that can’t be avoided, it is only natural to be held up by it. But Jian Chen, if you’re here for little fatty, your arrival is a little untimely.”

“Why is that? Has little fatty not yet become an Earth Saint Master?” Jian Chen asked.

“That’s not it.” Xiu Mi shook his head. “Little fatty has exceptional talent — it’s far stronger than mine or my father’s in fact. There is nothing wrong with his development. He only required half a year to become an Earth Saint Master, but my father took little fatty with him to teach and give a few things to him because my father was not willing to let him go with you into the Tian Yuan Continent as he was. This way, when he goes to the outside world, he’ll be able to protect himself.”

“Uncle Xiu Mi, when will little fatty return then?” Jian Chen asked.

“It should be any time by now. I’d reckon three months.” He replied.

“Three months, that’s enough time for me to handle a few things.” Jian Chen thought to himself.

Afterward, Jian Chen talked with Xiu Mi for a while longer before handing several things to each of the villagers. Staying for a day, Jian Chen then left on the second with plans to return within three months to meet with little fatty.

With Jian Chen back on the continent, he brought the sleeping tiger cub with him to a smaller kingdom’s First Class city to find out where the Jiede clan was.

Now that he was no longer afraid of any Saint Ruler, the Jiede clan no longer imposed a problem to him. He had the strength and there was a blood debt. When it came to an enemy like this, Jian Chen would not forgive them easily.

“My apologies, sire. The family you are inquiring about is a complete mystery to us. We are only responsible for information within a fifty thousand kilometer perimeter. Perhaps this family you are looking for is beyond our area.” A seventy year old man explained to Jian Chen within an information broker store.

Sighing, Jian Chen held out a purple coin and gave it to him. Leaving the room, Jian Chen thought about the Jiede clan. It was unfortunate how helpless he felt while trying to find the Jiede clan.

“If only I had known early to ask about them in Mercenary City. Those men would have definitely known where the Jiede clan was located.” Jian Chen sighed to himself.

“Halt! Stay where you are!”

“Hand over that beast cub if you know what’s good for you or else you’ll be carrion food!”

.....

At that moment, a large ruckus could be heard at the end of a

street. A single disheveled white-robed man could be seen running through the crowd. His face was pale, and his body was clearly injured from how he was half-hobbling as he ran. Furthermore, the entire top half of his body was drenched with blood. He also carried a small magical beast.

Right behind him, three middle-aged men were running at him with their Saint Weapons in hand.

Each one of these four men were Earth Saint Masters, but their pursuit had been long enough for them to all be gasping for breath. At their current speed, it did not take long until the young man brushed up against Jian Chen.

Just then, one of the three pursuers suddenly stamped hard against the ground to kick off into the air. His entire body lit up with an azure light as he sped toward the youth and landed a kick onto his back.

Spitting out a mouthful of blood, the young man flew forward into the air before tumbling back down to the ground twenty meters away.

The three men immediately came forward to surround him with one of the three glaring evilly at him, “Smelly brat, let’s see you try to get away now. We only wanted you to hand over that cub. There wasn’t a need for you to be harmed at all, but since you’ve refused our kindness, we’ll force you to hand it over. Since you’ve killed two of our own, we’ll make sure you won’t get away.”

“Don’t even let him say anything and just kill him. This is for Hei Xiong and Hei Qing!” The other man snarled before hoisting his sword up. Without mercy, he swung the blade toward the youth’s head.

Widening his eyes wide, the youth watched the blade come down toward his head unwillingly. Sadly, he was far too injured to move. Considering all the energy he spent fighting and running, he was completely out. Not a single iota of energy could be used so he closed his eyes and awaited death.

Just as the blade was about to cut into his throat, a sudden burst of energy slammed against the sword and narrowly knocked it away from his body.

At this sudden development, the three men looked startled. Each one looked to where the blast had originated from before one of them cried out, “Which fucker is the one that’s interfering in our business? To obstruct the Heiyun clan is a suicidal act, come out now!”

Everyone watching had been brought to a frenzy when they saw the young man about to be executed, but when they heard that it was the Heiyun clan, everyone immediately became quiet.

Jian Chen slowly walked out from the group and smiled at the three men. “So you’re men from the Heiyun clan. I didn’t expect to come across you today, I suppose that meeting my enemies on this narrow road was inevitable.” In Jian Chen’s mind, he thought back to when he had to escape from a clan with the tiger cub back in Thousand Poison Valley. That clan had been the Heiyun clan

with their Heaven Saint Master.

The three men angrily glared at Jian Chen one by one. The last one then questioned, “Brat, who are you? Are you the one that stopped us just then?”

“Who I am isn’t important, but yes, that was I.” Jian Chen laughed.

Chapter 621: Wang Yufeng

“Brat, you’re a reckless one if you’re sticking your nose into the business of our Heiyun clan. Do you wish to die?” One of the middle-aged men angrily barked at Jian Chen.

Still smiling in disdain, Jian Chen replied, “The way I see it, the ones that wish to die are you three and not me.”

“You’re going to die for that!” The three men snarled with fury. Immediately, two of the three men charged with their Saint Weapons in order to teach this young man in front of them a rough lesson.

Pointing his finger, Jian Chen allowed two beams of Sword Qi to fly at these two.

Pcht! Pcht!

The two beams of Sword Qi embedded themselves into the males’ foreheads and then out of them, leaving behind a huge cavity.

There hadn’t even been enough time for them to scream before they died. Their bodies continued on another five or six meters because of their inertia. They finally coming to a stop on the ground with their eyes wide open in death.

The fact that Jian Chen had killed two Earth Saint Masters as if it were nothing, with just a flick of his finger, caused an endless

amount of surprise to everyone watching. They fled several meters away to maintain their safety as they gasped in shock at the sight. Even those who had been standing near Jian Chen had kept their distance — not a single one of them dared to draw any closer as if afraid of causing trouble with this man.

The single remaining survivor from the Heiyun clan was dumbfounded by the strength of Jian Chen. He was fully aware of the strength of his two friends — they were stronger than even he was — so he was completely caught off guard that a young twenty something year old man would be able to kill them both so easily.

Despite his befuddlement, the man quickly recovered. Without any hesitation in his decision, he immediately turned around and fled. He was a clever person and knew that Jian Chen had a bone to pick with his clan. If he stayed behind, then he would be killed like his friends. Therefore, the only way to survive was to escape.

Leveling a calm stare at the escaping man, Jian Chen raised his finger again and shot a beam of Sword Qi accurately into the man's calf.

The man let out a pain-filled scream as the beam went straight through his leg. With pain shooting through his leg, the man's ability to run had been knocked for a loop, causing him to fall to the ground.

Slowly walking on over to the middle-aged man, Jian Chen looked at him with cold eyes. "Where is the Heiyun clan located?"

There was no fear in the man's eyes as he snarled back at Jian Chen, "I'm not afraid to die! Whether it's by torture or by illness, you'll never get anything from me!"

"You didn't seem to look like tough guy." Jian Chen smiled.

The youth that had been chased by these three men crawled to his feet with a painful grit of his teeth. When he saw that the bird-like magical beast cub in his hands was unharmed, he let out a sigh of relief. After listening to Jian Chen, he said, "I know where the Heiyun clan is." His voice was exuberantly weak since his internal organs were heavily injured.

A fearsome glint entered Jian Chen's eyes as he took in this information. "If someone else knows the answer, what use is there for you?" With a single burst of Sword Qi, he stabbed it straight into the last man's head.

Afterward, Jian Chen walked to the other youth. When he saw just how heavily injured the youth was, Jian Chen gave a small pause of hesitation as if considering something. Then, he took out a Radiant Spirit Pill from his Space Ring and handed it to him, "Eat this and recover your strength. You'll be taking me to the Heiyun clan, so traveling there as you are now would be inconvenient for the both of us."

"Sire, I thank you for your benevolence in saving me, but this item right here is far too precious for..." The youth hesitated to take it.

“A Class 6 Radiant Spirit Pill is nothing for me. Eat it.” Jian Chen waved his finger and levitated the pill into the youth’s mouth and then throat.

With the Radiant Spirit Pill ingested, the injuries that the youth had sustained began to heal. Although it wasn’t enough for a full recovery, it healed him to a considerable degree.

“Sire, you’ve saved my life already, and now you’re giving me such a precious Radiant Spirit Pill to treat my wounds. I am truly at a loss for what reason sire would be so benevolent.” The youth gratefully inquired.

“I have a bone to pick with the Heiyun clan, saving you was a convenient task to do on the way. There is no need for your thanks, take that pill as recompense for you guiding me.” Jian Chen smiled.

“Sire, your generosity has earned my respect. I am Wang Yufeng, how may I address sire?” The man cupped his hands together.

“Your wounds have healed by now. Let us be on our way. Take me to the Heiyun clan.” Jian Chen replied.

From his response, Wang Yufeng knew that Jian Chen wasn’t willing to give his own name, and he knew better than to continue asking for it. “The Radiant Spirit Pill is truly a powerful pill. In such a short time, I feel that my wounds have already stabilized. Leading the way would be no problem at all with this short of a recovery rate. Sire, the Heiyun clan is about five thousand

kilometers away, please allow me to guide you there now.” He spoke before starting to run.

Just as he took a single step away, Jian Chen tightly grabbed his shoulder and allowed the wind elements in the world to carry them both. With the wind carrying them swiftly into the air, the two of them quickly became the size of ants before they sped into the distance.

“Heavens! That young man was a Heaven Saint Master!”

“No wonder he was able to kill those three Earth Saint Masters so easily! He was a Heaven Saint Master!”

The people on the streets let cries of astonishment when they saw Jian Chen bring Wang Yufeng into the air. They all began to gossip to one another.

Looking down to see the city below them grow smaller and smaller, Wang Yufeng felt stunned. He recovered enough to look at Jian Chen in a completely different light.

“You’re a Heaven Saint Master!” He exclaimed in shock. He found it hard to believe that a youth, that was younger than him, was actually a Heaven Saint Master. Could this youth use some sort of secret technique to alter his appearance?

As he thought, a sudden realization hit Wang Yufeng, causing him to blanch. “Are you Jian Chen?”

“Correct!” Jian Chen confirmed.

“Ah! So you’re Jian Chen!” Straight away, Wang Yufeng’s face adopted an extremely emotional expression. The name of Jian Chen was essentially the same as a clap of thunder. Not only was he the King of Mercenaries, he was also a Heaven Saint Master that had killed five Heaven Saint Masters outside of Mercenary City all by himself. Such a shocking battle prowess was absolutely breathtaking and was far more than enough to cause any youngster to idolize him. Wang Yufeng was no exception to this.

Wang Yufeng had absolutely no idea that the person who had saved him was the illustrious King of Mercenaries, Jian Chen. Compared to him, Wang Yufeng was almost worlds apart in power and fame which left him utterly speechless.

“I did not think that I would be able to meet the renowned Jian Chen. To be able to meet your acquaintance is an honor that I, Wang Yufeng, have never felt before. Jian Chen, although I am not as strong as you are, I am a Second Cycle Earth Saint Master. If you will allow it, please let me accompany you on your travels. I will work as hard as a horse, and I will be as loyally as a dog!” Wang Yufeng looked expectantly to him. He had been earnest in his request to serve a Heaven Saint Master. It would not hurt him in any way, especially if that Heaven Saint Master was an expert with practically unlimited potential like him.

Shooting a glance at Wang Yufeng, Jian Chen shook his head, “I have plenty of enemies that are equally as strong as I am in power. Following me would not be a good idea, else you may find yourself

stuck in a pit of eternal damnation.”

“I, Wang Yufeng, am not afraid to die in order to live! I fear no enemy and truly wish to travel with you. It would be far more marvelous to travel with you than to be by myself. Jian Chen, please accept me into your group.” Wang Yufeng spoke with a resolve. He knew that this was an extremely rare opportunity, so he was very unwilling to let it go.

Jian Chen hesitated for a brief moment when he saw Wang Yufeng’s determination. Thinking about how few people there were in the Flame Mercenaries that were loyal to him, Jian Chen reconsidered his offer. “Very well, since my mercenary group is short-handed at the moment, I’ll accept you into it.”

Jian Chen’s reply gave Wang Yufeng no small amount of joy. He lit up with excitement.

“Ah, why were the men of the Heiyun clan chasing you?” Jian Chen asked out of curiosity.

A dark expression crossed Wang Yufeng’s face at that moment. Looking down at the bird-like beast cub in his hands, he snarled, “It was all because of this beast cub that I was chased. A month ago, I happened across a Steelwing beast nest in a nearby forest. There was only a single cub, so I was fortunate enough to obtain the cub after expending a large amount of my strength. Then the Heiyun clan accosted me on my way back and wanted to take it from me because of their greed. I knew that I wouldn’t be able to take them on and fled for an entire month. Sometimes, I would barely escape death from their hands, and it was at this final encounter

where I was able receive lord Jian Chen's help.”

Chapter 622: The Formidable Chaotic Force

Jian Chen turned to look at the magical beast cub in Wang Yufeng's hands. The beast cub was jet-black in color, and was roughly the same size as his tiger cub. The wings of the bird looked as if they were made of hard iron, and looked similar to an eagle with its sharp sword-like beak.

However, it was clear to see that this Steelwing Beast was a newborn. It barely possessed any intelligence, and there was not a single bit of danger awareness to be seen. As such, it was currently quite content and quiet in Wang Yufeng's arms, unaware that the man who was holding it had killed its mother.

“Class 5 Magical Beast cubs that can fly are hard to obtain. If they are carefully bred from young until they mature, they will provide a great deal of assistance. However, riding a flying type magical beast has its own risks associated with it. It would be best for a Heaven Saint Master to ride one.” Jian Chen spoke.

Wang Yufeng chuckled in response, “I understand that line of reasoning. The nature of a magical beast is a vicious one which can often lead to them going berserk. I heard once that many of the more gentle flying type magical beasts lose control of themselves, causing their riders to plummet to their deaths. However, I'm sure that I'll be able to reach the highest level of control with this one so that such an event will never happen. In any case, a Steelwing Beast is a Class 5 Magical Beast. When their intelligence matures, they'll be far more stable unlike the lower ranked magical beasts, so the chance of losing control of themselves should be very low.”

Jian Chen nodded his head in agreement. “What you are saying makes sense. However, you must take advantage of the young age of the Steelwing Beast and carefully nurture it. If it matures before you tame it, it’ll only become harder.”

“I know. For now, I will treat this little child as if it were my own. I will love it dearly.” Wang Yufeng laughed.

As they traveled, Jian Chen and Wang Yufeng talked to one another. On the way, they talked about plenty of things, allowing Jian Chen to gain a more in-depth understanding of Wang Yufeng. However, Jian Chen did not once ask about his background, meaning it was still a mystery to him. That was because when one answered such a question, it was only natural that they would ask the speaker the same question. Don’t ask, don’t tell. That was how to avoid any careless slip of the tongues.

The base of the Heiyun clan was in a First Class City around five thousand kilometers away. With Jian Chen carrying Wang Yufeng through the air, it took about two hours to arrive at the flourishing city. Afterward, Jian Chen traveled to a large manor that Wang Yufeng had pointed out to him. He hovered roughly five hundred meters in the air above it.

The fact that Jian Chen was using the wind elements in the world to travel had easily caught the attention of plenty of people below. One by one, they pointed at the floating figures in the air and started to gossip.

The Tianzhu Kingdom was a country that could be said to be in the middling ranks. It was slightly stronger than the Heavenly

Eagle Kingdom, and Heaven Saint Masters could be said to hold mighty ranks here. Whenever one ventured out in public, they would catch the eyes of many people.

Under Jian Chen's grasp, Wang Yufeng was able to point at the manor beneath him and say, "This is the place. This is the manor of the Heiyun clan."

Without even needing to ask Wang Yufeng, Jian Chen could tell that this manor was indeed the base of operations for the Heiyun clan. That was because Jian Chen had already scoped out the place with his presence and had a very clear idea of the terrain. Above the gates at the entrance of the compound was a signboard that made it all too obvious just who lived here.

Inside the manor, Jian Chen could detect three Heaven Saint Masters. One of them lacked both of his legs — it was the very same one that had tried to stop him in the Thousand Venom Valley and tried to take the tiger cub away from him.

"Heiyun Clan, I, Jian Chen, am a man that keeps his word. I've come to settle the grudge made between us last year. And from today on, there will be no such thing as the Heiyun clan." Jian Chen cruelly smiled. With a wave of his hand, the energy of the world came bubbling forth at rapid speed to gather into a ten meter long sword made of fire. The heat that radiated off of the blade was scorching and immediately elevated the temperature of the surrounding area.

With a brandish of his hand, the fire sword immediately disappeared into a blur of red lightning that struck the manor.

“Boom!”

An explosion dispelled the silence in the manor as a tremendous fire washed over the surrounding area. As the waves of flame billowed forth with great speed, the destruction of the manor continued without stop.

In an instant, the previously tranquil Heiyun clan turned into a bonfire with flames that danced and roared. The blue sky above was covered by the pluming black smoke from the wreckage, making it extremely eye-catching to the people below.

The interior of the manor was brought to a frenzy as countless servants and guards came running out of their rooms. When they saw the sea of flames, they all turned pale with fright and fled toward the outskirts with great panic as if afraid that the flames would incinerate them before they could escape.

“What in the world is going on?” A middle-aged man cried out as he barged out of his room. Up until now, he hadn’t even realized that someone had attacked the Heiyun clan.

“Quick! Put out the fire!” One of the more elderly caretakers cried out, but not a single person had heard him due to the intensity of the flames and the sounds that accompanied them. A few measly buckets of water wouldn’t be able to put a dent in these flames in any case.

“Someone has attacked our Heiyun clan. Be on your guard, on

your guard I said!” The captain of the guards immediately commanded the rest of the guards of the clan, but when he realized that there were people floating in the sky, his face paled drastically. “No! The ones who’ve attacked us are Heaven Saint Masters! That’s not someone we can fight! Qu-quick! Call out the patriarch!”

At the warning of the captain, three separate entities flew out of the interior of the manor. The three men quickly soared to the heavens to meet with Jian Chen, and at the same time, an elderly voice called out with such volume that the ears of everyone else ached from it.

“You there, for what reason have you to attack my Heiyun clan!” The elderly man called out with as much dignity as he could muster, but even his dignity could hardly hold back the furious anger the speaker had.

Soon enough, the three Heaven Saint Masters arrived at the same altitude as Jian Chen. Standing shoulder to shoulder just twenty meters away from Jian Chen, each one of them looked ready to kill him.

“Who are you? State your name at once and why you are attacking my clan.” The bald elder standing in the middle barked out as he grasped his sword. The sharp point of the sword glinted ominously, and if it were any regular person standing there, their valor surely would have dipped to non-existent levels.

Ignoring the elder that spoke, Jian Chen stared at the elder without any legs next to him. Jian Chen gave him a cold smile.

“Perhaps you might recognize me?”

The elder without legs obviously recognized Jian Chen, and let out a gasp in shock, “It’s you!” In his mind, he couldn’t help but think of the legends he had been hearing as of late about Jian Chen. His heart skipped a beat, and he contemplated trying to flee.

“Third elder, who is he? Do you know him?” The bald elder asked.

“He’s the one who’s been making waves recently with the rumors. The King of Mercenaries — Jian Chen!” The elder barked with a great deal of difficulty.

The bald elder blanched as well when he heard that, “What!? He’s Jian Chen?” Prior to this, Jian Chen had killed five Heaven Saint Masters by himself outside of Mercenary City. Even the news of his fight with two Saint Rulers within the city had been heard by these elders. Such a powerful figure like that was not an opponent that the Heiyun clan could take on. Even with the three Heaven Saint Masters, they stood no chance at all.

“So you do remember me. Then, I presume you remember what I said to you years ago. I said it once. If I, Jian Chen, am not dead, then I’ll be sure to annihilate your entire Heiyun Clan. I have never once reneged my words before. I will not let a single one of my enemies escape, and today is the day I make good on that promise of mine.” Jian Chen laughed.

The three Heaven Saint Masters blanched at Jian Chen’s words.

While two of the three men there had not participated, they all knew just what event Jian Chen was referring to.

“Sire Jian Chen, my Heiyun clan was the one at fault during that time. We give our sincerest apology, and are willing to offer ample compensation. We ask that sire Jian Chen pardon our Heiyun clan, and we are more than willing to offer our assistance to you should you require us or our territory.” The bald-elder’s intimidating glare melted away to adopt an apologetic smile. His voice gained a softer tone and no longer contained the iron edge from earlier

Unmoved by the proposal, Jian Chen chuckled, “How lightly you treat your words. Back when I was on the verge of death because of your clan, this blood debt was formed. Just how could I give it up so easily? Only in your dreams.” With that, Jian Chen spoke no more and immediately shot toward the head of the leading Heaven Saint Master. The Chaotic Force began to cycle around his body, and with a flash of light from his dantian, the energy flew into his palm.

Now that he could control the Chaotic Force, Jian Chen’s palm took on a gray color as a destructive amount of power came forth. The surrounding area around his palm looked like water as it distorted with ripples and waves.

At this one moment, Jian Chen could feel the practically unlimited amount of power he was wielding. It was almost as if his hand could split apart the world around him, and a single punch could kill a Heaven Saint Master instantaneously. This would be the very first time he wielded such a tremendous power.

With a grunt, Jian Chen slapped the area around him with his palm, causing the space in front of the slap to distort so violently that a slight fissure formed.

With such a destructive force being unleashed from his palm, it was as if a dragon had suddenly been let loose.

Chapter 623: Destruction Of The Heiyun Clan

With such a destructive force being unleashed from his palm, it was as if a dragon had suddenly been let loose.

The space beneath the strike surged violently as the powerful energy ravaged the area around it with dreadful might.

The three Heaven Saint Masters could feel just how powerful Jian Chen's strike was from the surrounding space. It was like an icy block that froze the three of them in place. Moving even a single finger became difficult.

The three Heaven Saint Masters had only enough time to turn pale in fright before the boundless wave of energy slammed against their bodies unceremoniously.

In the face of such a tremendous amount of energy, the three Heaven Saint Masters folded as if they were ants. Without putting up any resistance, the three their bodies split apart into a violent display of blood and gore.

The palm strike of Jian Chen had not stopped there. The influx of energy completely shattered the bodies of the three Heaven Saint Masters before continuing to slam into the manor below.

“Boom!” Following a tremendous cracking sound, the entire world seemed to shudder as if giving birth to an earthquake.

Practically everyone in the city felt the ground beneath them shake, and several of the more shoddily built restaurants could not help but unsettlingly sway. Bits and pieces of the Heiyun clan's manor splintered into every single direction possible. At the center, the ruins of a tremendous strike could be seen.

In an instant, the previously flourishing city was left a mess, and the Heiyun clan tragically suffered. The previous proud manor had been reduced to a ruined wasteland, and only smoke could be seen from what used to be the walls and roofs. At the very center of the manor grounds, a single hole about a hundred meters wide and ten meters deep could be seen.

Furthermore, this giant influx of energy had damaged every single building within a kilometer radius. From the epicenter of the Heiyun clan, not a single building remained untouched by the blow.

The might of the palm had caused such devastation. This was the power of a Saint Ruler!

From his perch high in the sky, Jian Chen observed his handiwork. He felt startled by the might of his own palm, and remained quiet for some time. He did not expect such devastation to occur after attacking the elders.

“Is this the power of the Chaotic Force?” Jian Chen thought to himself in surprise. The might of the Chaotic Force had indeed been out of his expectations. Three of the Heiyun clan's Heaven Saint Masters had been killed so easily that it was almost as if they were nothing. His attack made him experience just how true the

saying was, 'In front of a Saint Ruler, everyone else is an ant.'

That saying was a veritable truth. In front of a Saint Ruler, everyone else may as well be an ant.

Even Wang Yufeng, who had been leading Jian Chen, was rendered speechless by the devastation. His eyes were as round as plates, and his mouth had dropped open wide enough for an entire chicken egg to fit in it from his shock.

He could see that Jian Chen had only struck with his palm, yet that attack had killed three Heaven Saint Masters. Furthermore, it had brought forth such devastation! It truly filled him with disbelief, and for a moment, he doubted what he was seeing.

He wasn't a Heaven Saint Master, but even he understood that a Heaven Saint Master shouldn't be able to cause this much destruction.

"Could... could Jian Chen already be a..." Wang Yufeng suddenly began to shiver as a question popped in his head. This thought that had suddenly popped in his head was so terrifying that even he wished to stop thinking about the answer.

Plenty of people gathered in the surrounding area of the Heiyun clan to see the outcome. A procession of soldiers had already formed as well, but even they could only look up in misery at the floating figures above. Each spectator remained silent, completely shocked at the sight.

The army of soldiers didn't dare say a thing. Despite the destruction of part of the city, not a single one of them was brave enough to even fart right now.

The Heiyun clan held an extremely lofty and powerful status within the city. They had been the strongest faction in the city and had been considered second to none even in the kingdom they resided. However, this mighty faction had been wiped out in an instant, and against their assailant, they might as well have been nothing. This was something that every single spectator found hard to believe.

Half a moment later, Jian Chen finally let out a long turbulent sigh to control his emotions. With a wave of his hand, he tossed several Space Rings into the hands of several people down below. "We're going!" He informed Wang Yufeng before turning around to leave the city, leaving behind the dumbfounded citizens of the city.

It had only taken a single wave of his palm to cause an irrevocable amount of damage to the Heiyun clan. The blood debt that Jian Chen had with the Heiyun clan could be considered to be done and over with.

The following days after, Jian Chen relentlessly continued to try to find the whereabouts of the Jiede clan. The Jiede clan remained true to their label as a hermit family, staying hidden in a forest or mountain somewhere. They were an isolated faction that never showed their faces to the world, causing Jian Chen to hear absolutely nothing that could lead him to their location. In fact, many of the people Jian Chen asked had never even heard of their

name before.

However, the gods were willing to reward the hardworking man. On the third day of Jian Chen's laborious attempt to learn of the Jiede clan's whereabouts, a relatively strong sect reported that they knew of the Jiede clan. Jian Chen brought Wang Yufeng with him there.

The Jiede clan was said to have been founded at the core of a mountain with countless of magical beasts standing guard around it. There was no shortage of Class 5 Magical Beasts there, and there were several Class 6 Magical Beasts that the clan had tamed. They were trained to guard the gates and to prevent any outsiders from entering.

Jian Chen brought Wang Yufeng to a spot twenty kilometers away from the reported mountain ridge. He then stared off into the distance at the series of buildings that sprung up from the ridge. "Wang Yufeng, you stay here. I will be fighting a Saint Ruler. Taking you there would only serve to hurt you."

At the mention that Jian Chen was about to start trouble with a Saint Ruler, Wang Yufeng's heart began to beat frantically. It was with great concern that he said, "Jian Chen, your opponent is a man who became a Saint Ruler many years ago. Furthermore, this is his domain. If you're going in there alone, you must be careful."

"Relax. I'll be fine, but you must make sure to hide yourself away. Don't let the men of the Jiede clan catch you. There might not be any magical beasts around here, but make sure that you don't get caught by one nonetheless. Hide yourself now." Jian

Chen instructed before flying into the air to reach the Jiede clan.

Chapter 624: Challenging The Jiede Clan

There was a place in the backmost courtyards of the Jiede clan that the majority of people were forbidden from entering. This forbidden place was what many of the clan members considered to be a type of holy ground. Practically everyone bowed reverently in the direction of these grounds when standing near them.

The patriarch of the Jiede clan would often shut himself off from the world in this forbidden place to focus on his cultivation. He was the sole Saint Ruler of the Jiede clan and was the sole reason for the Jiede clan's status as a hermit clan.

Within a flower garden in the forbidden zone, all sorts of flowers were blooming in a stunning fashion. A rich aroma wafted through the air, and a large rabble of butterflies could be seen flapping their wings gently as they traveled through the air, giving this deathly-quiet area a vibrant feeling of life.

At the very center of the flower garden was a wooden house. This wooden house clearly looked as if it had stood for a very long time. The wood was ancient, but despite that, it remained standing with signs of damage from the passage of time. It had clearly been worn down to the point where it looked as if it would collapse. Like an elderly man that seemed destined to fall at any moment, this house looked as if it was about to collapse on itself with a single totter.

Within the house, the patriarch of the Jiede clan sat at a wooden table in the center of the room. His eyebrows were furrowed together as if deep in thought, and his face was covered with a look of worry.

Ever since his escape from Mercenary City, the man had been living in unease without a day of solace. When he had first realized what was happening in Mercenary City, he had been deeply influenced by it. Jian Chen was able to do as he pleased in Mercenary City without restraint, and for the life of him, the patriarch could not understand why.

As a two thousand year old Saint Ruler, patriarch Jiede knew a lot about the world. Even the barrier of Mercenary City was known to him to several degrees, and he knew that its capabilities were something that a Heaven Saint Master could never hope to match.

Jian Chen had violated the laws of Mercenary City, but he had not been punished. In the eyes of an outsider, Jian Chen had clearly some sort of connection with the power holders of the city, but patriarch Jiede didn't truly believe in that.

He knew that the barrier of the city had gained sentient life which had given rise to the rumors of the spirit of the barrier. It had already been countless of years since its birth, and the status it wielded in Mercenary City was something practically no one could ever touch aside from the founder of the city himself, Mo Tianyun. Not a single person could command the spirit of the barrier, not even the grand elder.

Patriarch Jiede was completely convinced that the reason why Jian Chen had escaped punishment had nothing to do with having a relationship with the power holders of Mercenary City. The elder was puzzled by the method Jian Chen used to escape punishment.

He was more worried about Jian Chen's talents and the fact that he could not locate the Duanyun sword than the method Jian Chen used to escape punishment.

Patriarch Jiede was more than aware that Jian Chen was skilled enough to reach the realm of a Saint Ruler soon. With such a powerful entity as an enemy, the patriarch knew that it would lead to nothing good. However, the undeniable importance of the patriarch's Ruler Armament meant he was extremely unwilling to forget about it.

Not only was the Ruler Armament a treasure to the Jiede clan as their symbol of power, it was also passed down from generation to generation from the previous patriarch. It held meaning beyond all else and would be a great boon to him when he attempted to crossover to become a Saint King.

A Saint Ruler at the Ninth Heavenly Layer would be able to fuse with a Ruler Armament, and in the case that one was successful in doing so, that Saint Ruler's chances of making the breakthrough to becoming a Saint King would skyrocket.

"I absolutely cannot return to Mercenary City, but if Jian Chen spends the rest of his life in Mercenary City without leaving, what good will that be? With time, even he'll become a Saint Ruler, and when the time comes, he definitely won't be easy to deal with. It seems I have no other choice. Even if I cannot take back the Ruler Armament, I cannot allow Jian Chen to live any longer. Otherwise, he'll bring doom and destruction to the Jiede clan." The patriarch muttered to himself.

Suddenly, a tremendous power from outside suddenly made itself known to him. Sensing this provoking aura, the patriarch sat upright. “What power! Who might that be?” He wondered aloud to himself before flying outside to greet the invader of his territory.

Just a hundred meters above the Jiede clan, the white-robed Jian Chen hovered in place, icily looking down below him. His eyes were intimidating, and his aura was not concealed at all. It was there for the entirety of the Jiede clan to notice and tremble under.

Suddenly, ten different figures came flying up to greet him. One by one, they surrounded Jian Chen in a tight ring with unfavorable expressions.

Roar! Roar! Roar! Roar!

Four heaven-shaking roars could be heard as four different magical beasts came flying forward from different directions. Shortly afterward, the entire forest seemed to shake as the silent Class 6 Magical Beast protectors sensed the abnormality in the area and came to greet Jian Chen.

These Class 6 Magical Beasts were not similar to the ones born in the wild lands of Cross Mountains. They were born and bred from the careful and painstaking energy of the Jiede clan. As a result, the friendship between magical beast and humans had reached a skintight relationship. Over these years, these Class 6 Magical Beasts had spent their entire lives protecting the clan silently against any invader or mercenary that dared to draw too close.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

Following three separate muffled explosions, four large magical beasts made their way into Jian Chen's line of sight. Jumping from the mountain range, the magical beasts were like miniature mountains themselves. With each step they took, the earth beneath them shook.

They were pitch black in color and stood on two legs exactly like how a human stood. The only exception was that their heights were roughly thirty meters tall, a height far taller than a human.

"Boom!" Another muffled explosion reverberated across the sky as the four Class 6 Magical Beasts positioned themselves two hundred meters away from Jian Chen. They stood in the cardinal directions, surrounding Jian Chen yet again.

"Hemophilic Apes!" Jian Chen recognized the four Class 6 Magical Beasts, feeling slightly surprised. Hemophilic Apes were a type of magical beasts that had particularly bloodthirsty and violent tendencies. They were, as a result, extremely hard to tame, but the Jiede clan had somehow managed to perfectly tame four of them as protectors. To Jian Chen, this feat was by no means a minor one.

"Sire, who might you be!? State your name and reason for coming!" An elder intimidatingly barked at Jian Chen. There had been no kind edge to his voice since Jian Chen had purposely intruded upon the Jiede clan with such a powerful aura that was obviously intended to provoke the experts of the clan.

Folding his arms against his chest, Jian Chen stared at the several Heaven Saint Masters around him with a smile. “I’m the one you’ve been looking for, Jian Chen. I came today to visit your Jiede clan.”

“What? You’re Jian Chen?”

“So you’re Jian Chen...”

“You have the guts to come knocking on our door to seek your death...”

As soon as they learned who he was, everyone felt surprised. Shortly after their surprised, they all laughed as a tremendous spike of killing intent suddenly erupted from their bodies.

“Roar!”

Sensing the hostility in their owners, the four Hemophilic Apes immediately identified Jian Chen as an enemy. One by one, they let out a roar that shook the heavens as a bloodthirsty light entered their fist-sized pupils.

The tiger cub on Jian Chen’s shoulder was none too pleased at the four Class 6 Magical Beasts aggressive behavior. Standing up, the cub let loose a mighty roar toward the four apes. Although the cub was extremely proud, it was still a Class 4 Magical Beast in strength. It was not yet mature enough to deal with four Class 6

Magical Beasts. Thus, the action of the tiger cub had not been an attempt to fight the four beasts but to completely infuriate them.

As expected, the four apes let out a furious howl before charging at Jian Chen with great cumbersome steps.

Not only did the Jiede clan do nothing to stop the four Hemophilic Apes, they took several steps away to give them space to fight.

They knew of Jian Chen's strength and how he had been able to best four Heaven Saint Master's Heaven Tier Battle Skills before killing the four. His strength was not something that they could easily overlook, so they wanted the four apes to test his strength first.

As if coordinating with one another, the four apes charged at Jian Chen before leaping into the air. Their mountainous bodies were like great big cranes as they took flight, making their way a hundred meters into the air where Jian Chen was.

Staring at the four Hemophilic Apes in disdain as they charged at him, Jian Chen smiled cruelly. With a flip of his hand, a condensed blob of Chaotic Force encompassed it before he moved to slap them down.

Chapter 625: Showdown With A Saint Ruler (One)

The amount of power that Jian Chen held in his hand rippled across the entire mountainous area as if it were a heavy weight. With speed as fast as lightning but no thunder to accompany it, the area beneath the strike started to look even more cramped than before. Then, it seemed as if the entire area had frozen in time.

The four Hemophilic Apes had only gotten within fifty meters of Jian Chen before they were frozen in place. They had only been thirty meters in the air, but even their gigantic bodies were rooted firmly in place.

“Boom!” Following their inability to move, a fierce amount of energy ruthlessly smashed into the bodies of the four apes, causing the Class 6 Magical Beasts to crash back down to the ground as fast as they came up. As they fell, blood was pouring from not only their mouths, but also their eyes, ears, noses, and even pores.

Smashing against the ground with a terrible rumbling sound, the four Hemophilic Apes landed so roughly that the entire area shook several times as fissures started to form. Even the mountain ridge started to collapse.

A ten meter deep hole now spanned a perimeter of several hundred meters. In the center, four separate craters could be seen from where the four Hemophilic Apes had landed. Yet, there was no movement from within the crater. Whether they were still alive or not was a complete mystery.

The men from the Jiede clan felt their jaws drop at the unbelievable sight in front of them. As if a storm was being waged in their minds, they were deeply affected by the sight. Jian Chen's strength was something that left them all speechless.

It had only taken a single palm to defeat four Class 6 Magical Beasts to such a degree. Was this really the strength of a Heaven Saint Master?

Against these four Hemophilic Apes, even a Sixth Cycle Heaven Saint Master would be unable to defeat them soundly without a Heaven Tier Battle Skill. This was the difference in natural strength between humanity and magical beast. However, Jian Chen only needed a single palm strike to defeat them — what kind of power was that?

Slowly taking back his hand, Jian Chen stared at the four Hemophilic Apes. "These four Class 6 Magical Beasts are quite strong since they survived even after receiving this palm strike of mine. They're stronger than the Heaven Saint Masters of the Heiyun clan at the very least."

"A-ar-are you... are you really Jian Chen?" After a long while, one of the elders finally inquired with a stare of disbelief. He didn't dare believe that the youth that had become the King of Mercenaries was so unbelievably strong. Each and every participant of the Gathering of the Mercenaries was under the age of fifty, so a youth with that much strength was simply far too much.

“Isn’t... isn’t this the strength of a Saint Ruler?” A woman despondently asked.

“There’s no possible way Jian Chen should have a strength like that. Who are you?” Another man skeptically inquired. They had never seen Jian Chen before and were thus not sure of what he looked like.

Giving a cold smile, Jian Chen was about to open his mouth to say something when something out of the corner of his eyes caught his attention, causing him to look there.

The space in the direction he was looking at was starting to distort to reveal a white-robed elder with long hair and a scholarly aura. This was the patriarch of the Jiede clan and the sole remaining Saint Ruler.

“We pay our respects to the patriarch!” The ten Heaven Saint Masters immediately bowed out of respect to him.

The patriarch ignored the bowing members of his clan in favor of observing Jian Chen. When he recognized his face, the patriarch immediately froze in disbelief. The person that he wanted to capture at all costs had actually taken the initiative to come to him! This revelation was startling to say the least.

The expression on the patriarch’s face hardened as he said, “Jian Chen, it really is you!”

“Correct, it is I. Today, I’ve come to pay a visit to your clan.” Jian Chen smiled as he cupped his hands in mock salute. He exuded the air of a regal prince, and if anyone else were to look at the two, they would have assumed that Jian Chen was a good friend of the patriarch.

Letting out a cold snort, the patriarch ignored Jian Chen’s actions. He swept his eyes down to the four deep craters and then back to Jian Chen with a solemn expression. “Jian Chen, did you do this?”

“What other person is there here but me?” Jian Chen smiled.

“Impossible!” The patriarch barked with narrowed eyes. Glaring at him, the patriarch said, “Jian Chen, it has only been a few months at most since we last met. How did you become so strong so quickly? Did you make the breakthrough from a Heaven Saint Master to a Saint Ruler?” In his final few words, the patriarch grew more and more emotional; by the end, he was no longer as calm as before.

“In this world of extraordinary things, there is no such thing as an impossibility, but there is something I can tell you at the very least. I am still a Heaven Saint Master.” Jian Chen replied. He was indeed the same rank as before, but he had gained the fighting prowess of a Saint Ruler when he had attained the Minor Achievement of the Chaotic Body. He had not yet comprehended the profound mysteries of the world, and thus, could not be considered a Saint Ruler.

The patriarch let loose a sigh of relief at those words. The sudden

thought from before had been causing his heart to skip a beat in fright.

A youth not even fifty years old becoming a Saint Ruler was far too terrifying of a thought to exist in this world.

A cold smile couldn't help but appear on Jian Chen's face when he saw the expression of the patriarch. "Don't you wish to take back the Ruler Armament of your clan? Since I'm here, why don't you try and get it back?"

Instantly, the patriarch regained his calm demeanor in order to make a quick observation to see if there were any hidden experts around. He very much doubted the fact that Jian Chen would travel here alone — such an action was akin to delivering oneself to death in a sense. But, even after a series of scans, the patriarch came up with nothing. There was nobody hidden nearby.

With the sudden calm on the patriarch's face, Jian Chen let loose a snicker to himself. "If you're not going to make a move, allow me to make the first move. Take my palm then." Another burst of Chaotic Force appeared in Jian Chen's palm before he flew forward to slap the patriarch. A tremendous amount of energy appeared, distorting and applying pressure to the space around them. The patriarch immediately felt his body be locked in place.

Having received this prison of energy around him, the patriarch immediately felt shock register on his face. He had not thought that Jian Chen would become so strong in such a short amount of time.

Despite his shock, the patriarch was not slow to respond. With a loud shout, his own energy came bursting from his body, shattering the frigid space around him. The space regained its natural state as the energies clashed and equalized.

The patriarch's figure flickered, and he looked as if he was blending with the world itself. With this ability to control space itself, he was able to instantaneously travel a hundred meters to where Jian Chen was.

Jian Chen let loose his slap. The burst of Chaotic Force that accompanied the slap continued forward with reckless abandon before finally smashing into the side of a mountain.

“Boom!” A fierce explosion rang through the air as the mountain was reduced to fragments that flew off in every direction. The mountain itself had been reduced to absolutely nothing.

“Impossible! You’ve... you’ve become a Saint Ruler!” The patriarch cried out involuntarily — this blow had caused his heart to stop beating for a brief moment. The power that had been contained in Jian Chen’s hand was something only a Saint Ruler would be capable of.

The ten Heaven Saint Masters of the Jiede clan were startled as well. Many of them started to pale. A Saint Ruler at such a youthful age was far too shocking.

“Retreat!” One of the elders cried out before every single one of

them scattered into every direction possible. A battle between Saint Rulers was not something any Heaven Saint Master could get involved with. If they drew close, they would only be caught in the crossfire.

Jian Chen didn't speak a word and instead sent another Chaotic Force infused palm strike toward the patriarch.

Sensing the tremendous power coming at him, the patriarch did not choose to dodge. Instead, he boomed out, "Jian Chen, you may have stepped into the realm of a Saint Ruler, but you are only at the first layer and nothing more! I'll show you just how big of a difference there is from the First Heavenly Layer and the Fourth Heavenly Layer!" An endless amount of energy began to seep from the patriarch's body, causing the space around him to quiver. With a brandish of his hand, he sent energy flying toward Jian Chen's strike. As the attack traveled through the air, the space around it started to warp and twist in on itself.

"Boom!" The two bundles of energy collided in mid-air against each other, causing yet another explosion. The sound of the explosion was ear-piercing, and even the highest point of the heavens would be able to hear the crackling sound from it. For a brief moment, everyone nearby lost their ability to hear. The remaining dregs of energy that sloughed off from the blast spiraled into the surrounding area, and a decent few kilometers of forest below had been obliterated.

A translucent barrier appeared during the blast to protect the manor of the Jiede clan. The barrier shivered for a brief moment when the turbulent energy struck it, but it managed to resist the

blow with some difficulty.

Chapter 626: Showdown With A Saint Ruler (Two)

The tremendous clash of energy persisted for a while before finally starting to ebb away. At a glance, one could see that the previously untouched mountain ridges protecting the Jiede clan had been reduced to a complete mess. Not a single part of the range resembled the pristineness it had exuded before.

A battle between Saint Rulers was far more powerful and devastating than a battle between Heaven Saint Masters.

Jian Chen and the patriarch of the Jiede clan floated several hundred meters away from one another. In this one battle between them, they were equally matched, neither held an advantage over the other.

The patriarch revealed a cross look on his face. Jian Chen's strength was completely unexpected and far beyond his imagination. It left a sour taste in his mouth. A Saint Ruler of several hundred years was being forced down by the newly crossed over Saint Ruler, Jian Chen. From the exchange they just had, Jian Chen's strength wasn't unmanageable.

“But how did he cultivate so fast? It was only a few months at most, but his strength has increased by leaps and bounds to the point where his strength is comparable to mine. His talent is far too terrifying. If he can accomplish so much at his young age, I'd imagine that it'd only take him another hundred years to become a Saint King.” The patriarch quietly muttered to himself. Already, he was starting to see Jian Chen in an entirely different light.

Back in Mercenary City, Jian Chen had only been a junior with decent skill to him. Thus, Jian Chen was someone that could be disregarded like an ant, but after several months, this ant had suddenly swelled up to a tremendous size. It could pose trouble even for him, and that was something that did not sit well with him.

Jian Chen's growth was far too fast. It was so fast that the entire continent would be stunned by it.

A hundred meters away, Jian Chen stared down the patriarch with a calm face. His eyes were intimidating, and his body released a tremendous aura that shot into the air with an impressive amount of energy. At the moment, he looked like some sort of war god that towered over everyone else with indomitable strength. To be even more specific, he was like some sort of undefeatable god of the sword that was ready to split the world with his powerful sword Qi.

Suddenly, a gray-colored energy began to float around Jian Chen's body. This was an incoming surge of Chaotic Force, gathering wisp by wisp in his hand. Soon enough, his palm was twinkling with a gray-colored light. With such a large amount of energy gathered, the space around it started to twist and distort once more.

When the patriarch sensed the amount of energy gathering in Jian Chen's palm, he grew serious as well. As a Saint Ruler, he was able to sense that the energy in Jian Chan's hand was far stronger than his own Saint Force. This realization was extremely troubling

and he was left no time to hesitate. With both arms moving into action, his palms moved in front of his chest to accumulate an extremely mystical power that attracted the profound mysteries of the world. As his hands moved, the space surrounding him started to flow like water. It was like some sort of mysterious power was accelerating the flow of time.

At this sight, the ten Heaven Saint Masters that were watching knew that the two combatants were charging up their attacks. Without even needing to be told, they immediately grabbed the people hiding behind the manor's barrier and fled as far as possible. They could not guarantee that the barrier would be able to hold up against both Jian Chen and their patriarch's attack.

Several seconds passed before Jian Chen took the first move. With his palm thrusting forward, the Chaotic Force that had accumulated in his palm came flying out like a stream of water. Carrying a tremendous power, the Chaotic Force traveled toward the patriarch.

“Ha!” At the same time, the patriarch let out a deep grunt. His palms shot out as fast as lightning, letting loose the mysterious energy he had been accumulating. This energy contained the profound mysteries of the world. It could not be seen nor felt by those who did not comprehend it. It was something that fused with the world and space itself, mysteriously and indescribably.

When the two energies collided in the air, the expected explosion from the collision of these two energies, strangely, did not happen. There was no fallout from the energies washing over the surrounding area either. Instead, the space where they collided

gave a mighty shudder and shake as the energies tore it apart. A single meter long fissure appeared in the sky, but was quickly patched back up by the world. At the very center of the collision was a single black hole, but unlike any normal black hole, there was an extremely faint light from a star that could be seen inside.

Jian Chen's Chaotic Force was stuck in a deadlock with the patriarch's profound mysteries of the world, in a constant struggle to win over the other. Eventually, both powers tried to cancel each other out as their energies began to fade. Within several seconds, Jian Chen's Chaotic Force ended up the winner of the exchange while the profound mysteries of the world had been completely used up. The remaining Chaotic Force had not been slowed in the slightest. It continued to fly toward the patriarch.

“What is this energy? How is it so powerful!?” The patriarch cried out in astonishment. Pushing out with his palms again, he forced out even more Saint Force from his body to try and counteract the slightly weaker Chaotic Force.

“Master, you can't keep going on like this. Your usage of Chaotic Force is far too much; also, the true might of it is not being displayed. It is only with the Chaotic Body that the Chaotic Force can show its true might.” Ziying's voice explained in Jian Chen's mind.

Jian Chen's heart skipped a beat after hearing this. He immediately gave up the idea of using the Chaotic Force as a projectile against his enemy. At a thought, the wind elements in the world gathered around him, surrounding Jian Chen with an azure light. Jian Chen flew straight for the patriarch.

“Master, the Chaotic Force should be distributed throughout the body to show off the might of the Chaotic Body.” Qingsuo instructed with a singsong voice in Jian Chen’s mind. They were extremely knowledgeable about the Chaotic Force unlike Jian Chen, who had only just made contact with it. He was a complete stranger to this powerful energy, and required the two sword spirits to guide him on how to use it.

Chapter 627: Showdown With A Saint Ruler (Three)

Jian Chen didn't hesitate in his actions after listening to the sword spirits. Like an obedient schoolchild, he immediately swallowed some of the Chaotic Force from his dantian and spread it throughout his body. With the fusion of the two, Jian Chen immediately felt the strength of his body elevate to a higher level in terms of defensive might.

Once the Chaotic Force had spread through his body, Jian Chen didn't even feel the Chaotic Force dissipate. It continued to maintain that same level of strength throughout his body without being used at all. The following moments after he had used the Chaotic Force to strengthen himself, Jian Chen felt his entire body continue to operate at an extremely boosted level.

During that moment, Jian Chen drew closer to the patriarch. His palm became a fist filled with Chaotic Force meant to punch the patriarch. As the fist traveled, the surrounding space around it violently trembled.

Jian Chen wasn't adept in close combat fighting with his own body, but Jian Chen didn't worry about any threats because the powerful Chaotic Force had been joined with the Chaotic Body.

The patriarch was startled at Jian Chen's choice of attack, but then a small smile appeared on his face as he said, "Jian Chen, this old man has a considerably strong body. Allow me to teach you a good lesson with it." Without delay, the patriarch's right hand formed a claw shape as it filled with Saint Force. That hand flew

toward Jian Chen's neck while his left hand moved to block Jian Chen's punch.

The patriarch of the Jiede clan was without a doubt a Saint Ruler. He was one who had peered into the abyss that was the profound mysteries of the world and understood the secrets to space. A fist of his contained the powers of space, and was extremely fast as a result. It moved so quickly that Jian Chen had no time to dodge the attack. Thus, the man grabbed Jian Chen by his throat.

Jian Chen felt startled to see the hand reach his throat. Although the Chaotic Force was still spread throughout his body and boosted it to an unbelievable level, Jian Chen was fighting a Saint Ruler either way. He wasn't even sure of how strong he was with his body as it was right now. He was unsure whether or not he could survive the Saint Ruler's strike to his throat.

The Saint Ruler easily grasped onto Jian Chen's weakpoint! This made the patriarch feel extremely joyful, and with a twinkle of killing intent in his eyes, he laughed. "Jian Chen, you may have stepped into the realm of Saint Rulers, but you've clearly not understood the mystery that is space! Allow this old man to send you to your death!" With the final word, the patriarch squeezed his right hand, trying to snap Jian Chen's neck.

After the patriarch clenched his hand, he came to the startling realization that what he was holding was not flesh and blood; it was something many times harder than steel and stone!

The look of joy on the patriarch's face slipped away with the

realization. Staring at Jian Chen in shock, he asked through his befuddlement, “How!? How did your throat become this tough?”

By now, Jian Chen’s body was completely filled with Chaotic Force and boasted a defensive might that was startling. Even a Saint Ruler wouldn’t be able to leave a scratch no matter how hard he tried. One wouldn’t even be able to snap Jian Chen’s neck. Jian Chen was filled with an endless amount of joy while he calmed himself down.

At the same time, Jian Chen’s right palm made contact with the patriarch’s palm. With a sharp “crack!,” the bones in the patriarch’s right arm fractured.

Letting out a deep grunt in pain, the patriarch watched as his right arm lifelessly drooped down to his side.

Jian Chen also grunted as the Chaotic Force in his right arm cycled. Jian Chen punched at the patriarch’s chest, but the space around his fist froze up, allowing his punch to travel even faster.

After experiencing Jian Chen’s punch once, the patriarch was now painfully aware of how strong his fist was. Unwilling to allow himself to be used as a punching bag, the patriarch’s body flickered into non-existence. By borrowing the power of space, he was able to retreat several meters away where the frozen space Jian Chen had created did not affect him.

“Bang!” The fist of Jian Chen impacted against the sky, letting loose a muffled explosion while space became heavily distorted.

Jian Chen did not hesitate to let out a loud hiss after his punch missed. He charged straight for the patriarch, who was still several meters away, as his fighting intent rapidly increased.

The patriarch's face hardened when he felt the amount of power in Jian Chen swell up. Swiftly turning around, he borrowed the power of space once more to retreat several hundred meters away. Once there, he began to condense his Saint Force into his right hand. In a second, a sword made of fire appeared in it. The flames that flickered off the blade were so intense that they seemed to burn the very space around them.

“And now, this old man won't be holding back any longer. Let this old man have some good fun.” The patriarch spat. After these several exchanges, he knew that this was no time to hold back; otherwise, there would be no way to counter this upstart of a youngster.

Chapter 628: Subjugation (One)

The patriarch of the Jiede clan was one with the space around him. In his current state of harmony, he was free to travel almost instantaneously toward Jian Chen. His Saint Weapon resplendently shined as it flew at Jian Chen. Following the path of the blade, a fissure about two meters wide was torn asunder.

Even Jian Chen felt slightly intimidated by the might of this sword swing. He knew that his Chaotic Body had been strong enough to endure a throat-crushing experience, but this time he was facing the edge of an extremely sharp weapon. Compared to a claw, a sword was far more intimidating. Jian Chen had no guarantees that he would be able to handle survive this attack as easily as the strike before.

The power that came from a Saint Ruler when they used their Saint Weapon was not insignificant. Unwilling to take the sword head-on, Jian Chen decided to evade by dodging to the side.

However, he was still a Heaven Saint Master. It was true that he had the battle strength of a Saint Ruler, but Jian Chen had not been blessed with an iota of comprehension of the profound mysteries of the world. This one sword swing of the patriarch was imbued with the powers of space itself. Jian Chen was left with no bargaining power as he tried to dodge the sword. In the end, Jian Chen was struck in the chest by the flaming sword.

However, the sword did not pierce his body as expected. When the moment came for the Saint Weapon to make contact with Jian Chen's chest, the forward momentum of the sword came to a

grinding halt, and moved no further. Despite its unbelievably sharp point and the power behind it, it was only capable of cutting through a shallow layer of skin, drawing a dot of blood.

Patriarch Jiede's irises dilated to practically a needle's circumference as he gasped in shock at the small point of damage on Jian Chen's chest. He couldn't believe it; while he didn't put his entire might into this one swing, it was still roughly eighty percent of his raw might. This energy could destroy the world around him if directed, yet Jian Chen was still floating in front him practically unharmed. Such a sight was far too much for him to accept.

Jian Chen looked down at the mosquito-bite-like injury on his chest, and an extremely wide smile graced his face. A Saint Ruler had used his Saint Weapon, yet it was ineffective! This only went to show just how strong the Chaotic Body was. Now, Jian Chen was no longer afraid of the patriarch.

“Master, Ziying and Qingsuo haven't yet recovered our strength so the Origin energy is not yet comparable to the Chaotic Force. During this battle, please use the Chaotic Force in your body instead. Your Chaotic Body and Chaotic Force are only at a rudimentary level, a level so rudimentary that it cannot even be considered as the Chaotic Body or Chaotic Force, but it should pose no threat when fighting a Saint Ruler of this world.” Ziying spoke in Jian Chen's mind.

Jian Chen immediately gave up the notion of using the Origin energy of the sword spirits to fight. The Chaotic Force within his body began to surge and bubble like the water in a river. A moment later, it had covered his entire body before Jian Chen rushed to

fight the patriarch.

He wasn't skilled in close combat fighting, but there wasn't a suitable weapon available that he could use. He couldn't even use the Origin energy. The circumstances were pushing him to use his fists.

The patriarch easily dodged Jian Chen's fist and moved behind him. He brandished his Saint Weapon and swung it with all his might to strike Jian Chen down.

Like lightning, the Saint Weapon arched into Jian Chen's back, but the attack only served to cut away his robes, revealing his unblemished skin. Shortly afterward, a small white line appeared where the blade had cut him. Blood could be seen dripping from the white line. With his white skin as contrast, the blood was very eye-catching.

The patriarch could only stare in mute shock at the wound on Jian Chen's back as his skin regenerated back to its original state as if it had been completely unharmed in the first place. The patriarch had used his entire strength to cut down Jian Chen, but the end result was a slight paper-cut-like wound that instantaneously healed itself.

"Im—impo—impossible!" The patriarch stuttered. He was completely dumbfounded by this result where only an insignificant wound had been inflicted.

"Mrrrr..." The tiger cub hiding on Jian Chen's shoulder had been

affected by the tremendous aura of the Saint Ruler, causing it to let out a small, frantic cry. It clung to Jian Chen's neck with both its paws. The cub seemed like it was about to collapse.

Feeling the slight burn that traveled up his spine, a malevolent glint appeared on Jian Chen's face. Moving the tiger cub from his shoulder to under his left arm, Jian Chen moved to punch the patriarch.

In fierce battle between Jian Chen and the patriarch, both combatants were using their entire strength. Each attack they threw out was capable of destroying the world around them. When their attack impacted against something, a tremendous sound resonated and great winds erupted. One after another, fissures appeared in the space around them. They sucked in the light of the world, revealing twilight in the holes. By now, the forest around them was a desolate place.

The battle in the sky continued for a very long time without stop. Soon enough, the manor of the Jiede clan had been utterly wiped out and leveled with only remnants of the place to be seen scattered about. The members of the clan had long since evacuated the place with the help of the ten Heaven Saint Masters. They were in a safe area several dozen kilometers away.

Jian Chen felt very sullen about the current progress of the battle. It had been dragging on for so long, but he was never able to make contact with even the robes of the patriarch. Each time he tried, the patriarch of the Jiede clan would escape.

On the inverse, he didn't even know just how many blows the

patriarch had landed on him. The Jiede patriarch's strikes had not been a threat to him because of the immensity of the Chaotic Force. The wounds Jian Chen sustained only took a small moment to heal without leaving a mark.

Although Jian Chen possessed the strength of a Saint Ruler, he was still a Heaven Saint Master that hadn't comprehended the profound mysteries of the world. Without that comprehension, he could only defend against a Saint Ruler. There was no way he could land a finishing blow or even manage to seriously injure one.

Unless the Saint Ruler gave up on using space to evade, Jian Chen had no other choice but to continue!

Hovering a thousand meters in the sky, the patriarch stared at Jian Chen, "Jian Chen, after this long fight, you and I are getting nowhere. Why don't we stop here; fighting any longer would only be a meaningless waste of time." After battling for so long, the patriarch knew he couldn't harm his opponent even though held the advantage over Jian Chen. Even if he went all out, Jian Chen would only experience scratches.

Jian Chen came to a stop in the sky as well. A slight tint of azure light wrapped his body as if he was gathering the energy of the world to make him fly. It was unlike the patriarch's ability to fly without using the elements at all.

"Patriarch Jiede, I am unable to harm you, but the future Jian Chen will definitely remember this grudge. He will visit once more and ensure that a disastrous payment will be taken from your clan." Jian Chen emotionlessly replied. He had been extremely

angry and sullen at the beginning of the fight, and had lost all his fear earlier. Jian Chen was now trying to intimidate the patriarch since he couldn't harm him

Chapter 629: Subjugation (Two)

The patriarch had an ugly look on his face while he listened to Jian Chen. He knew that Jian Chen wasn't joking, and with the talent Jian Chen possessed, he would only skyrocket in strength from here on out. If the patriarch waited any longer, it would only be a matter of time before Jian Chen would become a threat that he couldn't handle.

However, the patriarch had no way of dealing with Jian Chen even now.

As the patriarch floated in midair, the twinkle in his eyes flickered unsteadily as if he was arguing with himself internally. Several moments passed before the patriarch finally made up his mind. He grit his teeth to say, "Jian Chen, it's better to let sleeping dogs lie rather than wake them. You were the one who started this affair. We only wished to take back what you stole from us, and while my Jiede clan was a little excessive in some fronts, you've completely destroyed my Jiede clan's home. The home that we have stayed hidden in for thousands of years has been reduced to nothing. We can no longer live here; therefore, we should wipe away the debt. From today on, our two sides should give up this war."

"Your words are cheap!" Jian Chen snorted. "If you said this to me before, I would have considered those words seriously, but your Jiede clan is no longer an object of worry to me. Don't even try to delude yourself into thinking I won't chase you down!"

A dark light crossed over the patriarch's face as he said in a low

voice, “Jian Chen, I cannot do a thing to you, but you cannot do a thing to me either. If you won’t consider your own well-being, why not consider the well-being of those by your side? The Jiede clan may be a hermit clan that rarely meets with the outside world, but we still have many methods of finding out where you live and who is closest to you.”

“You dare!” Jian Chen immediately spat out with a terrifying glare. His eyes were like two sharp swords as he stared at the patriarch in fury, “If you dare, then I’ll kill off all your clansmen.” A furious killing intent flooded the air from Jian Chen’s body as he sent out his presence to find out where the members of the Jiede clan were hiding. Since he now had strength equal in might to a Saint Ruler, a Heaven Saint Master was like an ant to him.

Jian Chen’s reaction startled the patriarch. He consequently scolded himself for his folly. He was filled with regret now. If only he had known that such a statement would only infuriate Jian Chen, he would not have said it to begin with. If Jian Chen were to strike his clansmen, then the patriarch himself would have no way of stopping him. The Chaotic Force of Jian Chen was far too tyrannical, and even he was afraid of meeting it face-to-face.

“Stay your hand! There is still room for negotiations!” The patriarch cried out. Moving with the powers of space, the patriarch moved to stop Jian Chen from advancing ahead.

Jian Chen eyes were filled with anger as he swung his Chaotic Force infused right hand at the patriarch, who was blocking the path in front of him.

However, the patriarch dodged Jian Chen's hand with ease. Flickering to just another hundred meters away from him, the patriarch shot a beam of sword Qi at Jian Chen in an attempt to hinder his forward progress.

Jian Chen completely ignored the fact that he could dodge. He struck at the beam with his fist.

“Boom!” When the fist met the sword Qi, a loud explosion could be heard as a gale of leftover energy swept about and distorting the space of the world.

Jian Chen continued forward with only a small injury on his right hand. Some blood could be seen trickling from it, but it healed up within a few seconds as if nothing had happened.

“Jian Chen, as long as you let my Jiede clan go, I, Jiede Tai, will lend my aid to you for any three tasks!” The patriarch swore. As far as he was concerned, the clan was far more important than anything else. As long as the clan survived, the patriarch would not feel bad about his actions.

Upon hearing this, the killing intent Jian Chen was leaking began to die down a bit as he stared at the patriarch with a thoughtful look. “No, if you really wish me to cease my pursuit of killing your clan, there is only one method.”

“What method!?” The patriarch asked.

“Submit to me!” Jian Chen smiled. If the patriarch really was willing to submit to him, then he would have no need to bother with this situation.

“Don’t even think about it!” The patriarch immediately lost all color in his face as anger flooded forth. He was a Saint Ruler. An entity that stood on top of almost everyone else. How could he possibly submit to someone of the younger generation?

A frosty look appeared on Jian Chen’s face, “If that’s how it is, our negotiations are finished.”

“Jian Chen, let us settle our matters a different way then.” The patriarch tried his best to quell his anger. Pretending to be the solemn one, the patriarch was currently trying his best to ensure that his clan didn’t die. He was reluctant to be the angry one of the two.

Shaking his head without hesitation, Jian Chen answered, “There is only this method. Aside from that, nothing else can be considered.” He paused for a moment. “Submitting to me may be a little off putting to someone like you, but it isn’t too embarrassing either. I was able to reach this realm of strength at such a young age. If I am given even more time, I’ll definitely step into the Saint King realm and even the legendary Saint Emperor realm.”

At the mention of Saint Emperor, the patriarch’s body violently trembled. He looked at Jian Chen in disbelief. However, when he considered just how young Jian Chen was and how strong he was, the patriarch began to have second thoughts.

The amount of people that reached the legendary zenith that was the Saint Emperor realm could be counted on one hand. It was not as if no one did, but the most important fact was that of all the people that had done so, their potential had not been as outstanding as Jian Chen's. It was extremely likely that Jian Chen would one day become a Saint Emperor.

At this thought, the tension in the patriarch's heart began to dissipate.

Jian Chen saw through the thoughts that the patriarch was thinking, and moved to capitalize on the moment. "Looking at the long term benefits, submitting to me would not be a bad plan. The benefits outweigh the detriments and will help elevate your clan's status. From a hermit clan, you may very well become a clan that will survive from antiquity to the future. When I become a Saint Emperor, you may very well have a good chance of becoming a Saint King with my assistance."

The heart of the patriarch skipped a beat at those words, but with a level mind, he asked, "Just what proof do you have that you are sure you will become a high and mighty Saint Emperor?"

"Because I am only twenty-three years old!" Jian Chen laughed.

Chapter 630: The Transformation Of Little Fatty (One)

“What!? You’re only twenty-three!?” The patriarch exclaimed. While he knew that Jian Chen was young, he didn’t think that Jian Chen would be that young.

A Saint Ruler by the age of twenty-three was an unprecedented situation for the history of the continent. Before Jian Chen, not a single person had become a Saint Ruler by that age. Talent like this was like a beacon of light to all else; he was a man who stood beyond all else with no equal even in the future.

The patriarch’s mind furiously raced as he tried to think. When he remembered how Jian Chen had been able to fight him and the deceased patriarch Shi without fear of receiving punishment, he immediately let out a startled cry, “Are you perhaps the reincarnation of the continent’s strongest, Mo Tianyun?” As far as the patriarch knew, only Mo Tianyun, the strongest person throughout the history of the continent, possessed talent as terrifying as Jian Chen’s. Even though concise history had only been formulated after his existence.

Now it was Jian Chen’s turn to look astonished. He had no idea that the patriarch would actually make the assumption that he was the reincarnation of the continent’s strongest person, Mo Tianyun, after finding out his true age.

“So have you considered it? Submit to me, work for me, and I shall wipe away the debt of the Jiede clan. The potential benefits your clan may receive in the future are unlimited. If this isn’t

ideal, there is only one other way to continue this discussion.” Jian Chen evaded the question with a smile.

Still unsure, the patriarch continued to float in the air with a conflicted expression on his face. He was clearly trying to make a decision. He knew that he would be degraded to the position of that of a slave if he submitted to Jian Chen. No longer would he be able to move as he pleased.

A high and mighty Saint Ruler of the previous generation working like an ox while the next generation worked as the rider. Such a decision was unbelievably difficult to make no matter how resplendent the next generation’s genius was.

For a good while, the patriarch hesitated. In the end, he decided he had no other choice but to compromise with Jian Chen for the sake of his clan’s survival. It was with a grieved expression that he said, “Jian Chen, you win. My Jiede clan will formally submit to you.” Even as he spoke, the patriarch looked as if he had aged years and years in an instant, like his life was being sucked out of him.

A victorious smile appeared on Jian Chen’s face as he rejoiced within his heart. He knew that from today on, he would have a Saint Ruler at his beck and call. Not only was that plentiful source of strength, it also served as a deterrence.

“You swear on your blood?” Jian Chen smiled.

The patriarch bit his lips hard enough to draw blood and spat it out. Quickly, he drew a mysterious but grotesque pattern with his

blood in the air before it flew to Jian Chen.

This blood oath was something that the patriarch had created using the three energies of his body and life. The owner of the blood oath was equivalent to the owner of his very life. Now that he had given the blood oath to Jian Chen, it also meant that his life was in Jian Chen's hands.

"I hope that you will be a man of your words and won't renege on it." The patriarch grimly spoke.

Taking the floating blood seal in front of him, Jian Chen placed it in between his eyebrows. He allowed it to disappear into his head and into his mindspace.

The sword spirits slowly surrounded the blood seal, that the patriarch created, in his mindspace. From how they surrounded it, it seemed as if the sword spirits were treating the blood oath as if it were a prisoner.

"Master, don't worry about this!" Jian Chen heard Ziying say to him.

Sighing in relief, Jian Chen watched the blood oath disappear into the sea of Chaotic Force. His mindspace was a dangerous place to allow things in. If he wasn't careful, the patriarch's blood oath could do something to him.

After he accepted the blood oath, Jian Chen felt as if there was

some sort of subtle connection between him and the patriarch. It allowed him to sense which direction the patriarch was and where the patriarch was in the general area. Jian Chen was also able feel that if he destroyed the blood oath, the patriarch of the Jiede clan would die on the spot.

Knowing that he had the capability of controlling the life of a Saint Ruler filled with joy. This was undoubtedly a great windfall.

“Ah, since we are family now, how might I call you?” Jian Chen smiled at the patriarch. The earlier killing intent he had been releasing was nowhere to be seen.

“Jiede Tai!” The patriarch emotionlessly stated.

Unperturbed by the patriarch’s attitude, Jian Chen continued to smile, “Then I’ll be calling you that from now on. You may leave now to handle your clan. Meet me in Mercenary City half a month from now and we’ll leave together.”

Jiede Tai nodded his head without a word, but his heart was undoubtedly feeling very gloomy.

Jian Chen gave Jiede Tai several tasks to do. He then left the area after changing his clothes. Thirty kilometers away he found the hiding Wang Yufeng, who was behind a giant stone. Jian Chen then flew away with him in tow.

Chapter 631: The Transformation Of Little Fatty (Two)

The sky above was sunny. There was not a single cloud in sight for kilometers around. A slight breeze could be felt as golden rays of light brightly sprinkled down onto the equally golden ground below. The entire continent basked in the golden rays of sun as it warmed up.

Jian Chen flew across the azure sky with Wang Yufeng at sound-breaking speeds. They were traveling fast enough that the scenery below was a blur.

“Jian Chen, you really are amazing to kill even a Saint Ruler! I wasn’t able to see the fight, but the sounds alone were enough to terrify me! The earth and the heavens themselves felt as if they were threatening to fall to pieces, and even the mountains had been utterly destroyed! I had almost thought that you were going to destroy the world.” Wang Yufeng spoke passionately without pause. “A Saint Ruler is really strong after all, they’re not someone any person can easily fight. Even if I came across a Saint Ruler, I’d be like a piece of paper to be blown away! A battle between Saint Rulers is something that is barely seen even once every hundred years.”

Laughing, Jian Chen replied, “You praise me too much. How could a Saint Ruler be that easy to kill? The patriarch and I fought an intense battle, but we were evenly matched. Neither one of us could harm the other, so he was unable to be killed by me.”

“That couldn’t be helped, Jian Chen. You don’t look all that

much younger than me, but you have already become a Saint Ruler! Your potential is definitely limitless in the future. I, Wang Yufeng really think that it is luck that I will be able to travel with you. I'll definitely be able experience my own ups and downs too." Wang Yufeng happily smiled. To be able to follow a Saint Ruler was an undeniably joyful event to be excited for.

Suddenly, Wang Yufeng thought of something and looked to Jian Chen in panic, "Jian Chen, you can't throw me away, okay? I may just be a Second Cycle Earth Saint Master, but my potential isn't weak by any means either. I'm thirty-five years old this year, but I'm still considered a genius of the continent! Becoming a Heaven Saint Master is just a matter of time! Becoming a Saint Ruler wouldn't be out of the question either!"

"If you are willing to join my mercenary group, I will of course never toss you away, but you must understand, following me is not going to always be a good thing. Although I am strong, the opponents I have are just as strong. They are not to be trifled with." Jian Chen responded.

"Haha, I don't care about that. The events of the future are unknown to me, but I, Wang Yufeng, still wish to travel with you." Wang Yufeng laughed in ardent support of following Jian Chen.

Afterward, Jian Chen brought Wang Yufeng to Mercenary City and left him there to wait. After exchanging a few words with Little Spirit, he left for Longevity Valley once again.

At the same time as he was leaving Mercenary City, a stalwart middle-aged man currently sat in a personal room in a First Class

City in some other kingdom.

“Respectful sir, we’ve investigated the matter you wished for.” Within the room, another elderly man smiled professionally at him.

“Say it! If your information is reliable, there will be a bountiful reward.” The man spoke with bright eyes and a cold voice.

As soon as he heard the words ‘bountiful reward,’ the other man’s face grew serious. The wrinkles on his face tightened as he said, “Respectful sir, our Labyrinthine sect has made our investigations and have made a preliminary report on the actions of Jian Chen. When he was in Mercenary City, the uproar he caused there made its way to the outskirts of the city. About a month later, he arrived at a First Class city in the Tianzhu Kingdom and lay waste to a strong clan. Even the city itself was harmed, it’s assumed that a Heaven Tier Battle Skill was used...”

The middle-aged man impatiently waved his hand, “Spare me the useless facts and get to the point. I wish to know where he is.”

“Yes, right away!” The elder replied without delay. Looking as if he was thinking, he said, “Since Jian Chen is a Heaven Saint Master, he can fly off to places that even we cannot track with ease. We only know that two days ago, he arrived back at Mercenary City with another person and then left headed to the Cross Mountains it seems.”

“The Cross Mountains!” The man’s eyes lit up as he spoke, “Why

is he going there?”

“Respectful sir, Jian Chen’s destination might be the Cross Mountains, but we don’t dare guarantee that he is going there. Whether he might alter or change his destination, we don’t know, but we can guarantee that if we come across news of Jian Chen’s destination, we will make sure to inform you with most haste.” The elder finished his report.

The man nodded his head and dropped a hefty bag of coins onto the table in front of him. “This is your reward. Remember, you must follow Jian Chen and where he goes. If he heads far away from Mercenary City, tell me at once.”

“Yes yes!” The elder quickly responded as he took the bag of coins. Opening the bag up, he allowed himself to look at the glittering coins inside with a transfixed expression.

.....

Jian Chen traveled back to Longevity Valley by himself. Now that he was done with most of his affairs, he could spend the rest of his time waiting in Longevity Valley for little fatty to return. He could also make use of this time to familiarize himself with the Chaotic Force he had recently gained.

With patriarch Shi dead, the Shi family wouldn’t dare send any more Heaven Saint Masters after Jian Chen. He wouldn’t even need fear them. Since he was a Saint Ruler in strength, his foresight had greatly expanded. No longer did he fear the entirety

of the Shi family, but neither did he feel like going on a trip to destroy the family. He was instead more focused on the expansion and training of the Flame Mercenaries.

After he returned to Longevity Valley, Jian Chen began to converse with the villagers once more. Then, he went with uncle Xiu Mi to rest for some time.

That night, Jian Chen ate dinner with Xiu Mi and his wife before shutting himself in his own room. From there, Jian Chen sat as still as a stone statue on and began to converse with the sword spirits to learn more about the Chaotic Force.

“Master, you are truly using the Chaotic Force now. It’s power and might are much stronger than before. When master uses the Chaotic Force, master cannot use it to attack at random. Not only does this waste the Chaotic Force, it weakens the power.” Ziying explained to him.

“Does that mean I must use my fists when I fight in the future?” Jian Chen asked with some vexation.

“Yes, master. The Chaotic Force is quite tyrannical. The average weapon wouldn’t be able to withstand the Chaotic Force if it ran through it. Without the Azulet swords being forged, you must fight your enemies with your bare hands.” Ziying answered.

“Master, you shouldn’t be so worried. You just have to get enough materials to forge the Azulet swords. Yin and Yang were born from chaos, and Ziying and Qingsuo were evolved from this

Yin and Yang. Ziying and Qingsuo are extremely strong. As long as master succeeds in forging the Azulet swords, the swords will become extremely strong when combined with the Chaotic Force. From that moment on, no one in the world will be able to stop master.” Qingsuo added.

Qingsuo’s words caused Jian Chen’s mind to race furiously with delightful thoughts. He was extremely impatient to forge the Azulet swords, but the task of forging them left him with a feeling of annoyance. The materials to forge the swords were far too difficult to find. Who knew just how long it would take before he would be able to gather enough materials to make the swords?

“Master, a Ruler Armament would be able to sustain the power of Chaotic Force. Why not find a suitable Ruler Armament to use in the meantime?” Ziying suggested.

“Yes, master. A Ruler Armament should be strong enough to withstand the Chaotic Force. Until the Azulet swords are made, master can use a Ruler Armament as a replacement. I know that only a Saint Ruler at the Ninth Heavenly Layer is capable of leaving behind a Ruler Armament, but if that’s the case, then a Saint King at the Ninth Heavenly Layer shouldn’t be too different. Master, you should find the weapon that a Saint King has left behind. Those would definitely be better than a Ruler Armament a Saint Ruler made.” Ziying spoke.

“Ninth Heavenly Layer Saint King!” Jian Chen could hardly contain his pained smile. A Ruler Armament was already a treasure that was nearly impossible to obtain, let alone items a Saint King at the Ninth Heavenly Layer has left behind. A godly weapon like that

was most likely impossible to find, but the sword spirits' suggestions hadn't been too outlandish. Whether or not he could one was up to luck.

“Ziying, Qingsuo, a Saint Ruler can harness the power of space by understanding the profound mysteries of the world. Even if I'm able to use the Chaotic Force, I'm unable to harm them. Would you two have any ideas on how I can change that?”

Chapter 632: The Transformation Of Little Fatty (Three)

“Master, the Chaotic Force can destroy the world if there’s enough. Your proficiency with the Chaotic Force can be considered subpar, but even now it’s not something that a Saint Ruler could survive against. Unless master gets to a higher level of proficiency with the Chaotic Force or perhaps forges the Azulet swords, dealing with a Saint Ruler that can use the powers of space will be impossible.” Ziyang spoke.

Jian Chen’s eyebrows furrowed together, “In other words, I have no ways of dealing with a Saint Ruler that can use the power of space.”

“That may not be the case. Master, you’ve forgotten that movement skill you have, the Illusionary Flash. That movement skill embodies the laws of space. If master were to comprehend it, then you will be able to understand the laws of space to some degree. Once that happens, even a Saint Ruler can be dealt with.” Qingsuo explained.

“Wouldn’t that mean to say that I’ll breakthrough to become a Saint Ruler?” Jian Chen suggested. Although he was a Saint Ruler in strength, he was not one in status or actual power. The powers a Saint Ruler wielded were not things he could do.

This time, Ziyang and Qingsuo hesitated to answer for a moment. It was finally Qingsuo who said, “Master, our analysis of a Saint Ruler suggests that their understanding of the laws of space is far more comprehensive. The Illusionary Flash focuses purely on

speed and disregards the other aspects of space. Saint Rulers are using what is perhaps the power of the world itself, and that barrier they often use is likely a construct of the world's power given a form.”

“Qingsuo is correct. Master, according to what we know of the Illusionary Flash, it should be able to elevate your speed based on the principles of the laws of space and nothing else, but even that will be enough to deal with a Saint Ruler.” Ziying spoke.

Jian Chen pondered what they said for a few minutes before finally saying, “It seems that I just have to try and comprehend the Illusionary Flash.” With a momentary pause, Jian Chen continued, “Ziying, Qingsuo, I’ve already reached the Minor Achievement realm with the Chaotic Body. How much further away is the Major Achievement realm? If I reach that realm, would I be comparable in strength to a Saint Emperor? Which one of the two would be stronger?”

Ziying and Qingsuo both let out a peal of laughter in response to Jian Chen, “Master, you belittle the Chaotic Body far too much. You are only at the entrance of the Chaotic Body, and the path ahead of master is a long one. There is no doubt that the Major Achievement realm would be vastly superior to a Saint Emperor.”

“Master, the realms to the Chaotic Body aren’t that clearly divided. There are far too few people that cultivate the Chaotic Body. They could possibly be counted on ten fingers of two hands. Furthermore, there has been no one that has ever reached the Major Achievement, but for the sake of fully explaining the Chaotic Body to master, we shall divide it up into eighteen

different parts. As of now, master, you are only at the first layer.” Ziying explained.

Jian Chen was surprised to hear that. The very first layer of the Chaotic Body was enough to match a Saint Ruler. That would mean that once he reached the highest level of the Chaotic Body, his strength would be at an unbelievably frightening level. This thought filled Jian Chen with no small amount of joy.

Afterward, Ziying and Qingsuo both began to explain many of the more important points of the Chaotic Body to Jian Chen. No longer would Jian Chen be as ignorant of the Chaotic Body as he been, only knowing that the Chaotic Body was strong and nothing else.

Jian Chen spent the following days in Longevity Valley. During the day, he would go to the forest and practice the Illusionary Flash. At night, he would stay within his room and try to comprehend the secrets of the Illusionary Flash. He hoped that he would one day make a breakthrough and become proficient enough to fight a Saint Ruler.

The tiger cub hadn't stopped either. Day after day, it would eat and digest the heavenly resources that Jian Chen had been given from the grand elder of Mercenary City to increase its strength. Afterward, it would lay on the bed and sleep off the food.

In the blink of an eye, Jian Chen had stayed in Longevity Valley for an entire month. During this one month, he had made a good deal of progress in his studies of the Illusionary Flash. Although he wasn't at a level of mastery where he could deal with a Saint Ruler,

he had still reached a far greater level of mastery.

Over the span of this one month, the tiger cub had made a breakthrough to become a Class 5 Magical Beast with the help of the heavenly resources.

The elevation in its power also caused the tiger cub's outer appearance to undergo a transformation as well. It could still freely control the size of its body, and it remained its previous small size with its adorable cat-like appearance. Its pure eyes were still filled with a bright light that seemed to have a life of their own.

In addition, the wings on its back had grown even more, making the tiger look even softer than before. A touch of the cub felt warm and pleasant.

Hidden within the forests behind Longevity Valley, a white blur traveled at great speeds through. The speed of this figure was so great that it seemed as if its body was just a mirror image that had been blended with one another, making it hard to discern the outline of the body.

It was almost as if this person was one with the world, body moving without generating any wind, traveling swiftly and silently — like a ghost.

At that moment, the blurry mirror images suddenly came to a stop. As soon as the figure came to a stop, a young twenty-something-year-old man wearing coarse clothes could be seen. It

was Jian Chen.

With his eyebrows perked, Jian Chen turned his hand to reveal an object. In it was a single piece of white jade that had silently cracked in two.

When Jian Chen saw that the jade had split into two white halves, his face grew serious. Turning his hand, he ground up the remaining pieces of jade into dust, and let them fly into the air. With the dust gone, Jian Chen turned around and disappeared from the forest with such speed that it was hard to discern where he was headed.

After returning to Longevity Valley, he went back to the room where the tiger cub was sleeping. After leaving the house, he headed straight to the field where uncle Xiu Mi was working.

As soon as he took several steps toward the field, the expression on Jian Chen's face suddenly changed. He hurriedly turned his head to the entrance of the valley. He could see a white blur traveling toward him from far away. Despite the distance, Jian Chen's eyes could clearly make out the blur. It was the distinct figure of a young man and elderly man traveling through the air.

“Hey! Jian Chen, I'm back! You're here in the valley too. That's great!” A loud voice called out from the air with great excitement. His voice was so loud that the entire valley heard it, giving everyone an idea of just who had returned.

“That's Little Fatty, he's back!” A middle-aged farmer cried out before tossing down his hoe to run with the others toward the village entrance.

“That’s Little Fatty’s voice. The village elder has to be back too!” From the fields, another middle-aged woman paused her actions to look into the air. When she saw two figures slowly descend from the sky overhead, a slightly reverent but admiring expression appeared on her face.

The figures in the sky slowly came to a stop on the ground in front of Jian Chen. Of the two, one was elder Xiu and the other was a young stalwart youth right next to him. The youth was filled with a boastful aura, but Jian Chen could barely make out the hint of a bloody scent on him. This was the appearance of a young man who had experienced a path of massacre, a trial by fire, and a near-death experience.

Staring at the young man in confusion, Jian Chen could hardly believe his eyes. The young person in front of him was really the Little Fatty he knew from before. The difference between him now and before was simply far too astonishing. It was practically impossible to recognize it was the same person.

Chapter 633: Is That Really You?

“You’re... you’re really Little Fatty.” Stunned at the sight of the person in front of him, Jian Chen couldn’t believe his eyes that this well-built person was the very same person he knew before.

“Are you... are you really Little Fatty?” Even Xiu Mi was having second thoughts. With his hoe hefted on his shoulder, Xiu Mi stood there in stunned disbelief. Was this really his own son?

The Little Fatty of today was drastically different to the Little Fatty of before. Not only was his aura different, even his appearance and build had changed. Not a bit of fatty meat could be seen on him. He was extremely skinny compared to before. He wasn’t as straightforward looking anymore, he had gained a feeling of being a highly capable person.

“Father, how did you change Little Fatty so much?” Xiu Mi smiled to elder Xiu.

“Little Fatty, you’ve become so skinny! You must have suffered terribly outside.” Little Fatty’s mother wailed in despair before rushing out from the house to meet him.

“Wow... Little Fatty, you’ve changed so much I barely recognized you.”

“Are you really Little Fatty? You seem more like a stranger.”

.....

The people from the village who were barely older or younger than Little Fatty muttered to each other in disbelief. Not a single one of them could believe their eyes at his transformation.

Little Fatty scratched his head with slight embarrassment when he saw just how shocked everyone was. With a chuckle, he said, “Even I don’t know what happened, but I’ve changed a lot over the past few months. Please don’t worry everyone, I’m still the same ol’ Little Fatty from before.”

Looking to Jian Chen, he apologetically said, “Jian Chen, I’m really sorry. A year ago, grandpa took me to train so we had to delay our meeting. Sorry for keeping you waiting.”

Jian Chen smiled in return, “No worries. I’ve only just arrived myself. Little Fatty, congratulations on becoming an Earth Saint Master. You are now one of the stronger people of the continent.”

“Jian Chen, I’ve finally become an Earth Saint Master.” Little Fatty laughed. “Grandpa will finally let me travel the outside world with you. When can we set off?” Little Fatty ended impatiently.

Thinking about how to answer the question, he finally responded, “The sooner the better. I have something to do back home, so we need to hurry back.”

“Jian Chen, why not leave tomorrow? Little Fatty and his grandfather must have gone through a lot in their travels. Let them rest well for tonight.” Little Fatty’s mother reluctantly suggested.

“Ah, then let us go with aunty’s suggestion!” Jian Chen nodded.

Little Fatty’s sudden return delayed Jian Chen’s trip back home by one more day.

.....

The next morning, everyone in the village gathered to send off Jian Chen and Little Fatty. They both left the valley after one final farewell.

The villagers didn’t go beyond the village entrance. Instead, they watched the two leave from afar. Some of the villagers revealed envious looks.

“Ai!” The plain-robed elder Xiu heaved a heavy sigh to the sky. “I didn’t wish for Little Fatty to be entangled with the matters of the outside world. I wanted him to live a life of peace here, but Jian Chen’s sudden arrival brought him dreams of traveling. Whether this is a blessing or curse, I’m not sure.”

“Father, we should be approving of Little Fatty’s wish to travel the outside world. Little Fatty will become wiser with this trip. Remaining in the village will only stifle Little Fatty’s talent, and

only with this journey will Little Fatty's true potential will be drawn out. Perhaps Little Fatty will one day become strong enough to set down a basis of strength to replace even you, father." Xiu Mi spoke.

Elder Xiu shook his head, "No. I won't hand over my responsibilities to Little Fatty. This is only a cumbersome burden, and no matter how talented Little Fatty is, he is unsuited for this responsibility."

"Why, father? It can't be a matter of strength!" Xiu Mi protested.

Elder Xiu sighed with a bit of a pained groan, "Your mother died because of the Bloodsword sect. Before her passing, she made me swear to not interfere with the continent. So from then on, I sought a quiet place to hide away, like the rest of the hermit clans. A place to live out the rest of my life in peace."

"No matter how strong a person's cultivation becomes, they will still end up as skeletons. Nothing but a false name is left after that. Your mother was wise to say that an unordinary but peaceful life isn't a bad one. One shouldn't try to be so concerned about leaving a mark on the mortal world; instead, they should try to live a life without worry." Elder Xiu sighed.

"Father, how do you plan to deal with the Bloodsword sect then?" Xiu Mi asked.

Elder Xiu grew silent for a moment. "I can tell that Jian Chen isn't a bad choice. He's outstanding in almost every aspect, and his

potential is quite terrifying to say the least. If he's able to become a Heaven Saint Master at that young age, then I can say that he won't be inferior to me in the future."

.....

Flying over the mountains, Jian Chen carried Little Fatty through the sky, quickly bypassing the Cross Mountains. The tiger cub on Jian Chen's shoulder had already long since woken up. It glanced around with great bright eyes.

"Mrrrrr..." Suddenly, the cub let out an excited cry as it unfolded its wings. Leaping off of Jian Chen's shoulder, it disappeared into the verdant forests down below. Not even a moment later, it came flying back to Jian Chen's shoulder with a fruit in its mouth.

Jian Chen was rather startled by what the cub did, but he laughed in the end, "I had thought that your wings were just for decoration, but it seems that flight with them is possible, that's a first."

Little Fatty looked at the tiger cub on Jian Chen's shoulder. "Jian Chen, I can tell that this cub is very strong. Is it a Class 5 Magical Beast already?"

"Correct. It became a Class 5 Magical Beast cub several days ago. Little Fatty, I recall that you've never seen a high class Magical Beast before. How were you able to tell the cub's strength?" Jian Chen asked curiously.

Little Fatty laughed, “At one point grandpa took me to some strange place where I had to kill all sorts of magical beasts time after time. I’m familiar with a Class 5 Magical Beast now, so it’s only natural that I know how strong it is.”

At that moment, Jian Chen’s face grew grim and his body came to a sudden halt in the middle of the air. His face also darkened for some strange reason.

The reason for this strange occurrence was because his blood had suddenly started to bubble as if it was boiling water. This abnormality quickly spread throughout his body, causing his body temperature to increase.

“Jian Chen, what’s wrong?” Little Fatty was at a loss of words. He had no idea why Jian Chen was acting this way.

Jian Chen did not respond since even he didn’t know what was going on with his body. It was the first time he had experienced such a sensation.

“Could there be a problem with the Chaotic Body?” Jian Chen thought, but even as he finished that thought, the two sword spirits immediately answered him.

“Master, the blood within your body has the anti-venom factor from the Golden-Striped Silver Snake. This is a reaction caused by that anti-venom. Since the Golden-Striped Silver Snake is a rare being, the two sides definitely have an attraction to one another. There has to be one of those snakes nearby. Presumably a strong

one, Class 7 Magical Beast at a guess.” Ziyang spoke.

A change over came Jian Chen’s face, but he did not say a second word about it as he immediately left the area. A Golden-Striped Silver Snake was extremely strong. It was also hard to come by. He had Little Fatty with him, so Jian Chen didn’t wish for some sort of conflict to happen.

Quickly leaving the Cross Mountains, Jian Chen headed straight for Mercenary City without pause. After two days, they finally arrived.

As soon as he entered the city, Jian Chen headed straight to the inn where Wang Yufeng and patriarch Jiede were residing.

Exchanging several words with Wang Yufeng, he introduced everyone to one another. However, he did not divulge Jiede Tai’s identity and gave a careless introduction when it was his turn.

After the introductions were made, Wang Yufeng and Little Fatty became quick friends. Soon enough, they were laughing and chatting with one another as if they had always been friends.

Jian Chen took Jiede Tai to another room to talk. After giving several heavenly resources to the tiger cub to let it fall asleep, he said to Jiede Tai, “Come with me to the Cross Mountains.”

“What? the Cross Mountains!” Jiede Tai cried out loud with great fear. Refusing Jian Chen, he said, “Out of the question. That is a

forbidden zone to even the strongest of the continent. One couldn't go there unless one was a Saint King."

Knowing that Jiede Tai was afraid, Jian Chen explained, "Rest assured, we won't be going deep inside; it'll only be the outside perimeter. I know the dangers of the mountains, so we won't be going to our deaths."

Knowing that they wouldn't be going to the depths of the mountains, Jiede Tai sighed in relief, "As long as we don't go too deep in and don't cause too much trouble, that's fine. But what in the world are you going there for!?"

"There's no time to waste. Come with me for now. You'll understand when we get there." Jian Chen placed the sleeping cub on the bed and turned around to leave the room with Jiede Tai right behind him.

After leaving the room, Jian Chen mentioned to Wang Yufeng and Little Fatty that he and Jiede Tai would be leaving Mercenary City. After that, they rushed to the Cross Mountains.

Chapter 634: Meeting Another Golden-Striped Silver Snake

Two days later in the vast sky above the Cross Mountains, two figures could be seen streaking by at sound-breaking speed. They came to a stop at a nearby mountain peak.

“It should be near here.” As his robes flapped around due to the rapid winds, Jian Chen spoke in a serious voice while his eyes scanned the ground with rapt attention.

Jiede Tai was wearing a white robe as he floated right next to Jian Chen. An elegant aura pervaded his body as his bright spirited eyes looked all around. “Jian Chen, what are you planning on doing here, killing a strong magical beast?”

“There’s a rather strong Golden-Striped Silver Snake nearby, I wish to see if we can make it submit.” Jian Chen softly replied.

At the mention of a Golden-Striped Silver Snake, Jiede Tai’s expression froze with shock, “A Golden-Striped Silver Snake is considered a part of the royal family of snakes. They’re a rare breed even on the continent, and even in the historical past, they were said to be extremely strong in battle. Their venom is said to be extremely toxic — perhaps one of the top three most venomous. Dealing with one is no simple task, let alone trying to make it submit. Unless you find one in its childhood, it’ll be unwilling to submit to you thanks to its sentient nature.”

Jian Chen was more than aware of the logic that Jiede Tai spoke,

but he nodded his head after some thought anyways, “A Golden-Striped Silver Snake is far too rare on the continent. Whether we’ll be able to make one submit is up in the air still. Jiede Tai, you stay here and keep guard. I’ll find its nest and call out to you if I require help.”

“Don’t be reckless. The venom of a Golden-Striped Silver Snake is extremely potent. Not a single antidote in this world would be able to cure it. You might have a strong body, but you haven’t even grasped the powers of space. If you met a Class 6 Magical Beast, there’s no way you’ll be able to deal with the venom it spits out. If that venom hits you, that’ll be trouble.” Jiede Tai spoke in a grim manner.

Although he was extremely displeased with becoming a lackey for Jian Chen, Jiede Tai was a farsighted person. He knew that Jian Chen’s talent was absolutely terrifying, and if he continued to follow him, there would perhaps be exceptional rewards for him in the end. It was unclear if Jian Chen would breakthrough to become a Saint King as he said before, but if he did, then Jiede Tai would have managed to secure a strong patron for his clan.

“It wouldn’t hurt to try. I’ve a way to protect myself from its venom after all.” Jian Chen carelessly replied. Since he had managed to form the Thousand Immunity long ago, his Chaotic Body naturally benefited from its strong anti-venom property.

Jian Chen left Jiede Tai to stand guard while he went off by himself to look for the lair of the Golden-Striped Silver Snake.

Jian Chen could also use his presence and bubbling sensation of

his blood to search the surrounding ten kilometers for the snake. Soon enough, he finally ended up at a mountain ridge ten kilometers away. With his presence surrounding the entire area, Jian Chen found a hidden hole. His presence infiltrated the depths of the cave, but he didn't discover any signs of the snake inside.

“It's without a doubt worthy of being a Class 7 Magical Beast.” Jian Chen muttered. His figure dropped down from the sky to reach the cave. He slammed the stone hiding the hole into pieces before striding in.

The depths of the cave were extensive with plenty of curving passageways. The interior was also very dark, one wouldn't even be able to see their own hands in front of their faces. However, it bore no problems to Jian Chen who could see clearly in the cave as if it were day.

Following the passageway for a hundred meters, Jian Chen finally arrived in a thousand meter wide cave. The walls of the cave were scattered with fist-sized night pearls. They lit the cave with a soft white light, giving it the feeling of night time.

At the center of the cave was a two-meter-tall stone altar, and wrapped around that altar was a two meter long snake. A strand of gold and silver streaked across its finger-width back, and its thumb-sized snake head was raised high into the air, cautiously staring at the unexpected guest.

Jian Chen smiled at the gold snake. He knew that despite its small size, it was not to be underestimated. Claspings his hands together in greeting, he said, “This one is Jian Chen. I came here

today to visit. If I offended you with my visit, I hope you won't take offense!"

"Human, you are a brave one to dare intrude on my home. Do you wish to die?" The golden snake lifted its mouth open just slightly to hiss out several words in the human tongue. Its voice echoed around the cave, but the sharp tone made it difficult for Jian Chen to determine if it was male or female.

Almost as if he was completely unfazed by the snake's threat, Jian Chen continued to smile. "This one came here to visit your distinguished self for a specific reason. I have an item that I wish to offer you. An item I'm sure would provide no small amount of help to you!"

The snake's eyes flickered slightly as it said, "I can sense the smell of my kin on your body. You've used the blood of my kin to create the Thousand Immunity."

"Correct! I came across a young Golden-Striped Silver Snake once before in the Magical Beast Mountain Range. After a great battle, I was able to obtain its body and use its lifeblood to forge the Thousand Immunity. Its body has been left in my possession ever since, left in perfect condition and without use." Jian Chen took out the clean carcass of the snake from his Space Ring. Since there was no air in Space Rings, items could be stored indefinitely in them. Thus, Jian Chen had been able to keep the corpse in his ring without it ever decaying, keeping it as fresh as the day he killed it.

As soon as the Golden-Striped Silver Snake saw the carcass of its own kin in Jian Chen's hand, its eyes immediately revealed a

bright gleam. There was a flash of gold as its body sprung toward Jian Chen's. It snapped its jaws to try and take away the carcass.

Smiling, Jian Chen used the Illusionary Flash to travel several meters away to dodge the surprise attack of the snake. With a shake of his hand, the carcass of the dead snake was returned to his Space Ring.

“Hiss!” The snake's tongue flicked from its mouth as its entire body disappeared once more in a flash of gold. It shot toward Jian Chen again. Its mouth opened wide to show off its sharp teeth as if to tear away Jian Chen's throat.

Allowing the Chaotic Force to cover his body with a single thought, Jian Chen made use of the defensive might of the Chaotic Body to form a fist with his hand. He then punched the snake head-on.

“Bang!” There a muffled sound appeared when the fist connected with the snake. The entire cave shook unsteadily from the power, but Jian Chen's fist remained unharmed. The snake, on the other hand, was sent flying away. It smashed against the wall behind it, leaving behind a giant crater.

After this single exchange, the Golden-Striped Silver Snake realized that Jian Chen would not be as easy to deal with as it initially thought. Floating into the air without a problem, the snake glared at Jian Chen with venomous eyes, “You might not be weak, but you are still no match for me. Hand over the body of my kin to me, or face death!”

Jian Chen tried to shake the numb feeling in his right arm. He was slightly shocked at the defensive might the snake boasted. “This one came here specifically to visit your distinguished self with a gift, but there’s no such thing as a free meal. I cannot give the item to you so freely.”

“Then what is it that you wish to take from me?” The snake questioned.

“I want you to follow me for ten years. I’ll give you the item after that period of time.” Jian Chen answered.

A malevolent glare entered the snake’s eyes as killing intent began to leak from its body. With a furious laugh, it hissed, “Human, you are far too naive. Do you really think the high and mighty Nubis would follow you for ten years? Even a Saint King has no right to ask, let alone you.”

Jian Chen laughed in return, “I presume you know, far more than I do, that the carcass of your own kin is extremely important to you. A Golden-Striped Silver Snake is a beast of antiquity. Even its body is filled with strange oddities. What separates one from any other regular magical beast is that it can devour its own kin to evolve. Not only does your strength increase, even your fighting strength is elevated. It’s unfortunate that Golden-Striped Silver Snakes are extremely rare on the continent. Meeting one is already hard enough. I’d say this puts an end to your hopes of devouring another one of your kin to increase your strength. So, the carcass that I hold should be an unbelievable chance for you. Although it was a Class 3 Magical Beast when I killed it, it should still be a

benefit to you. I will give it to you in exchange for ten years of your time. You have nothing to lose and everything to gain.”

“Human, you speak correctly. Devouring my own kin allows us to grow due to the hidden essence that only we Golden-Striped Silver Snakes can process. As long as that is absorbed, this Origin essence grants us a great boon. To absorb enough of that Origin essence is to allow us to evolve into a divine beast from legends. What you might not know, human, is that I can easily take the skin from your dead corpse once I kill you!” As it finished speaking, the snake’s body began to go through a series of permutations in the air. In a flash, it became a young man with a rather skinny build. He wore a golden robe, and possessed golden irises. His hair was also long and golden, giving him the look of an handsome male. From his appearance, the male looked no older than Jian Chen.

“Do you really think you can kill me?” Jian Chen replied as he stood his ground.

Chapter 635: The Great Nubis

Jian Chen's words were clearly meant to provoke the Golden-Striped Silver Snake, a snake that held a mighty position as royalty of all snakes. The golden eyes of the snake in human form gleamed scarlet for a single second as killing intent exploded from its body. Coldly, the man said, "Human, if you have such confidence in yourself, allow the great Nubis to see just how strong you are." And with those words, a golden flash was seen as the man flew forward. Following his charge was a bright silver light as if a goddess had illuminated the area with a flowery glow. With the speed of lightning, the male shot toward Jian Chen.

Before Jian Chen could dodge, Jian Chen was covered with strands of silver that began to weave around his body. In the blink of an eye, he was completely cocooned in the silver strands as if he were a silkworm.

As soon the strands wrapped themselves around Jian Chen, they began to tighten around his body. Each strand was like a silvery steel as it covered every inch of Jian Chen's body. They were all as sharp as the edge of a blade. With Jian Chen nestled inside, he felt countless of blades cutting deep into his body, and if not for his Chaotic Body and its defenses, he would have been reduced to minced meat long ago.

The Chaotic Force circulated around Jian Chen's body, protecting every inch of him. He let out a sudden grunt and shook his body, causing the silver strands to be shaken off his body and away into the air. Looking to the Golden-Striped Silver Snake, Jian Chen said, "It seems that the famed Golden-Striped Silver Snake only amounts to this much. Show your full strength or suffer

defeat at my hands.” Jian Chen used the Illusionary Flash to immediately charge at the youth with an outstretched fist.

“The strength of your body is astonishing to even me. Are you truly a human?” The male spoke with surprise. His eyes were leveled calmly at the fist coming at him. He received it with a powerful fist of his own.

“Boom!”

When the two fists clashed, a powerful explosion rocked the cave as a wave of energy burst away from the impact zone. The entire cave shook to its foundations as stones fell one by one from the ceiling. In every corner of the cave, several fractures could be seen starting to spread.

The golden-robed youth was sent flying from the punch before impacting against the cave wall behind him. Another crater was formed upon impact and the youth’s body sank deep into the wall.

Despite the young man being a transformed state of the Golden-Striped Silver Snake, it still boasted a powerful defense and equally powerful strength. Even that wasn’t enough to contend with the strength of the Chaotic Body that Jian Chen used.

As the young golden-robed man walked out of the crater, it looked a little worse for wear. However, there were no inherent injuries to his body, and his face was several shades more serious. He no longer showed that previous disdain for Jian Chen. Instead, he stared at his slightly shaking right arm in shock.

This time, it had been the snake that had eaten up a loss.

“No wonder you are known as a beast of antiquity. Your body is so strong that my fist didn’t break your arm.” Jian Chen laughed. He was rather surprised to experience the strength of a Class 7 Magical Beast. Compared to a Saint Ruler, the contrast in strength was far too much.

“Your flesh is enough to stop even mine. But how? Humans shouldn’t possess strength like that. Are you a half-breed? Or a wargod from the ancient Bai clans?” The snake questioned, no longer was there as much confidence in his voice.

“What wargod from the ancient Bai clans? I have no idea what you’re talking about. I am a genuine human.” Jian Chen laughed.

“Impossible! How could a human possess a body like that? It’s stronger than even the flesh of a magical beast.” The snake snapped unconfidently.

Quirking his lips, Jian Chen replied, “How about it then? Why don’t you think over my previous suggestion. Follow me for ten years and I’ll give you the carcass of your kin. That’s the only way you’ll be getting it since you have no way of killing me.”

The snake’s face grew darker and darker the more it listened to Jian Chen, “Wishing for the great Nubis to follow you for ten years is no easy task. The battle has only started; even if your body is strong, I still have plenty ways of harming or disposing of you.”

“Is that right? Then please allow this one to experience your guidance.” Jian Chen laughed. Using the Illusionary Flash to get close to the snake, Jian Chen brought forth a tremendous amount of Chaotic Force into his fist and slammed it onto the male’s chest. Following the wake of his fist was a series of ripples in space itself, showing just how strong the punch was.

After experiencing a loss the last exchange, the snake knew just how troublesome Jian Chen’s fist was. He no longer wished to take it head-on. Using the powers of space to travel behind Jian Chen, a flash of golden scales could be seen covering the male’s right fist. Forming a claw with it, the snake flashed forward to grab Jian Chen’s back.

“Pft!” As soon as the sharp claws of the male’s hand made contact with Jian Chen’s Chaotic Body, they were stopped. The tips were unable to penetrate Jian Chen’s skin. It was almost like there was some sort of energy blocking them, causing the male to be unable to move any further.

A brilliant gleam entered Jian Chen’s eyes as he swallowed another burst of Chaotic Force from his dantian. A burst of energy flew forth from his body as wildly as a rampaging horse. He moved his hand to slam the five fingertips of the male whose claw was touching him.

The male trembled briefly before he took back his claw hand with lightning quick speed. There was a slight aching pain from his fingertips, causing the male to feel alarmed. He knew that this feeling meant his finger bones had been broken.

“What power is this? How is he so strong? Perhaps he really is a wargod from the ancient Bai clans? Aside from the wargods, no other human could possibly have such strength or power.” The snake thought to himself, completely befuddled.

Unwilling to give the golden-robed male any more time to think, Jian chen flew forward. His fist moved through the air to deliver yet another stunning strike.

However, the male used the powers of space to escape ten meters away, gain some room, but his actions had been predicted by Jian Chen. He used the Illusionary Flash to arrive in front of the male with his fist still traveling unimpeded.

A crimson light entered the golden irises of the male. Unable to dodge, its only option left was to take the blow. With his arms an equal distance apart, the energy of the world began to gather in between the open space of his hands. Strand by strand, a mysterious power began to gather from the surrounding world into the center of his hands. He then pushed the mysterious power toward Jian Chen’s incoming fist.

Chapter 636: The Penultimate Compromise

The golden-robed youngster's worldly-energy-filled fist clashed with Jian Chen's Chaotic-Force-filled fist, but not a sound could be heard. Instead, a tremendous wave of energy splashed out and ravaged the area. The cave itself collapsed, reduced to rubble.

With the cave falling apart, pieces of the mountain came crashing down from the ceiling. With dust and stone everywhere, the visibility was reduced to nothing. There were practically no footholds for the two combatants to stand, leaving them with no other choice but to fly. Holes, that traveled so deep they disappeared into an abyss, littered the area because of the destruction they caused. The night pearls that had adorned the walls of the cave had long since been reduced to dust, leaving the area in perpetual darkness.

A faint cyan glow surrounded Jian Chen's body, a sign of the wind element being used. The wind allowed his body to fly up into the air. At the same time, the Origin energy of the sword spirits manifested in his hand. It formed a twenty-meter-long spirit sword that he used to cut apart the remnants of the cave ceiling to get a clear view of the sky.

Similarly, there was golden glow around the other male. Turning back into a two-meter-long golden snake, it flashed into the air in a golden blur, and broke straight through the cave ceiling to reach the open sky above. After freeing himself, he turned back into his human form.

In just a few seconds, Jian Chen and the golden-robed male had

gone from a fight in the cave to a fight in the sky outside.

Far below them, the previously giant mountain sank down into itself. The forest was ravaged several dozen kilometers around the cave as if doomsday had struck.

A white figure watched the spectacle in the sky from far away. This figure was Jiede Tai, the patriarch of the Jiede clan. Even his interest was piqued by what was happening.

“That golden-robed youth has the aura of a magical beast to him. Perhaps it’s a Class 7 Magical Beast that can take human form? If it’s a Class 7 Magical Beast, could it possibly be the Golden-Striped Silver Snake?” The patriarch wondered aloud to himself full of curiosity. The Golden-Striped Silver Snake was an extremely rare beast on the continent, and the patriarch had only heard about them even though he had lived a long time. He had never seen one in real life until today, and it was a Class 7 one too.

“If it’s a Class 7 Magical Beast, then a Saint Ruler could use the powers of space to avoid the venom it spits out, but even against a Class 7 Golden-Striped Silver Snake, that would no advantage at all. The snake is still a strong one even without its venom, is Jian Chen even capable of fighting one?” Jiede Tai muttered with furrowed eyebrows. A Class 7 Golden-Striped Silver Snake was something that gave him a tremendous headache. When he thought about how immense Jian Chen’s bodily strength was, the patriarch felt a little relieved. “But Jian Chen himself is a unique person as well. His defenses are an absolute abnormality, and even my strongest blows were unable to leave lasting injuries. I can see that this Golden-Striped Silver Snake has reached the Sixth

Heavenly Layer. It will be hard for it to hurt Jian Chen, but still, stories of meeting a Class 7 Golden-Striped Silver Snake would be taken as the ravings of a madman.”

Countless of kilometers away, Jian Chen and the golden-robed man stood an equal hundred meters away from one another in the sky. Jian Chen had a very calm look on his face. The other male was staring at Jian Chen with a rather grim but concentrated look.

This Jian Chen in front of him was a hard enemy to fight. Although the snake himself was a very strong creature with equally strong defenses, he found it very difficult to strike down this foe to take the carcass of his dead kin. What gave him the biggest headache was the fact that Jian Chen had managed to gain the Thousand Immunity, making him immune to even his venom. A Class 7 Magical Beast was far stronger than a Class 3 Magical Beast, but the venom was still unable to harm Jian Chen.

“You should understand by now that you cannot kill me nor can you steal away what I own. The only way to earn it is by following me for ten years. Ten years is nothing to a being like you. It’s an infinitesimally small loss with extremely huge returns. Take your time to consider it.” Jian Chen goaded.

Growing silent, the golden-robed man stared ahead with bright eyes that gave no hints to what he was thinking.

After waiting for some time, Jian Chen said, “I have very little time to waste around here. I’ll give you a few more moments to think. If you’re still unwilling, I’ll be taking my leave with this item, taking away your only chance of earning this treasure. If I

step back into the human world, you'll be hard-pressed to find me."

The fists of the golden-robed man clenched as hints of scarlet entered his eyes. Just faintly, a strong urge to kill could be felt radiating from him.

Sensing the killing intent of the snake, Jian Chen sneered, "I know that your true strength isn't just this, but you've experienced how strong my body is first-hand. You cannot kill me. You cannot wound me. If I wish to leave, you have no way of stopping me, and to reinforce the matter, I've another strong companion nearby."

"Human, I am a being of the magical beasts. Would my travels with you in the human world not cause you to fear the troubles that accompany me?" The male spat.

Shaking his head, Jian Chen replied, "There are plenty of magical beasts living in the human world — many of them are strong. I know there is a treaty between the strongest of the human world with your magical beast clans, but this only applies to those of the Gilligan clan. You aren't of the Gilligan clan, so there would be no trouble for you to travel in the human world."

"You know quite a bit of information, but how did you come to know that I'm not of the Gilligan clan?" The male asked.

Smiling, Jian Chen replied, "The strongest that humanity has to offer has prohibited Class 7 Magical Beasts of the Gilligan clan from stepping beyond the Cross Mountains. You're a Class 7

Magical Beast, yet you live so close to the exterior of the mountain range. Furthermore, you fought with me without worrying about humans coming after you. I could tell from that that you're not of the Gilligan clan. To ignore these hints would mean I, Jian Chen, am an ignorant fellow."

"You speak correct. I am not of the Gilligan clan." At the mention of that clan, the golden-robed man had a look of disdain enter his eyes. "The Gilligan clan is nothing more than a chess piece placed on the Tian Yuan Continent from the Divine Beast Continent. How could I, the great Nubis, be a chess piece for another?" The male pridefully stuck out his chest.

Jian Chen refrained from smiling when he heard how the snake referred to itself. The snake in front of him was clearly a prideful one. Similar to the aristocratic sons of nobility, but instead of being proud of being rich, the snake was prideful of its strength and its heritage as a beast of antiquity.

"We've already gone past the time limit. What is your decision?"

The snake grew silent. He was an inherently prideful being. He felt it beneath his station to work as an attendant to another, but he desperately coveted the dead corpse of his own kin. He knew that if he could absorb the Origin essence, he would be able to grow much stronger, which made it difficult to give up on the idea.

"Very well, human. You win. I, the great Nubis, will travel with you for ten years. Once those ten years are up, we will have nothing to do with one another." The male compromised. Since the carcass of his dead kin was far too important, he would not

refuse the offer.

“Good, that’s settled then.” Jian Chen smiled happily. A Class 7 Magical Beast as a new entree to his ranks would tremendously increase the strength of the Flame Mercenaries. Even the Sect of Dragon and Tiger would be completely intimidated by one.

“Let us make one thing clear first. In our ten years together, I will not do any heartless tasks or anything that I am not willing to do.” The male spoke.

Jian Chen nodded his head after thinking for a moment, “No problem. I can promise you that, but in return, you will not stand by the sidelines if there is any trouble that comes our way.”

“Deal!” The snake felt that this deal was a good one. He agreed with Jian Chen as a result.

A smile reached Jian Chen’s face at that. Although the snake would only follow him for ten years, ten years was far more than enough for him to finish what he needed to do.

Jian Chen took out the corpse of the Golden-Striped Silver Snake he had killed years ago from his Space Ring and threw it to the other male, “This is yours.”

As the corpse floated over to the male, the male’s sharp eyes stared at it with excitement. Turning to look at Jian Chen, he asked, “You have that much faith in me? Are you not afraid that I

would renege on the deal?”

“You’re of the royal family of the snakes with pride beyond all else. Your word would be equivalent to the nine sacred tripods. I am of the belief you are a being of your word.”

A great big smile appeared on the male’s face, “I am fond of these words. I, the great Nubis, am not a being that speaks empty promises. Worry not, when I say ten years, I mean ten years and not a day less.”

Chapter 637: Epiphany

Laughing, Jian Chen smiled, “I’m Jian Chen. You can call me by that name from now on. Your name is Nubis, I take it? I’ll be calling you that from now on as well.”

The completion of his mission made Jian Chen extremely happy. After exchanging several happy words with Nubis, the two enemies became a group that would later be fighting shoulder to shoulder in battle.

Jian Chen and Nubis flew toward Jiede Tai who was waiting for them several kilometers away in the air. When Jian Chen saw the astounded look on the patriarch’s face, he couldn’t help but give a wry grin, “From now on we are all part of a family. Allow me to introduce everyone then. This is the Class 7 Golden-Striped Silver Snake, Nubis. This is a Saint Ruler, Jiede Tai.”

“The great Nubis!” The male corrected Jian Chen in dissatisfaction.

“It is an honor to meet you, the great Nubis.” Up against a Golden-Striped Silver Snake, Jiede Tai did not desire to be negligent of his manners. He made sure to cup his hands in respect. While he was calm on the outside, his mind was in disarray. In truth, he found it hard to believe that Jian Chen had managed to make a foe like the Golden-Striped Silver Snake submit to him, especially since a Class 7 Magical Beast was by no means easy to fight.

Attentively, Nubis stared at Jiede Tai for a moment before haughtily saying, “Third Heavenly Layer, your strength is just barely adequate.”

A series of color changes washed over Jiede Tai’s face at those words. He was angered by the words of Nubis, and if it were a human Saint Ruler that had said them, then he would have immediately become hostile. However, just thinking about how different a Golden-Striped Silver Snake was, he had no other choice but to quash his anger down enough for it to not show on his face.

He didn’t have the Thousand Immunity, which could negate the snake’s venom, like Jian Chen did. The venom from a Class 7 Magical Beast was far more than what Jiede Tai could take.

“The great Nubis, sire, this one will be a comrade in arms in the upcoming times with you. I hope that you and him will be able to get along and avoid any conflict.” Jian Chen spoke. He felt rather unhappy at the contemptuous words Nubis said when he spoke to Jiede Tai. Although Jiede Tai was his lackey now, he was still a Saint Ruler that brokered far too much power and dignity to be ridiculed.

“Very well then!” Nubis shrugged his shoulders. He was a being that was inherently proud, so it was only when Jian Chen asked that he would bother trying to tone it down.

Jiede Tai felt slightly relieved when Jian Chen spoke. A simple phrase caused Jiede Tai to look at Jian Chen in a slightly better light. Now he was a little more accepting of his lowly status.

Afterward, the three of them didn't bother to stay in the area much longer. They flew toward Mercenary City.

Not too long after the three left, a purple-robed elder appeared out of nowhere. His eyes stared at the three retreating figures as he muttered to himself, "Only a year has passed since I last saw him, yet Jian Chen's strength has already progressed so much that even that little snake cannot harm him. How truly astounding, but how is his body that strong? Is he really a reincarnation of one of the wargods from the ancient clans?"

Thinking for a moment, the elder then shook his head, "His body and the special characteristics of the wargods of the past are completely different. He must have used some sort of secret technique to gain such a strong physique. If a Fifth Heavenly Layer Saint Ruler is unable to inflict a mortal wound on him, then it seems that I'll be able to feel at ease while Little Fatty travels with him. He will be able to achieve the goals I have for him soon enough, I hope." At this, the figure of the elder gradually faded away from the world.

In the end, his body could no longer be called the body of a human. It was more like a construct made from the powers of the world.

For two days, the three men traveled back to Mercenary City in a hurry. However, only Jiede Tai and Jian Chen had entered the city while Nubis stood a thousand meters away from the barrier. Mercenary City prohibited any high class magical beasts from entering. It only allowed mounts free entry.

Jian Chen was worried something had happened back at home since his half of the jade slip had broken. Thus, instead of staying in Mercenary City for a moment longer, Jian Chen directed Little Fatty and Wang Yufeng to hurry out to regroup with Nubis.

As Jian Chen approached Nubis once more, the snake gave a sudden start. Both of his eyes swung to the tiger cub that was resting on Jian Chen's shoulder with a look of absolute shock.

"I-Im... th... impossible! It... it has appeared once more in this world!" As soon as he saw the tiger cub, Nubis immediately cried out without a single bit of his previous regal dignity to be heard.

Despite the tiger cub being only a weak Class 5 Magical Beast that Nubis would normally disregard, the origins of the cub were something overwhelmed Nubis.

The power that ran through the bloodline of the tiger cub was far too massive. Nubis swore that not once in his life had he ever felt such a domineering pressure. Even a Class 8 Magical Beast — the magical beast equivalent of a Saint King in the human world — would not be able to force Nubis to feel this very intense, dreadful pressure. It was a pressure that shook his soul to its very core so that he wouldn't dare rebel. In fact, he even felt the urge to kneel down on his knee to swear his allegiance to the cub.

As a Golden-Striped Silver Snake, Nubis was a Class 7 Magical Beast that knew plenty of the world. He understood just what sort of existence this magical beast was to possess such tremendous

power. Combined with the special characteristics of the cub, Nubis was sure of its true identity, but even still, he was completely dumbfounded by the revelation.

Jian Chen could tell that Nubis had learned the truth of the tiger cub's identity from his reaction, but this outcome was something he had expected. Thus, he was not surprised.

“O’ great Nubis, I hope that you’ll be able to safeguard this secret!” Jian Chen discretely spoke to him.

Still not yet fully recovered from his shock, Nubis continued to stare at the sleeping tiger cub a moment longer before looking at Jian Che, “Jian Chen, does this mean you know its identity?”

Jian Chen nodded his head, but the proximity of Jiede Tai, who was carrying Wang Yufeng and Little Fatty, made Jian Chen pull Nubis away before he whispered, “Great Nubis, the Winged Tiger God is a divine beast of antiquity. It’ll definitely become the true king of the magical beasts in the future, but since it is a cub, now would be the best time to foster friendly relations with it. This for you is a great opportunity. I believe you understand just how terrifying the Winged Tiger God is.”

Nubis’ eyes filled with a bright light while he clenched his fists. He wasn’t an ignoramus; Jian Chen’s words left him to ponder to himself even more than before. He knew that this was a once-in-a-lifetime event that he couldn’t possibly hope to miss. The strength of a Winged Tiger God was something that far surpassed any human he knew of. In the case that the Winged Tiger God matured fully, not a single force in this world would be able to stop it.

“Worry not, I know what must be done.” Nubis reassured Jian Chen.

Letting out a sigh of relief, Jian Chen smiled, “Let’s go then!”

Afterward, Jian Chen and the others traveled toward the Qinhuang Kingdom. Nubis had been very quick to regain his regular calm, but every so often, as they traveled through the sky, his eyes could be seen lingering on the tiger cub with a hint of fear.

Nubis’ earlier loss of composure had been noticed by Jiede Tai. He now kept his eyes on the tiger cub on Jian Chen’s shoulder. He had noticed the cub earlier but had took it to be a small cub that Jian Chen was fostering. Thus, he didn’t bother wasting any thoughts about it, but Nubis’ reaction from made him realize he was a bit too hasty when he made his evaluation.

“What history does this magical beast youngling have to cause an ancient beast like the Golden-Striped Silver Snake to be at a loss like this?” Jiede Tai thought to himself in curiosity, wondering what the tiger cub was.

As Jian Chen and his entourage were on route to the Qinhuang Kingdom, the stalwart middle-aged man from last time was seated in yet another private room of a building in a First Class City in the kingdom closest to Mercenary City. Right in front of him was the same old man that had greeted him last time.

“Respectful sir, there was an important message that had to be

reported straight away. Our spy has made a concise report that Jian Chen has left Mercenary City. He is traveling in the direction of the Qinhuang Kingdom. According to what we know, the Qinhuang Kingdom most recently gained another Imperial Protector that goes by the name Jian Chen. It would be my guess that they're the same person!" The elder informed the man.

A brilliant light entered the seated man's eyes as he said, "This information isn't half-bad. You've done well. Take this. Consider it your reward and the surplus a bonus." Throwing down an exquisite Space Ring onto the table, the man left the room.

After two days worth of traveling over thousands and thousands of kilometers, Jian Chen's group finally managed to make it to the edges of the Qinhuang Kingdom. Without any time to rest, the group headed for the palace.

Unbeknownst to them, an extremely faint image floated several thousand meters overhead, looking down on the group. This image looked similar to the middle-aged man, but his face was extremely sinister.

"Winged Tiger God, I've finally found you." The man excitedly spoke.

Chapter 638: The Return

The middle-aged man's eyes lingered on the winged tiger cub on Jian Chen's chest. As big as the continent was, he had been able to learn of the Winged Tiger God by accident, causing him to feel extremely excited.

Half a moment later, the middle-aged man tore his eyes away from the tiger cub to look at the gold-cloaked Nubis. As soon as Nubis' figure registered in his eyes, the man let out a small start, "Hm? That's Nubis! Why is an ancient beast like him following this group?" For a moment, the man pondered to himself. "With his strength, he has surely sensed the bloodline of the Winged Tiger God. He's made his choice to help the Winged Tiger God mature to adulthood it seems. Pity. This choice will only lead him to the road of death."

"How unexpected to see a Class 7 Golden-Striped Silver Snake and a Saint Ruler following Jian Chen around. I could kill them, but that'd alert the Saint Rulers in the Qinhuang Kingdom. With how close Mercenary City is, if one of their strongest found out that I've entered the human world, that'd spell the end for me. I'll have to retreat for now. Bah, I'll let you live another day." The man thought to himself before his transparent image began to fade away from its spot and then out of sight.

Jian Chen and the others remained completely oblivious to the fact that they were being followed. Traveling toward the palace, the group then soon arrived at the entrance.

At Jian Chen's command, everyone landed on the ground and

strode into the palace. As an Imperial protector, Jian Chen was a figure that was known to everyone. Not a single person moved to stop him; they instead bowed from their waists while they stood off to the side.

Simultaneously, four enormous bursts of energy resonated from within the palace as if four ancient beasts had awakened from their slumber. The entire area was filled with this aura, almost freezing time itself. Four figures could be seen flying from each corner of the palace into the air above, and behind them, a crack in space itself could be seen. It was as if they were traveling within space instead of air. With unbelievable speed, the four figures surrounded Jian Chen and the others.

“Jian Chen pays his respects to the four seniors!” Jian Chen spoke with a calm smile to the ones around him. Since he knew that these four were the Imperial Protectors of the Qinhuang Kingdom and were Saint Rulers, he could speak without fear. In fact, he even knew two of the four already.

“Jian Chen, it’s you!” One of the middle-aged men spoke in surprise. Turning his eyes to the golden-robed Nubis and Jiede Tai, his eyebrows furrowed together, “Jian Chen, who are these two?” With his strength, he could sense that the two figures in front of him were also Saint Rulers.

“Seniors, these two are Jiede Tai and Nubis, two good friends of mine.” Jian Chen explained with a smile.

The four Imperial Protectors looked on in uniform shock. They couldn’t believe what Jian Chen had said. They would never have

thought that Jian Chen would have yet another two Saint Ruler friends — this was a strength that even the Qinhuang Kingdom valued greatly.

“The great Nubis!” Nubis argued in annoyance.

“Hehe, o’ great Nubis, you are truly so great. How could I be so blind to not see that?” Wang Yufeng cajoled from the side.

As soon as Wang Yufeng spoke, Nubis took the words as a personal attack and insult to his pride. To hear this from an insignificant ant that hadn’t even yet lived for a fraction of his life, Nubis’ inherent pride felt greatly insulted.

Nubis’ face darkened several shades as a hint of crimson light entered his eyes. An intimidating aura began to leak from his body. It moved toward Wang Yufeng before Nubis grabbed Wang Yufeng’s throat with a hand. “Youngster,” Nubis started coldly, “Do you even wish to live if you mutter these words? Do you not think the great Nubis will not kill you where you stand right now?”

Wang Yufeng found it impossible to escape or even move because of the death grip that Nubis had on his throat. A feeling of suffocation began to well up from his body. He started to feel as if he was on the verge of death. What had been even more terrifying was the fact that Nubis’ eyes were scarlet, adding yet another factor of anger that struck fear into Wang Yufeng.

“Nubis, what are you doing, let go of him!” Jian Chen barked out.

The light in his eyes hardened as if to become as sharp as the blade of a sword. Nubis' actions had startled even Jian Chen since Wang Yufeng was a member of their party instead of an enemy.

Nubis turned an eye to look at Jian Chen and shrugged, "Youngster, for the sake of giving some face to Jian Chen, I'll spare your life. You will not speak to me with such a tone in the future. Remember that. Or else I, the great Nubis, will not hesitate to kill you no matter how good of a friend you are to Jian Chen." Nubis released Wang Yufeng's throat, allowing his captive to drop to his knees and gasp for breath. Wang Yufeng's entire body was entirely drenched with sweat because of the previous situation.

"You're not a human — you're a magical beast." One of the Imperial Protectors spoke. When Nubis released his aura, all four of the Imperial Protectors had been able to recognize his true identity.

"Are you of the Gilligan clan?" Another Imperial Protector asked. After he asked his question, the other three Imperial Protectors froze for a fraction of a second.

Nubis gave a level stare at the four Imperial Protectors in front of him and proudly said, "Don't take the great Nubis for a being from the Gilligan clan. There is nothing between them and the great Nubis."

"Four seniors, please don't misunderstand. Nubis may be a magical beast, but he isn't a member of the Gilligan clan. He is a friend of mine and is by no means an outsider." Jian Chen explained. Although he was unhappy with the fact that Nubis had

let loose his arrogant attitude, it was far more pertinent to explain the situation and the relationship between Nubis and him or else risk a misunderstanding.

“If that’s so, then he’s no outsider to us as well.” The four Imperial Protectors sighed in relief. However, in their hearts, they were curious how Jian Chen had been able to make friends with such a powerful magical beast. Such a feat filled each and every single one of them with awe and even some envy. The natural fighting potential of a magical beast was far greater than their human counterparts. Some of the rarer magical beasts could even overstep the boundaries of rank and kill humans of a higher level.

Just barely recovering from a near-death experience by Nubis, Wang Yufeng’s entire body grew as rigid as a statue when he heard that Nubis was in fact a magical beast. Looking at Nubis with extreme terror, Wang Yufeng realized at that moment that this young golden-robed youth in front of him was a majestic Class 7 Magical Beast. A being that was on par with the Saint Rulers of the human world.

A parade of footsteps could be heard at the same time as well as a dense amount of soldiers came flying in from every direction possible. In the sky, twenty something Heaven Saint Masters appeared — they were the Imperial Advisors that stayed behind to protect the palace while the others were away.

These Imperial Advisors had clearly been startled by the outburst of strength from the four Imperial Advisors when they had made themselves known. The entire palace in fact had been made aware of their presence which caused security to increase to the

maximum.

“Go back to what you were doing before.” One Imperial Protector commanded with a calm voice that traveled into the ears of all the soldiers there.

The dense crowd of soldiers soon trickled back into the palace as if they were water. As soon as they appeared, all of them had left, leaving behind only the twenty something Heaven Saint Masters in the sky. Each one of them were looking at the four Imperial Protectors in shock. The four Imperial Protectors were generally hidden within the palaces cultivating. They’d only leave the palace once every ten or so years to get some exercise, but to have all four of them appear at once was an extremely surprising sight.

“We pay our respects to the Imperial Protectors!” The Heaven Saint Masters bowed respectfully.

One of the Imperial Protectors waved his hands and replied, “You may leave!”

“Yes!” The twenty Heaven Saint Masters replied before glancing curiously at the entourage behind Jian Chen. Silently withdrawing, each one of them was extremely curious despite their calm demeanors. These strangers had been enough to startle even the four Imperial Protectors; this meant that these strangers were definitely important people.

“Jian Chen, I heard that you came across some trouble while in Mercenary City. Although we wanted to help you, the Qinhuang

Kingdom was facing some dangers that we had to address. Thus, we could spare no time to help. We hope that you won't take offense to that." An Imperial Protector apologetically smiled at Jian Chen. It didn't matter if it was the feat Jian Chen had accomplished back in Mercenary City or the fact that two Saint Rulers were traveling with him, the four of them couldn't risk mistreating Jian Chen right now.

A great big smile appeared on Jian Chen's face before he began to make conversation with the four Imperial Protectors. After several words, he got to the main problem at hand, "Seniors, something is happening back within my homelands, so I must hurry back there right away. If we may speak another day."

"That's fine, we won't take up brother Jian Chen's time any longer if that's the case."

Afterward, Jian Chen and the third prince, Qin Ji, managed to say their goodbyes. Then the four Imperial Protectors led Jian Chen's group to the Space Gate where they would leave the kingdom from.

Chapter 639: The Leaking Of The Tungsten Alloy Deposit

The Imperial Advisors had made the preparations for Jian Chen's group to travel to the Heavenly Kingdom via the Space Gate some time ago. Thus, they were able to arrive there extremely fast.

As soon as they stepped through the gate, Jian Chen's eyes swept the area only to realize that the palace was still the same as it always was. The only difference was the fact that there was a slightly cold and tense feeling throughout the place. All over the area, there were war banners flying high with mimicking the fire-red symbol a flame.

Jian Chen was no stranger to these banners since they marked the Flame Mercenaries.

Suddenly, a series of footsteps quickly came echoing into the courtyard as several hundred men came flying toward Jian Chen, surrounding him and his group. As they moved to encircle them, the men glared viciously at Jian Chen.

"Who are you? State your names at once!" The leader of the group commanded.

"Jian Chen!" Jian Chen replied.

Straight away, the man's face froze. He was no stranger to this name and was in fact quite familiar with it. That was the name of

the captain after all.

The leading captain concentrated on Jian Chen some more before finally recognizing him. A startled look appeared on his face before he bowed his head down to his waist in salute, “Ah so it was the captain! Your subordinate would have no eyes if I was unable to recognize the captain, please forgive this one!”

The people around the captain recognized Jian Chen by this point as well. An immediate change overcame each and every single one of them, causing them to bow. “We pay our respects to the captain!” Several hundred voices called out at once, breaking the monotonous silence in the palace. Hence, the entire palace now knew that Jian Chen was here, causing everyone to file toward his position.

A faint azure glow made itself known as a young figure in white flew toward Jian Chen. When he came to a stop in front of him and saw Jian Chen’s face, the figure smiled widely, “Jian Chen! You’re finally back! Any longer and I would’ve gone out to look for you.” This youth was Ming Dong.

“Jian Chen, you’re back!”

“Brother, you’ve come back!”

At the voice of Ming Dong, the voices of two women rang out. It was You Yue, Huang Luan, and Bi Lian that came rushing toward Jian Chen with joyous expressions.

All of the higher-ranking members of the Flame Mercenaries gathered in the interior of the palace, so in no time at all, the empty space was quickly filled with people.

Jian Chen gave several words of greeting to everyone before he was guided into the grand halls. This specific hall was the hall where the nobles of the old Heavenly Eagle Kingdom had conducted business relating to the kingdom, but since the Flame Mercenaries had taken up residence, it had been repurposed and renamed to the Flames Hall.

Jian Chen was seated on top of the golden throne in the middle of the hall with Nubis, Jiede Tai, Wang Yufeng, and Little Fatty standing by his side without a word to say. Little Fatty was looking around filled with great curiosity. He had only just started to travel the continent, so every single thing he saw in this strange world was a new wonder to marvel.

Beneath Jian Chen and them were the Heaven Saint Masters, Ming Dong, and the others of the Flame Mercenaries standing together.

Jian Chen gave a cursory look around as if preparing to say something. He then started off with an introduction of Jiede Tai and the others, but he only gave a brief introduction of their backgrounds. He did not mention how strong they were.

After the introductions were finished, Jian Chen wasted no more words. He immediately got to the crux of the problem. Taking out the crushed jade piece he had in his Space Ring, he asked, “What was so serious for you to call me back using the twin jade stones?”

“What else but about the tungsten alloy? Jian Chen. Half a month ago, news of the vein was leaked to the world. The fact that the Flame Mercenaries are harboring a vein of tungsten alloy is making its way around so fast that everyone knows about it.” You Yue replied.

Jian Chen smiled, “Paper can’t resist being burned by fire. News that the tungsten alloy would be leaked was within my expectations, but I didn’t think it’d be revealed so quickly. What plans have the ones that know about the tungsten alloy made so far?”

“Ever since we garrisoned the Flame Mercenaries here, the strength of the seven factions grew dramatically especially with the Qinhuang Kingdom as support, but the surrounding kingdoms have grown jealous. While they haven’t made any open plans just yet, there is still one problem. The Sect of Dragon and Tiger.” Bi Lian explained. She and You Yue were very capable of managing the Flame Mercenaries, so Jian Chen had left the group in their care while he was away.

While there were plenty of strong individuals in the Flame Mercenaries where even Heaven Saint Masters were abundant, strength was not a decisive factor in regards to management. What was important was not talent in cultivation, but a sharp mind and intelligent soul.

At the mention of the Sect of Dragon and Tiger, a furious glare entered Jian Chen’s eye. He could still remember the Saint Ruler of that sect had done to him, and he would never forget it either.

“Does the Sect of Dragon and Tiger hope to seize the tungsten alloy?” Jian Chen asked with an increasingly colder glare. If it were before, the Sect of Dragon and Tiger would’ve brought a great deal of pressure onto him. However, right now, the Saint Ruler posed no problem at all to him.

You Yue nodded. “Correct. They want their portion of the soup, but their appetites are far too large. They’ve demanded two-thirds of the deposit; naturally, we refused. Maybe it’s because they fear the Qinhuang Kingdom, but they didn’t do anything after our refusal. They instead gave us seven days to think it over.”

“Brother, the Sect of Dragon and Tiger want to see just how the Qinhuang Kingdom will treat this affair. We’ve already made a detailed report on the strength of the Sect of Dragon and Tiger compared to our Flame Mercenaries. We’ve concluded that our Flame Mercenaries don’t have the power to refuse them. I’m afraid that if the Qinhuang Kingdom doesn’t partake in this, then the Sect of Dragon and Tiger will simply take the deposit straight from our hands.” Bi Lian spoke.

“Bi Lian is right, Jian Chen. Our only guarantee to the deposit is if the Qinhuang Kingdom helps us. Our only connection to them is through you, and with how there’s no time to lose, we had no other choice but to call you back using the twin jade pieces.” You Yue gave her input with a serious voice. This matter with the Sect of Dragon and Tiger had given her a tremendous headache.

“How many days has it been since they gave us seven days?” Jian Chen asked.

“It’s been six days already, tomorrow is the very last day!” Ming Dong grimly answered.

A cold sneer appeared on Jian Chen’s face at that response, “If that’s the case, then we’ll just wait for the Sect of Dragon and Tiger to come. There’s no need for everyone to worry, I’ll handle the matter myself.”

Everyone had let out a sigh of relief when Jian Chen replied. They did not doubt in his words at all. Even those not of his inner circle knew of his other identity. He was the Imperial Protector of the Qinhuang Kingdom, one of the Eight Great Empires. Just how could a person like that give his word so easily without the strength to back it up?

With the problem regarding the Sect of Dragon and Tiger resolved, everyone split up at the suggestion of Jian Chen. Soon enough, the grand halls of the palace became eerily empty with only a scant few people remaining.

Standing up from his throne, Jian Chen looked to Ming Dong and then the rest. In the months they had been apart, You Yue and Bi Lian both were the most fatigued-looking of the group. The past several days of managing the mercenaries must have taken a considerable amount of energy from them.

To apologize, Jian Chen gave a small smile, “You Yue, Lian’er, the past few days must have been hard on you. Perhaps I shouldn’t have thrown such a burdensome task to you two. I can tell that you

two are far more exhausted than when I last saw you two.”

Bi Lian gave a sweet smile in response to him, “Brother, don’t worry about me. The Flame Mercenaries is just at the developing stage since it only recently was formed, so there’s lots to do. It should become easier with time.”

“I’ll be sure to find some people who are adept in management and are trustworthy. With such people around to help, that’ll alleviate some of your pressure.” Jian Chen proposed.

“Brother, I’ve already considered finding someone. There’s quite a number of people I think would be good at managing others. Zhan Tian in particular.” Bi Lian replied.

“Zhan Tian!” Jian Chen was alarmed. He remembered this man since he was the captain of the Carnage Mercenaries.

“Zhan Tian is a dependable person, let’s have him undertake this responsibility then.” Jian Chen spoke after some time to think.

“Got it!”

Afterward, Jian Chen took out a small fist-sized fruit from his Space Ring and handed it to Bi Lian with a smile. “Lian’er, this is a Geofruit, a ten-thousand-year-old heavenly resource. I bought this in an auction house in Mercenary City to help change your cultivation. Once you eat this fruit, your body will become extremely suitable for cultivation. In the future, you’ll find almost

no obstacles in your path.”

“Brother, you must have spent so much money for this.” Bi Lian was deeply moved. Her eyes stared at the Geofruit in front of her with the slight hint of tears starting to form.

Unable to stop himself from smiling, Jian Chen replied, “Money is of no concern. As long as it’ll benefit Lian’er, then all the money spent is worth it.”

From the side, Nubis stared at the Geofruit in Jian Chen’s hand, “Using a ten-thousand-year-old heavenly resource to change the body of an ordinary person. What a spendthrift you are. This is a treasure even Saint Rulers use to prolong their lives. Jian Chen, let’s make another deal. If you give this Geofruit to me, I’ll follow you around for another three years.”

In the human world, the Geofruit was a treasure, but it wasn’t extinct. Every year in Mercenary City another heavenly resource of the same level would appear, but as a magical beast, Nubis couldn’t simply walk into Mercenary City. Therefore, obtaining a ten-thousand-year-old heavenly resource became a whole lot harder. It was practically impossible to gain one in the human world as a magical beast.

The Cross Mountains had plenty of ten-thousand-year-old heavenly resources, but those were carefully seized by the Gilligan clan. Hence, Nubis himself was unable to take any. While he was a Class 7 Magical Beast, obtaining a ten-thousand-year-old heavenly resource wasn’t easy for him.

Jian Chen shook his head without even a second consideration, “This Geofruit is for Lian’er. If you still need one, I’ll buy one in Mercenary City when the time comes.”

“If that is what you say let it be then” Nubis was placated. A ten-thousand-year-old heavenly resource had the ability to prolong the life of the eater, and magical beasts were no exception to that.

“Ten-thousand-year-old heavenly resources aren’t something that can be eaten by anyone without consequence. Jian Chen, if you want to change your cousin’s body composition, you may want to invite an alchemist. An alchemist can craft medicines that can make the rich spiritual might of the heavenly resource docile so that your cousin may be able to eat it.” Jiede Tai suddenly spoke.

“Have the best alchemist come to me at once!” Jian Chen commanded without delay.

Chapter 640: Dealing With The Sect Of Dragon And Tiger

About ten thousand meters high in the sky above the Qinhuang Kingdom, the faint image of a person could be seen surrounded by a sea of clouds. With those clouds in the way, neither of the four Imperial Protectors had seen or sensed his existence.

The astral figure was currently staring down at the Space Gate in the center of the Qinhuang Kingdom's palace. The figure's fists were clenched tightly and his teeth were gritted angrily as he spat, "Blasted scoundrel! He escaped through the Space Gate. How troublesome, I didn't even have time to place a tracer on him. Where has he gone? I'll have to waste even more time and energy now, blast!" The figure thought to himself in anger.

But then a thought struck him, "Jian Chen is an Imperial Protector of the Qinhuang Kingdom. This means that if I pay attention to what they say in the kingdom, I'll be able to figure out where he has gone to." With the plan set, the figure then faded away from site.

All of the Heavenly Eagle Kingdom had been transformed into the territory of the Flame Mercenaries, but with the previously hidden tungsten alloy now known throughout the area, countless of smaller kingdoms had been enticed. However, not a single one of them had been spurred into action besides the Sect of Dragon and Tiger.

The pressure that came from the threat of the Sect of Dragon and Tiger was alleviated with the return of Jian Chen. Although Jian

Chen didn't fear the sect, he didn't wish to make a preemptive strike against them either. Instead, he wanted to wait two days for the sect to come. Jian Chen wanted the sect to come with large forces and war banners ready for battle. He then wanted them to return back to where they came, ashen-faced with dejection and defeat.

On the morning of the second day, Jian Chen could be seen seated on top of the throne in the grand halls. Down beneath him was an older man bent down at the waist, "He Yun pays his respects to the captain!"

Smiling at the elder, Jian Chen said, "Master He Yun, they say that you are the most accomplished alchemist within this kingdom. What kind of alchemy are you capable of?"

"Captain, as an alchemist, I've several accomplishments under my belt. As long as I possess the ingredients, I am capable of concocting many different high-leveled pills." He Yun respectfully answered. He knew that the young person in front of him was the leader of the Flame Mercenaries. The person who the seven factions of the defunct Heavenly Eagle Kingdom swore allegiance to.

"I've a single ten-thousand-year-old heavenly resource. Master He Yun, would you be able to process it into a pill?" Jian Chen calmly asked as if negotiating an everyday deal with He Yun.

Like any other person, He Yun was startled to hear of a ten-thousand-year-old heavenly resource, but he was quick to recover, "Captain, I hate to be one to disappoint, but a ten-thousand-year-

old heavenly resource is beyond even my alchemical skills. I do not possess the ability to process such a treasure.”

“Jian Chen, you don’t have to make an alchemical pill from the ten-thousand-year-old heavenly resource. Your cousin’s body can’t handle the concentrated spiritual Qi inside the heavenly resource. All the alchemist has to do is make that Qi docile so that your cousin will be able to take it.” Jiede Tai explained to Jian Chen.

Nodding, Jian Chen turned to look at He Yun, “Master He Yun, would you be capable of this?”

Letting out a sigh in relief, He Yun cupped his hands, “Captain, as long as I have the compatible ingredients, this is something that I can do.”

“So be it then. I’ll be relying on you, master He Yun. Stay within the royal palace in the meanwhile, and I will deliver whatever ingredients you need with haste.” Jian Chen decreed.

“Yes, captain!”

.....

In the blink of an eye, the two final days had gone by. Today would be the day the deadline the Sect of Dragon and Tiger gave to relinquish the vein of tungsten alloy to them. Several dozen Heaven Saint Masters floated anxiously waiting for the sect to arrive. Around the perimeter of the valley, even more Earth Saint

Masters stood by.

This time, they were up against the experts of the Sect of Dragon and Tiger, so Jian Chen and the other powerful individuals had already gathered here. There were only one hundred Earth Saint Masters to reduce the casualty count because of the fact that they would be more of a liability than helpful.

Seated not too far away at an empty clearing in the valley was Jian Chen, Ming Dong, Dugu Feng, Tie Ta, Huang Luan, You Yue, Jiede Tai, Nubis, Wang Yufeng, and Little Fatty. Chatting and eating at the table, not a single one of them looked as if they cared about the Sect of Dragon and Tiger

Stepped this was the very first time he had stepped onto the continent, Little Fatty was extremely curious about everything. Without rest, he asked for guidance on many different facets and questions, and sometimes the extremely naive words of his caused everyone else to laugh out loud. Unwilling to disappoint, Wang Yufeng relentlessly explained every single little experience he had collected while exploring the continent to everyone there. Soon enough, everyone had become friendly with one another. Jian Chen himself would interject a few times. Only Nubis and Jiede Tai kept to themselves with their eyes closed and not a word spoken.

An hour later, both Nubis and Jiede Tai opened their eyes to look off into a distant direction. Not too long later, even Jian Chen realized the change. Putting a stop to the conversation, he looked off in the same direction with a pointed stare. “They’ve come. Nubis, Jiede Tai, hide your auras and don’t let them see you.”

“The great Nubis!” Nubis muttered in dissatisfaction.

Soon enough, a dozen Heaven Saint Masters came flying over before coming to a stop above the valley an equal distance away from the Heaven Saint Masters of the Flame Mercenaries. They were the men of the Sect of Dragon and Tiger.

Jian Chen stared down these new arrivals with a glare that could freeze water. Many of them were familiar faces, three of them were the ones he had once fought in front of their sect gates.

“Flame Mercenaries, your seven days are up. I presume you’ve made your decision.” The sectmaster, Kris, smiled.

“Sectmaster Kris, I wonder what it is that you want us to consider. Why don’t you come out and say it?” Jian Chen replied to him while biting into an apple.

Kris’ eyes hovered over to Jian Chen before he clasped his hands together in greeting, “Ah, so it’s the captain of the Flame Mercenaries and Imperial Protector of the Qinhuang Kingdom. I, the incumbent sectmaster of the Sect of Dragon and Tiger, greet you.” Kris paused briefly before saying, “Imperial Protector, we of the Sect of Dragon and Tiger are here for the tungsten alloy deposit. As agreed upon before, we want two-thirds of the deposit, and the remaining third will be left to you.”

Sitting upright on the stool he sat on, Jian Chen stared daggers at Kris, “How audacious your sect is to dare demand two-thirds of the

resources. Do you think yourself capable of making such a demand?”

Instead of being angry, Kris only laughed, “Imperial Protector, the Heavenly Eagle Kingdom was originally ours to manage and govern. Therefore, the tungsten alloy is within our territory and is our right as well. According to logic, the entirety of the vein should be ours, but out of respect for the Qinhuang Kingdom, we shall only take two-thirds of it and leave the rest to you. That is a reasonable and fair amount.”

“What an overt excuse! Men of the Sect of Dragon and Tiger, listen to me now; the Heavenly Eagle Kingdom and its territories have already been subjugated by my Flame Mercenaries. The tungsten alloy is therefore under our possession. I’ll give you all a brief moment to leave. If you don’t, then don’t blame me for being rough with you.” Jian Chen coldly responded as if unwilling to quibble with them any longer.

“How brazen, Jian Chen! This old man would like to see just how rough you’ll be then!” An elderly voice suddenly made itself known as it echoed through the sky. Right above the men from the Sect of Dragon and Tiger, a single elderly man appeared out of nowhere — he was the Saint Ruler of the sect.

Leveling a cold glare at the elder, Jian Chen gave an equally cold smile. “Saint Ruler of the Sect of Dragon and Tiger, you’ve finally made your appearance, and here I thought you’d hide for a little longer.”

Expressionless, the Saint Ruler looked at Jian Chen, “You aren’t

half bad at cultivation, but you are only still a Heaven Saint Master. Without the Qinhuang Kingdom behind you, you are merely a gnat in my eyes. I only pardoned your life last time out of respect to the Qinhuang Kingdom. That's why you can still stand here today, but if you're still so bold to spout off such blasphemous words toward my sect, then I cannot spare your life any longer. Are you willing to bet whether or not I'll beat your body into a thousand pieces?"

"Does your sect not fear the Qinhuang Kingdom?" Jian Chen inquisitively asked.

Laughing, the Saint Ruler answered, "The Qinhuang Kingdom barely has any time to look after itself. How could it spend extra time trying to reach here? Jian Chen, if you were hoping to look to the Qinhuang Kingdom for support, then you should give up now and obediently hand over the tungsten alloy. I won't make things troublesome for you, but if you don't comply, then you'll know the consequences." Unless he was forced to, the Saint Ruler didn't want to kill Jian Chen in front of everyone. It was true that Jian Chen, as a Heaven Saint Master, was as weak as an ant to him, but he was still an Imperial Protector of the Qinhuang Kingdom. Even a Saint Ruler would hesitate to kill one of them so quickly.

Chapter 641: Fighting With The Saint Ruler Of The Sect Of Dragon And Tiger (One)

Laughing, the Saint Ruler answered, “The Qinhuang Kingdom barely has any time to look after itself. How could it spend extra time trying to reach here? Jian Chen, if you were hoping to look to the Qinhuang Kingdom for support, then you should give up now and obediently hand over the tungsten alloy. I won’t make things troublesome for you, but if you don’t comply, then you’ll know the consequences.” Unless he was forced to, the Saint Ruler didn’t want to kill Jian Chen in front of everyone. It was true that Jian Chen, as a Heaven Saint Master, was as weak as an ant to him, but he was still an Imperial Protector of the Qinhuang Kingdom. Even a Saint Ruler would hesitate to kill one of them so quickly.

A troubled feeling tugged at Jian Chen’s mind. It was a guess earlier that a worrisome matter had suddenly appeared for the Qinhuang Kingdom. With the Saint Ruler confirming this guess of his, Jian Chen was still left unsure just what type of difficulties the Qinhuang Kingdom was facing.

“I’ll have to go see what’s happening with the Qinhuang Kingdom when I’ve the time.” Jian Chen thought to himself. The Qinhuang Kingdom had helped him so much already, so he wouldn’t feel right doing nothing when there was trouble to be had.

Now wasn’t the time to be thinking about such a problem. Resuming the topic at hand, Jian Chen glowered dangerously at the Saint Ruler with an angry light in his eyes, “Saint Ruler, you don’t have the right to speak to me like this anymore.” At the last

word, a layer of wind surrounded Jian Chen's body and brought him into the air to stand equal to him. There was such a strong intent to battle that it filled the entire area, seemingly freezing it.

Yet, the Saint Ruler continued to look at him with the same look of contempt as before. Jian Chen was nothing more than a mere Heaven Saint Master in his eyes. A person like that was as weak as an ant that could be swatted with the wave of his hand.

“Jian Chen, do you truly wish this old man to take action!?” The Saint Ruler questioned with a voice like ice. His patience was reaching its breaking point.

Thus, the space between Jian Chen and the Saint Ruler became a battlefield.

Observing the matters from afar, the dozen Heaven Saint Masters, Ming Dong, and the others all looked grim. They were worried about Jian Chen since they all knew that a Heaven Saint Master wasn't comparable to a Saint Ruler.

“Why hasn't the Imperial Protectors of the Qinhuang Kingdom come yet? Are they really as busy as that Saint Ruler said, unable to help? If they don't come, then brother is in danger!” Bi Lian anxiously spoke. Everyone thought that Jian Chen had already notified the Qinhuang Kingdom, requesting them to send their Imperial Protectors since he had been extremely calm before. However, seeing Jian Chen in battle against a Saint Ruler without a single Imperial Protector appearing was something that made them all extremely worried and anxious.

“How impulsive Jian Chen is. The Imperial Protectors aren’t even here and he’s already angered the Saint Ruler. We don’t have anyone that could fight one of those here.” Dugu Feng muttered with furrowed eyebrows.

Nubis couldn’t help but laugh out loud when he heard both Bi Lian and Dugu Feng. “Sorry to disappoint, but the Imperial Protectors you were expecting won’t be coming.”

“What? They won’t be coming? Then how’ll we be holding off the Saint Ruler then?” Ming Dong started.

Casting his eyes to the airborne Jian Chen, Nubis replied, “Hasn’t someone already started? That Saint Ruler will take care of the enemy.”

“What are you on about? Jian Chen is only a Heaven Saint Master. How could he fight a Saint Ruler?” Jian Chen questioned.

“I’ll report to my ancestor, he should have the strength to deal with this Saint Ruler.” Huang Luan words and tone were panicked.

“Boom!”

Just as everyone was furiously discussing with one another on how to deal with this situation, the sound of a heavy explosion caused everyone to look back. The entire area shook from the shockwave of the blast, obscuring almost everything but Jian Chen

and the Saint Ruler in battle.

“Saint Ruler, I still very clearly remember the hand you bestowed on me. Allow me to return the favor to you today.” Jian Chen boomed. Chaotic Force covered his entire body so that its power defended him from the attacks of the Saint Ruler.

The Saint Ruler was slightly taken aback. He was having a hard time believing what he was seeing. “But how is this possible? Have you already made the breakthrough to become a Saint Ruler?” In the earlier exchange, the Saint Ruler had finally been made aware of Jian Chen’s power. It was something that was greater than what a Heaven Saint Master was capable of.

“This aggressive behavior of your sect, allow me to force you all to return with shame and disgrace!” Jian Chen barked out loud. Using the Illusionary Flash, his body flew toward the Saint Ruler like lightning. One of his fists pulsed with Chaotic Force as it slammed toward the chest of his foe. The space trailing the path his fist traveled started to warp.

Chapter 642: Fighting With The Saint Ruler Of The Sect Of Dragon And Tiger (Two)

The Saint Ruler of the Sect of Dragon and Tiger looked especially serious when he observed the power in Jian Chen's fist. He could tell that the energy that surrounded his fist was by no means weaker than what a Saint Ruler was capable of.

“Impossible! In the short period of time since our last meeting, Jian Chen has already become a Saint Ruler? Even if his talent is unprecedented in all of history, he shouldn't be able to become a Saint Ruler at such a young age! What has he done to gain this power?” The Saint Ruler was stuck in a tumultuous situation and was unable to remain calm. With Jian Chen becoming a Saint Ruler in a single leap, his heart was about to give out from the shock.

“No. He can't be a Saint Ruler. He's still using the power of the world to fly.” Noticing the fault in his earlier thoughts, the Saint Ruler realized that Jian Chen wasn't a Saint Ruler. However, there was no more time to think about this matter since Jian Chen's fearsome punch was about to make contact with his chest.

He knew that the strength in Jian Chen's fist wasn't weak by any means. Therefore, the Saint Ruler immediately brought forth his Saint Force from his body to surround his own right hand. With such a tremendous amount of Saint Force gathered, the light, that was reflected into his surroundings, looked as if it was warping space. From this, it could be seen just how much power was contained in the Saint Ruler's fist.

His strength was noticeably a few notches higher than Jiede Tai's strength.

“Bang!”

The fists smashed against one another with a thunderous explosion. The space around the impact zone trembled as a tremendous shockwave rippled out with the force of an erupting volcano. Like a devastating storm ravaging the area, the environment around Jian Chen and the Saint Ruler was immediately torn apart without mercy. Right at the epicenter, several cracks could be seen in the space there, slowly starting to heal over itself.

The two fighters were obscured by the fallout of their strikes, so none of the spectators could see just what was happening inside. All they could feel was the earth beneath them violently tremble, threatening to split apart as pieces of stone tumbled down from the valley cliffs. When they fell to the ground, a loud echo rang throughout the valley.

To the group, it was unknown just when Jiede Tai had gotten up from his seat, but his elderly figure could be seen towering in front of everyone else with both of his hands out in front of him. Just barely, a transparent barrier could be seen protecting Ming Dong and the rest of the group from the fallout.

Long before the battle, Jian Chen commanded Jiede Tai to protect the group's safety at all costs. Thus, Jiede Tai had to give up his dignity as a Saint Ruler to personally protect the mere Earth Saint Masters, and even the ones who weren't that, with his own

hands.

No longer was there any ground to stand on under the group's feet. With the fallout utterly destroying the place, only the table they had placed there was left unharmed due to the barrier. If not for this barrier, the group would have fallen down.

Whether it was the Heaven Saint Masters of the Flame Mercenaries or the Sect of Dragon and Tiger, both sides found themselves knocked for a loop, and some of them temporarily lost the ability to take flight. Frightened, both sides retreated even farther away to avoid a repeat. This energy was completely different than when two Heaven Tier Battle Skill collided, trying to withstand it would be foolhardy for even them.

Forming another barrier between his hands, Jiede Tai enveloped the group and lifted them to a nearby mountain peak several kilometers away.

Dugu Feng and Ming Dong's eyes were glued to the sight of the barrier, and both thunderstruck in the face.

"This — this is a barrier! You-you're a Saint Ruler!" Ming Dong's eyes grew as wide as copper plates when he cried out in alarm. Even Dugu Feng had let out an uncharacteristically loud shout. The two of them were now staring at Jiede Tai with a new sense of fear and respect.

Jiede Tai's eyes swept to look at Ming Dong for a brief moment, but he did not answer him. Instead, he turned his head back to

look at the battle far away.

Having seen Ming Dong's expression, Nubis let out a derisive snort in disdain from aside Jiede Tai, "A Saint Ruler and nothing more. What is there to be amazed about?"

Ming Dong hadn't even heard the off-handed remark of Nubis since his entire being was focused on the existence that Jiede Tai was. This was an entity that could fight against the Saint Ruler of the Sect of Dragon and Tiger.

"Senior, please go save Jian Chen. The Saint Ruler of the Sect of Dragon and Tiger is a senior figure that has been a Saint Ruler for many years. Jian Chen isn't an opponent for him. Only you can fight that Saint Ruler!" Ming Dong frantically urged. Jian Chen was a Heaven Saint Master to Ming Dong, and was therefore a powerless individual in front of a Saint Ruler. With the few months that they were apart, Ming Dong didn't dare believe that Jian Chen would be capable of making a breakthrough to become a Saint Ruler. No matter how much he was concerned for him, Jian Chen was already in the middle of a battle with the Saint Ruler. That previous shockwave, which left a void in the area and destroyed the landscape, had already left Ming Dong completely unaware of what was happening, so naturally he believed that Jian Chen was in mortal danger.

"Senior, please save my brother!" Tearing up, Bi Lian's heart had long since leaped to her throat. It was a fact to her that her brother was strong, but a being as terrifying as a Saint Ruler was not a person that she thought Jian Chen could fight against.

“Senior...”

With the revelation of Jiede Tai’s strength, everyone began to beg and implore him, clutching at the straws to life. The concern they felt for Jian Chen had already reached a breaking point. They didn’t believe Jian Chen had the strength to fight a Saint Ruler. The initial burst of energy had traumatized them senseless. They feared that the might of the Saint Ruler had already left Jian Chen in perilous straits.

Originally, Jiede Tai didn’t wish to bother with them, but then remembering that these anxious people were all close friends with Jian Chen, he relented. “Worry not. The Saint Ruler might be one that has reached the Fourth Heavenly Layer, but Jian Chen will be more than enough to take care of him.”

His words stunned the entire group of people there. Jian Chen was capable of fighting a Saint Ruler at the Fourth Heavenly Layer? That was something everyone didn’t expect to hear.

“Boom!” There was almost no time given for them to think when yet another explosion rocked the battlefield. Ripples of energy flew across the sky, reshaping the earth around them. Such power was capable of terraforming the earth, mountain peaks within a few kilometers distance crumbled apart.

All that could be seen was the Saint Ruler making a retreat with a grim expression on his face. His right arm gave a slight tremble as it drooped down powerlessly. The second time he had collided with Jian Chen, Jian Chen had enforced his fist with Chaotic Force to boost its destructive force. If not for the Saint Ruler’s strength

at the Fourth Heavenly Layer, it would have been very likely that his right arm would have shattered apart.

“O’ great Saint Ruler from the Sect of Dragon and Tiger. Where has your superior attitude gone now? Did you not say you’d make me die a violent death? Then why have you not injured me yet? Is it because you can’t deal with a junior like me?” Jian Chen mocked the Saint Ruler. Using the Illusionary Flash, he disappeared and reappeared right in front of the Saint Ruler with a fist ready to strike him down with the appropriate force.

Growing ashen in the face, the Saint Ruler felt an unbearable amount of shame and humiliation wash over him. There was no way out of this embarrassing situation with how Jian Chen spoke.

Indignation flooded the Saint Ruler’s eyes and Saint Force gathered in his right arm shortly afterward, restoring his right arm back to its original state. A fiery-red machete materialized in his right hand before it came arcing toward Jian Chen’s head. As it traveled through the air, the machete left behind a fiery crack through the world space.

In the short two exchanges he had with Jian Chen, the Saint Ruler had somehow been forced by Jian Chen to use the Saint Weapon he hadn’t used in a very long time!

Unflinchingly, Jian Chen slammed his fist against the Saint Weapon.

When fist met Saint Weapon, the fist repelled the Saint Weapon

while sustaining a bone deep cut. As soon as the cut appeared, blood came spraying out.

Barely any time past, however, before the blood clotted. Even the wound itself had seemingly regenerated in no time at all without a trace or scar to be seen.

“Im--impossible!” Even though he saw the wound himself, the Saint Ruler didn’t dare believe his eyes.

He had used his very own personal Saint Weapon, but it did nothing but leave an inconsequential wound on Jian Chen’s fist! Not only that, it even healed as soon as it was inflicted — the Saint Ruler was left with nothing but the utmost shock.

“Impossible! Simply impossible!” The Saint Ruler repeated to himself. Unwilling to accept the scene in front of him, the Saint Ruler borrowed the powers of space to teleport to Jian Chen’s front to deliver a swift chop into him. This one stroke was further enhanced with the powers of space to allow it to travel even faster than before. Even Jian Chen wouldn’t be left with enough time to respond. After all, this was a move that could only be accomplished by understanding the profound mysteries of the world.

The trajectory of the blade charged for Jian Chen’s waist and successfully drew some blood. The might behind this stroke was powerful, but it failed to bisect Jian Chen in two as the Saint Ruler expected, but at the very least, it had left Jian Chen with a serious wound. Furthermore, it allowed him to inject his Qi into Jian Chen’s innards to try and destroy him from the insides.

But before he could try to do so, the Chaotic Force inside of Jian Chen's body instantly devoured the Qi.

"Jiede Tai, Nubis, fight with me!" Jian Chen commanded. With the three of them united, the Saint Ruler from the Sect of Dragon and Tiger would be completely outclassed. Jiede Tai was someone that couldn't even injure Jian Chen, let alone the Saint Ruler of the Sect of Dragon and Tiger. To begin with, Jian Chen wasn't even someone who could step in the same realm as they. The mysteries of the world were not something to be belittled.

He had a decent understanding of the Illusionary Flash, but not anything that could contend with a Saint Ruler.

From far away, Jiede Tai and Nubis immediately flew forward to stand against the Saint Ruler from the Sect of Dragon and Tiger together.

"You two are Saint Rulers!" Even though he had reached the Fourth Heavenly Layer himself, going against two other Saint Rulers was no easy task. To have a two versus one fight like this would put him at a disadvantage by forcing him on the defensive.

A battle between the four would be extremely intense. The heavens would fall and the earth would shatter. The sun and moon themselves wouldn't be able to cast any light once these four began to battle. Even a thousand of kilometers away, strong individual were able to feel the slight tremors of the battle.

Naturally, the Saint Ruler of the Sect of Dragon and Tiger soon found himself backed against a wall. It took only a short moment for the four to inflict a serious wound and dash away the previously heroic look on the Saint Ruler's face.

“Today we behead a saint! You'll rest here forever!” Jian Chen laughed as he brought a Chaotic Force filled fist into the back of the Saint Ruler, causing him to spit out a mouthful of blood. The offensive might of this fist was far stronger than what the Saint Ruler could handle.

“Hahaha, beheading a saint... very well! Today, we'll behead a Saint Ruler!” Nubis laughed out loud before clawing at the Saint Ruler's chest. He stripped away part of the man's chest, causing the man to scream out loud in pain.

Chapter 643: Escaping After Being Beaten

“Hahaha, beheading a saint....very well! Today, we’ll behead a Saint Ruler!” Nubis laughed out loud before clawing at the Saint Ruler’s chest and stripping away part of his chest to cause the man to scream out loud in pain.

“Beheading a saint? You’ve not the ability!” The Saint Ruler spat malevolently. Disappearing from the three’s line of sight, the Saint Ruler then reappeared a hundred meters away by using the powers of space.

His figure now was a haphazard one. His hair was a mess, his face was pale from blood loss, and his previously white robes were torn and dyed red from his blood. No longer was he the same elegant figure from before the battle.

Utilizing the Illusionary Flash, Jian Chen caught up to the Saint Ruler and began to attack him again so as to avoid giving the Saint Ruler any time to breathe. Nubis and Jiede Tai soon afterwards caught up to surround the Saint Ruler.

Vehemently, the Saint Ruler glowered at Jian Chen. “Jian Chen, I’ll remember this day.” He spat between gritted teeth.

“There’ll be a day in the future that I’ll return this twofold onto you!” Without further ado, the Saint Ruler disappeared into thin air to escape from the area, disappearing from sight and leaving behind the Heaven Saint Masters.

Having seen the Saint Ruler run away, Jian Chen let out a sigh of regret. “He’s escaped, what a shame. Today was a great chance to kill him!”

Staring off into the direction in which the Saint Ruler ran, Nubis spoke, “How could a Saint Ruler be that easy to be killed? Unless in front of an indomitable might, a Saint Ruler can escape without a worry. His strength was of the Fourth Heavenly Layer, a tier higher than both Jiede Tai and I. If his comprehension of the mysteries of the world is far better, there would be no way for us to chase up to him.”

Jian Chen looked to Nubis. As a Golden-Striped Silver Snake, Nubis’ fighting strength was unbelievable. Those of the same rank of it wouldn’t be able to fight Nubis, and even those of a rank higher than Nubis would find themselves at a stalemate. Furthermore, as a Golden-Striped Silver Snake, Nubis had access to a venom that was known as one of the three strongest on the continent.

Throughout the entire battle, Nubis hadn’t bothered to use his venom and still managed to injure the Saint Ruler. In fact, Nubis had only shown a mediocre amount of his strength so that he would be seen as equal to Jiede Tai in strength. But it was because of this deception that Jian Chen felt rather unhappy, but he didn’t say anything about it.

“A Saint Ruler is hard to kill. If they wished to run, then it’ll be hard to give chase to one that can leap a thousand kilometers if they wished. Without a tracing seal of some sort, they’d be able to escape from the normal range of detection. But even then this way

of running requires a hefty price.” Jiede Tai spoke in agreement with Nubis.

Narrowing his eyes, Jian Chen asked, “Then how would we kill him?”

For a while, the two of them were quite. It was Jiede Tai that spoke up first, however. “To kill a Fourth Heavenly Layer Saint Ruler requires one of the two conditions. The first is to have a Saint Tier Battle Skill. The second is to be a Seventh Heavenly Layer Saint Ruler at the very least. With a Saint Ruler of that might, a Fourth Heavenly Layer Saint Ruler has no means of escape.”

“Then killing a Saint Ruler isn’t as easy as I thought.” Jian Chen muttered under his breath. According to this knowledge, killing a Saint Ruler wouldn’t be as easy as he thought.

From far away, the ten Heaven Saint Masters saw that their Saint Ruler had ran away in defeat. Turning pale in fright, each one of them immediately made a hasty retreat away from the area as well.

Noticing their movements, a sharp glint entered Jian Chen’s eye. “Since you’re here, leaving now won’t be as easy as you think!” Swinging his palm, a tremendous amount of energy flew towards the Heaven Saint Master and locked the space around them. Then, the energy slammed into several of them without further ado.

“Boom!” When the energy slammed into them, several of the Heaven Saint Masters were killed instantaneously and fell back

down to the ground as a result. For the Sixth Cycle Heaven Saint Master sectmaster Kris, the Fifth Cycle Heaven Saint Master vice-sectmaster and another elder, they were able to escape death with serious wounds. But flight was still capable for them.

“We’re going!” Kris let out a raspy cry as he wielded the wind element in the world to encircle his body and hasten his speed out of the area with the other two.

Jian Chen didn’t bother to give chase or kill them all. With the power he had now, he felt disinclined to try to attack them again.

“Let’s head back now!” Jian Chen spoke. With the two Saint Rulers, Jian Chen returned to where Ming Dong and the rest were on the mountain.

“Jian Chen, don’t tell me you’ve made a breakthrough into the Saint Ruler realm in the few months you were away?”

“Brother, you’re hurt--are you okay?!”

The simultaneous voices of Ming Dong and seven other voices called out at once in great concern and relief. As it were, Jian Chen’s strength caused a great deal of conflicting emotions in them.

Not too far away, the several Heaven Saint Masters of the Flame Mercenaries stared at the young Jian Chen with a strange expression. He was far younger than they were, but the battle

between him and the Saint Ruler of the Sect of Dragon and Tiger had left them in amazement.

In the short times they didn't see each other, Jian Chen had managed to step onto the realms of the Saint Rulers. This was the realm that many of them saw as the ultimate finish line, the realm that they all coveted. But Jian Chen had somehow managed to arrive there with barely any trouble at all.

For a while, each one of them could barely hide their jealous admiration. Some of them were even a little envious, but still respected him.

The distance between a Heaven Saint Master and a Saint Ruler was separated by the river as wide as the cosmic river. As he was now, Jian Chen was a figure that Heaven Saint Masters should respect.

But what they didn't know was that Jian Chen was still a Heaven Saint Master and not an actual Saint Ruler.

After this one battle, the strengths of Jian Chen, Jiede Tai, and Nubis were shown to the entirety of the Flame Mercenaries. With three Saint Rulers presiding over them, the status of the Flame Mercenaries would flourish even more. Even the problem that arised with the leak of the tungsten alloy deposit would be completely suppressed by this.

They personally saw Jian Chen, Jiede Tai, and Nubis beat a Saint Ruler into retreating. Then, they saw Jian Chen personally kill

nearly ten Heaven Saint Masters with a single strike. From what they witnessed today, they all knew that the Flame Mercenaries had what it took to be able to overlook the entire continent.

With Jian Chen's revealed skill, they couldn't even possibly imagine just what height his strength would reach in just a small amount of time.

Having successfully beaten back the Sect of Dragon and Tiger, the Flame Mercenaries returned to the palace.

Within the palace, each of the highest ranking members of the Flame Mercenaries were gathered for a conference.

"Since the tungsten alloy is revealed, we'll have no need to hide it anymore. Start mining it without the secrecy so we can mine them all out as swiftly as we can. We can avoid another unforeseen accident this way." Jian Chen spoke seriously. Although the Flame Mercenaries now had the strength to equal even the Shi family, tungsten alloy was far too valuable to be left alone on the continent. With such a tremendous deposit, he was worried that another force as strong as the Sect of Dragon and Tiger would show up.

"We've already starting the mining process, but progress is very slow due to the density and amount of ores. Even now, we've gone a slow way and only managed a small amount. We've even employed the finest artisans to construct the best tungsten armor to be made for our Flame Mercenaries to use however." You Yue reported.

Nodding his head in satisfaction, Jian Chen spoke, “With how large the deposit is, it’d be best if we get more people to work on it. This is a matter that shouldn’t be delayed.”

As Jian Chen was conducting the meeting over the tungsten alloy, news of what had transpired between the Sect of Dragon and Tiger and the Flame Mercenaries flowed across the continent like wildfire. The energy that had been blasted away from the area could be felt by Heaven Saint Masters within a certain proximity, and each one of them were shocked by the sensation.

A battle between Saint Rulers was not often seen on the continent. That was due to the fact that most Saint Rulers were hermits that barely ventured out, let alone fought.

News like this had caught the eye of the strongest in other areas. Many Heaven Saint Masters had even gathered around the battlefield in interest and inquired the members of the Flame Mercenaries of what happened in great detail.

With them making their inquiries, they’ve quickly learned that the leader of the Flame Mercenaries had reached the Saint Ruler realm and had also two other Saint Rulers acting with him in the group. The outsiders had been astounded by that and how strong the Flame Mercenaries were in general.

Thousands of kilometers away within a deep cave, the Saint Ruler of the Sect of Dragon and Tiger sat within it with blood pooling around his body. With the help of a continuous supply of

Sixth Class Radiant Spirit Pills, his wounds were already healed to a substantial degree.

“Jian Chen, the Flame Mercenaries, I’ll make you regret this day. Just you wait. Don’t think that having three Saint Rulers makes you invincible. There’ll be a day where this old man will repay this humiliation tenfold! Forget about the tungsten alloy!” The elder spoke ominously.

Chapter 644: Gathering Helpers

It took seven days for the Saint Ruler from the Sect of Dragon and Tiger to fully recuperate and heal from all the wounds he had sustained. Now that he could leave the cave, the Saint Ruler immediately blurred away into the world. Harmonizing with space itself, he traveled countless of kilometers within an extremely fast pace.

Half a day later, the Saint Ruler reappeared at the depths of a particular mountain range after traveling for so long.

The depths to this mountain range was a forbidden area for humans to step in, but there was a manor that not many people knew about in here. Even during the day, not a single human could be seen, or any sound at all for that matter, but the ground was kept nice and clean somehow.

Descending down to the ground, the Saint Ruler floated in front of the gates to the manor, “The Sect of Dragon and Tiger has come to pay a visit to the Four Harmonies Manor!” His voice was soft, but the magic in the air had allowed his words to be spoken loud enough for the entire manor to hear it.

The Four Harmonies Manor wasn’t something that many people on the continent knew. It was a place that a single hermit sect had once sealed off so that they could cultivate in peace without having need to go out. For thousands of years, they had never once interfered with the outside world. It was only when they sought out disciples that they would venture out to find someone suitable with their teachings and help prolong their sect’s lifetime.

But other than that, the existence of this manor was something that only a few select clans and sects knew about. The Saint Ruler of the Sect of Dragon and Tiger was one of these few.

“A friend has come! What a pleasant surprise. Situ Qing, it’s been a few hundred years since your last visit, come on in! Let us sit down and have a nice talk.” A calm but elderly voice called out from within the manor.

Letting out a laugh, the Saint Ruler flew inside before coming to a stop at the very center of the halls. Right in front of the hall gates, a middle-aged man wearing black robes could be seen already waiting for him.

“Senior, our teacher is waiting inside for you, please go in!” The middle-aged man spoke to the Saint Ruler reverently.

This middle-aged man was only a Heaven Saint Master in strength and was thus not someone the Saint Ruler could bother to care for. Not even giving him a glance, he strode on in.

The halls were of rather ordinary decoration. The wooden walls looked as if they had already managed to weather through countless years of wear and tear to look more like the walls to a peasant farmer’s home. At the very center of the room was an old-fashioned circular table with a sackcloth wearing elder there sipping a cup of tea. The fragrant aroma from the tea spread throughout the room and had a relaxing effect to it. As it appeared, this tea was a treasured item in this place.

Walking straight into the room, the Saint Ruler sat down right in front of the other elder unceremoniously and stared at the tea-drinking elder. “Even after so many years since our last meeting, you’re still living a life of pleasure it seems.”

“I’ve lived my entire life like so. Uncontaminated by the outside world, and unpolluted by its dust. To live the life I’ve wanted, I’ve separated from the disputes of human society to attain the enlightenment of my heart.” The elder laughed.

Staring at the elder, the Saint Ruler let out one final sigh, “I’ve can’t see through you anymore. Your strength has beaten mine.”

“Break away from your mind and body and become detached from yourself. Free yourself from the fetters and chains of the world. Situ Qing, its been a hundred years now, and your strength is still where it was from then. Perhaps you should make your sect seclude itself completely from the outside world. Don’t bother with the outside world. Don’t worry for who lives or who dies. Don’t care for who wins or who loses. None of that matters. In your current state, what use is there to be in the secular world?” The sackclothed man spoke slowly.

The Saint Ruler did not answer him for a while. “We can talk about that latter. Ge Qiu, I actually came here for a request to ask of you.”

Draining the rest of his tea in a single gulp, the elder placed the now empty cup back onto the table. “I know. I can see that you’ve

been injured recently. You must have come across trouble in the outside world.”

The Saint Ruler nodded his head with a dangerous light entering his eyes from the memories. “Ge Qiu, I hope that you’ll be able to lend me an arm. My enemy is far too terrifying to let live. If given too much time, then I will surely die in the future.”

“Alas!” The elder sighed. “Situ Qing, you have too many complaints in your heart. To continue on like this would not be beneficial to you. Resolve the issue as best as you can, there is no point in a situation where only one can live.”

Shaking his head, the Saint Ruler replied, “Impossible. My enemy is merciless and has a heart that only knows revenge. Our grievances are far too deep now to simply waive. Between him and I, only one can live.”

“And to try and resolve an issue with someone of the younger generation is another problem.” He continued with gritted teeth. “It is unsure if he’d even accept or not, but to even try to do so would be a great slap to my face.”

“Situ Qing, you know me. No matter how deep our friendship goes, I will not help you kill another.” The elder sighed.

“I know that, Ge Qiu. I won’t ask for you to help me kill. The enemy has three Saint Rulers in total with them being at the Third Heavenly Layer at the very strongest. I wish for you to help me stop two of them.” Situ Qing pleaded.

The elder hesitated. Debating about it for a while, he finally replied, “Very well, Situ Qing. For the sake of our friendship, I’ll have help you this very once. But this will be a private matter between us two and not with the Four Harmonies Manor. I will not help you kill anyone.”

.....

After discussing the matter with the elder, Situ Qing and he left the Four Harmonies Manor together. Traveling in a certain direction for an hour, the two of them finally arrived at a hidden cave.

It was brightly lit within the cave thanks to the torches. With how they danced and flickered to illuminate the interior of the cave, a single blue-robed elder could be seen seated on top of a giant boulder in the center. Almost as if stuck within a deep meditative stance, the elder did not look as if he noticed the two newcomers.

Not a footstep could be heard from Situ Qing as he walked into the cave. Looking at the elder, he spoke, “Bi Hai, it’s been thirty years. How’s your recovery going now?”

“I’ve been fully healed since twenty years ago. Situ Qing, say it, why have you come for me?” The elder spoke calmly from his seat.

“Bi Hai, I’ve come here today with a request for you to help me with today.” Situ Qing spoke.

“You saved my life thirty years ago. Whatever it is that you need my help with, I owe you that at the very least. What do you wish for me to help you with this time?” The elder opened his eyes to look at Situ Qing.

Situ Qing hesitated for a moment. To have this blue-robed elder owe him a favor was not a very easy thing to do. He was in fact wondering if using this favor to deal with Jian Chen was worth it or not.

“Pah, Jian Chen’s talent is far too terrifying. He must be dealt with at once so that he won’t be given time to grow in the future.” Resolved, Situ Qing gritted his teeth and spoke, “Bi Hai, I’ll have to use this favor to have you help me deal with a person.”

“What is their strength, and when do we strike!” The elder spoke.

“A junior that you should be able to kill with with ease. The sooner we strike, the better. In fact, it’d be best if we go now.” Situ Qing spoke.

“If that’s how it is, then that’s how it will be.” The elder opened his eyes completely to rise up into the air without a sound.

“Bi Hai, after this matter is over, why not come to my Sect of Dragon and Tiger.” Situ Qing asked expectantly.

But the elder shook his head expressionlessly, “My enemy is far too strong. Even I am helpless to fight them. Are you not afraid that your Sect of Dragon and Tiger would be destroyed as a result of having me join?”

Situ Qing blanched without another word. Despite being very willing to invite an expert such as him to join his sect, the enemies of Bi Hai frightened even him.

.....

Jian Chen, Nubis, and Jiede Tai spent the following days overseeing the Flame Mercenaries while prepared to defend themselves from a counterattack from the Sect of Dragon and Tiger. Their enemy was without a doubt a powerful foe and added to the pressure of mining the tungsten alloy.

With three Saint Rulers protecting them, the entire Flame Mercenaries had been motivated to unprecedented levels. Their war banners flew in the air above where the tungsten alloy was while the very best artisans they could find and employ worked the ore to the best of their abilities everyday. Each end of the day, the ore they managed to harvest had been enough to make anyone that saw it envious.

Chapter 645: Manufacturing Radiant Spirit Pills

In the blink of an eye, three days passed by since the Saint Ruler was defeated. Life in the kingdom grew peaceful, but with the fact that three Saint Rulers were ruling over the Flame Mercenaries caused a wave of smaller mercenary groups and members to come ask to join the Flame Mercenaries in hopes of gaining the status of being one of them.

Jian Chen and the entire group went through a series of secret discussion before finally deciding that they would take in the best members into the group to supplement their strength.

The Flame Mercenaries of today was not the same as the ones from before.

The additions to the Flame Mercenaries had naturally gave no small amount of joy to the ones already in there. To them, the more that joined the Flame Mercenaries, the more honor that would be brought to them and the more resplendent they would be to the rest of the continent. Those that were not able to join the Flame Mercenaries had been disheartened, but they didn't give up on the hope just yet. If anything, they felt all the more motivated to go back and focus on their cultivation even more so that they could meet the standards in the future.

Day after day, the Flame Mercenaries swelled up in size. As if travelling to see a famous landmarks, a multitude of Earth Saint Masters came forward to join the Flame Mercenaries. There were even three Heaven Saint Masters that came for that same reason.

In a short burst of time, the Flame Mercenaries increased in numbers and power once more.

The entire reason behind this exponential growth was due to the fact that there were three Saint Rulers acting as the ones in charge for the Flame Mercenaries. Individuals like these were a symbol of the utmost might that were practically unrivalled in strength. While not completely invincible, they may as well be in the eyes of the average mercenary.

By noon, Jian Chen was seated within a luxurious room that once used to be the bedroom of the old king of the Heavenly Eagle Kingdom. Out of the entire palace, this was the most luxurious room.

Within the room, Jian Chen was currently discussing some of his experiences on cultivation with Bi Lian. For the sake of guiding her onto the path of cultivation, he wanted to make sure that there would be barely any deviations or side paths as possible.

“A report for the captain! Alchemist He Yun asks for an audience!” At that moment, a guard appeared right outside the room to speak respectfully to Jian Chen.

“Allow him entry!” Jian Chen spoke at once.

“Yes, captain!” The guard immediately retreated out of the room to bring the alchemist in.

A thin and sallow He Yun came walking into the room. Compared to his initial appearance, He Yun was practically an entirely different person. In order to accomplish the task set for him by Jian Chen, He Yun worked without rest. So by the time he had managed to refine the ten thousand year old into a successful product, he was on the brink of fainting.

“Report for the captain! Despite what the heavens might have had in store for me, I’ve successfully procured two pills from the essence of the Geofruit!” He Yun bowed down to Jian Chen while speaking as respectfully as he could. In his hands was a single wooden box that was presented for Jian Chen to take.

Opening up the wooden box, Jian Chen could see two small bottles resting inside. Gingerly taking one of the bottles and uncorking it, a fragrant aroma immediately wafted into the room and dulled the senses of everyone in it.

Basked in the powerful but docile power of the pill, Jian Chen nodded his head in satisfaction. “Master He Yun, you’ve worked hard these past two days. For your assistance, I will be sure to treat you well. What might it be that you desire, I, Jian Chen, will do my best to reward you.”

He Yun hesitated to speak for a moment before bowing, “Captain, I’ve no other request but that my family would be able to live here in peace.”

Laughing, Jian Chen replied, “How could such a small request be enough to reward you for your efforts? Master He Yun, I’ve already prepared a set of rules for the Flame Mercenaries. As

mercenaries that often have to fight and risk their lives on a daily basis, injuries are unavoidable. I wish to establish an alchemy hall where pills can be manufactured to specifically treat the Flame Mercenaries. Master He Yun, would you be interested in the spot as the hallmaster? From today onwards, the entire alchemy hall will be yours to govern.”

Upon listening to Jian Chen, He Yun had a joyous look to his face, “If the captain sees this one that highly, then I, He Yun, will work to my dying breath to serve the Flame Mercenaries.” He Yun spoke. He knew that the Flame Mercenaries were strong, and if he were to become an alchemical hallmaster, it would bring all the more glory to his own family. He had not been expecting this outcome, but it had been to his liking.

“Master He Yun, on your way back, please assemble all of the alchemists you know. From today onwards, the alchemy hall will be yours to govern. As long as the Flame Mercenaries have enough pills to recover with, then the business of the hall will be up to you order as you will.” Jian Chen spoke.

“As the captain decrees!” He Yun spoke respectfully.

As Jian Chen prepared to dismiss the alchemist, a sudden thought struck his mind. “Master He Yun, what might you know about the alchemical procedure of procuring Radiant Spirit pills?”

“Captain.” He Yun hesitated. “While Radiant Spirit pills aren’t hard to make, it requires the assistance of a Radiant Saint Master to create even a small amount. Does the captain wish to create some?”

“Correct. That was the meaning I had in mind. Master He Yun, what exactly is required to make one of these?” Jian Chen asked. When it came to the miraculous effects of these pills, Jian Chen was all too experienced with them. He had once wanted to try and make them himself, but because no alchemist or procedure was found, he hadn’t been able to fulfill the hope he had til now.

“Captain, a Radiant Spirit pill isn’t hard to make. It’s rather simple and only needs a few simple ingredients to make. But a Radiant Saint Master must infuse their Radiant Saint Force into it and then sealed so that it doesn’t escape.”

“But to infuse Radiant Saint Force into a pill is the same as having a person stick their finger into stone. It isn’t easy to do, and not many Radiant Saint Masters can do so. Thus, Radiant Spirit pills aren’t easy to make in large quantities.”

“Master He Yun, when you return, procure several Radiant Spirit pills for me. I will go find a person that’ll be able to do this task.” Jian Chen spoke.

Chapter 646: Class 3 Spirit Pills

“Yes, captain! I’ll make haste to procure a Radiant Spirit pill shell upon my return!” He Yun replied before leaving the chamber.

After He Yun left, Jian Chen and Bi Lian were the only two who remained in the brilliant room.

Jian Chen’s eyes rested upon the wooden box on the table with unhidden glee apparent on his face. With these pills, Bi Lian would undergo a transformation that would give her a talent for cultivation. With this pill, she would face no bad obstacles in her path.

“Lian’er, hurry up and eat it. From now on, you won’t ever need to worry about your strength being behind.” Jian Chen handed the bottle to her.

The aroma coming from the bottle had been enough to send Bi Lian into a tizzy. This pill was made from a ten-thousand-year-old heavenly resource. She hadn’t ever seen of a thousand year old heavenly resource before, let alone a ten-thousand-year-old one.

She was once upon a time the golden daughter of the Yun family. A thousand-year-old heavenly resource would have been an undeniably precious treasure for her family back then, but be given something a thousand times more precious than that, she felt conflicted. At the same time, she was touched that such an item was given to her. Such consideration like this filled her entire body with warmth.

“Brother, thank you. Aside from my mother, you are the only one that treats me so well in this world!” Bi Lian blinked away her tears. She could barely hold back the droplets flowing from her eyes.

Jian Chen laughed and wiped away some of her tears with his hand. “Silly girl, you’re my little cousin. By all rights, I should be treating you well. Now, let’s have you take this pill first and talk later. Who knows how much time it’ll take for you to completely absorb it all.” Jian Chen spoke before putting the pill into her mouth.

As soon as the pill passed through her throat and into her stomach, a warm but docile energy began to spill forth from the pill and flow throughout her body.

Subconsciously closing her eyes, Bi Lian tried her best to use the meditation techniques Jian Chen had taught to her to help guide the energy through her body. At the same time, Jian Chen closed his eyes as well to use his will to assist Bi Lian in her attempt to convert the energy into her own.

The Geofruit was a ten-thousand-year-old heavenly resource. The Spiritual Qi in it was far more potent than anyone could possibly imagine. To have the Spiritual Qi split into two pills only showed just how much energy there was in total. It would take several dozen days for a normal person to absorb the energy, but with the help of Jian Chen, Bi Lian would only need half a day to absorb the energy within the pill.

With the completion of the absorption, Bi Lian's body would undergo a complete transformation from an average body to a body completely suited for cultivation. Her aptitude for cultivation would skyrocket to a level comparable to Dugu Feng or Huang Luan at the very least.

A ten-thousand-year-old heavenly resource could alter the human body. It was an item that could make a Saint Ruler drool at the mouth, and its miraculous effects made thousand-year-old heavenly resource insignificant.

Not only was her body altered, Bi Lian's strength also skyrocketed exponentially. In just this half day alone, she went from someone who hadn't even condensed her Saint Weapon to a being that surpassed the limitations to breakthrough to become a Saint Master. All that was left was a single step more to become a Great Saint Master.

Indeed, a ten-thousand-year old heavenly resource was life-altering. Its effects on a person were miraculous, but to use them to only alter someone's body was a simple matter. Even the mighty Qinhuang Kingdom would be loathed to use it due to the difficulty of obtaining a heavenly resource. In short, it was an absolute waste to use it on a normal person, and not a single person would be willing to go through such a waste.

"Brother, I've become a Saint Master now! How unbelievable is this? In just half a day, my strength has gone from barely a Saint to a Saint Master!" Exuberant with just how much strength was coursing through her body, Bi Lian never thought that she would wield such power before.

The power of a Peak Saint Master was more than enough for Bi Lian!

Even Jian Chen himself felt happy to see the smile on Bi Lian's face. "Lian'er, hurry up and familiarize yourself with your new strength as fast as possible."

Thanks to the ten-thousand-year-old heavenly resource, she would experience no problems with her growth. If anything, her foundation in cultivation was set in stone now.

Afterward, Jian Chen gave a few more personal notes of how he would often circulate his strength to familiarize himself before leaving her in peace. She would have to stay in the room herself for better results. Although she was a Saint Master now, she became one far too fast. Thus, her Saint Force almost felt foreign rather than being as easy to operate as her arm. Time was needed to familiarize herself.

As soon as he walked out of the room, Jian Chen could see that the day was already getting dark. Realizing that an entire day had passed by, Jian Chen could sense that the night patrol were already making their rounds nearby. As the elites of the Flame Mercenaries, each one of these patrolmen were of exceptional strength.

The alchemist He Yun came scurrying over at this precise moment with a small box clutched to his chest. Fatigued, he said to Jian Chen, "Captain, your subordinate has managed to procure a

batch of Radiant Spirit pill shells as you ordered. They are all within this box.” He presented the box to Jian Chen.

Accepting the box offered to him, Jian Chen could see that there were several small palm-sized bottles all arranged nicely in it. Plenty of brown pills could be seen through the glass exterior of the bottles, but these pills looked rather unsimilar to the snow-white Radiant Spirit pills that Jian Chen was used to.

“Master He Yun, you said that Radiant Saint Force needed to be infused inside in order for these to be called Radiant Spirit pills, correct?” Jian Chen asked again.

“Correct. As long as Radiant Saint Force is infused, then the shell will seal in the Radiant Saint Force without a drop of it leaking.” He Yun answered.

“Master He Yun, you’ve worked hard. Go and take a proper rest for now.” Jian Chen dismissed He Yun before taking the box of pill shells to his own personal chambers. Instructing the maids and guards to not have anyone bother him, Jian Chen locked himself in his own room.

As it were, the room had gone through a complete rehaul in decoration. While plenty of things remained from the past, just as many things had been added to the room such as a nice and fluffy bed.

Jian Chen’s bedroom was the bedroom that the king of the past Heavenly Eagle kingdom once owned. The old decorations and

furniture that the king had once enjoyed were all gone. With Jian Chen being the new owner, there was no way You Yue and Bi Lian let that room possess lingering memories of its past owners.

On the bed was a completely white, fluffy, small tiger sleeping comfortably. In the past two days, it had managed to consume twenty-something thousand-year-old heavenly resources, and was in the midst of absorbing their energy.

Taking the small box to the middle of the bed, Jian Chen took out one of the bottles and cracked it open to take out several empty pill shells.

A series of slightly gray-brown pills tumbled out, but Jian Chen levitated them, keeping them from falling onto the ground, with his mind power.

These pills were thumb-sized. There was around thirty pills total.

Jian Chen found it extremely difficult to calm himself as he looked over each pill with his eyes. Whether or not these pills would become Radiant Spirit pills were completely reliant on the upcoming moment.

Jian Chen was no stranger to the precious nature of the Radiant Spirit pills. If they were said to be life-saving miracle drug, that saying would not be an exaggeration. If a person were to sustain serious injuries, that person could consume a Radiant spirit pill to aid in their recovery. It couldn't completely heal their wounds in one go, but it could at the very least temporarily stabilize their

conditions and prevent their body from further decay. If there were enough Radiant Spirit pills, they could even bring back a man on the brink of death to a healthy state. Their uses and effects were unquestionable to anyone.

However, the pills were rare in numbers and expensive in price. Radiant Spirit pills became extremely rare objects on the continent because of the wide-scale hoarding of what remained. Only a few top-class experts and households would possess them, but even they only owned a few.

The main reason why Jian Chen wanted to manufacture Radiant Spirit pills was because of his close friends and family. Should he make enough for them all, he wouldn't have to live each day concerned for their well-being should they come across an enemy. If something were to happen to them while he was away, the Radiant Spirit pills could at least prevent the worse from happening.

Refocusing on his thoughts, Jian Chen exhaled to stabilize himself. Closing his eyes, he began to separate the Radiant Saint Force from the world. He moved it into the space in front of him.

As things were, Jian Chen was a Sixth Class Radiant Saint Master. This meant that he belonged to the higher echelons of Radiant Saint Masters, so with practically just his mind alone, a faint flow of milky-white light started to converge in front of his chest. With time, this light grew brighter and brighter, and in no time at all, it became a rich-white sphere of light that illuminated the entire room in its warm white glow as if the room had become a world of snow.

As soon as Jian Chen was able to guide the Radiant Saint Force with his hands, he began to try to infuse the pill shells with the Radiant Saint Force. In the beginning, he came across some resistance as He Yun said before. To try and force his Radiant Saint Force inside was like stabbing a hole into a stone using the finger. The average person wouldn't be capable of that. This was the most difficult part of making a Radiant Spirit pill, and was also the most limiting stage in the process.

However, even this difficulty barely posed a challenge to him. He was a Sixth Class Radiant Saint Master with his powerful mind ability. Therefore, he was able to successfully infuse the pill shells with the Radiant Saint Force.

Jian Chen managed to fill the shells completely with an unending flow of Radiant Saint Force. The previously gray-colored shells began to turn milky-white before finally becoming as white as snow.

When the shells became completely white, it meant the pills had reached the utmost capacity of what they could contain. No matter how much Jian Chen tried, he couldn't add anymore Radiant Saint Force to them. The shell would only keep what it could contain while leaking out the surplus.

Ceasing his attempts, Jian Chen broke off control and allowed the concentrated Radiant Saint Force to dissipate into the air. Very quickly, the snowy-white room turned back to its normal dusky atmosphere.

With another thought, Jian Chen levitated the thirty Radiant Spirit pills into his hands. He admired his own handiwork with a satisfied smile, and knew that he had succeeded.

However, when he sensed just how much Radiant Saint Force was in them, his eyebrows furrowed together. “These have to be Class 3 Radiant Spirit pills, they’re very lacking in efficacy. What a shame that these pill shells limit how much Radiant Saint Force can be contained in them. Otherwise, I would have made even better pills.”

Chapter 647: The Theory Behind Pillmaking

Jian Chen was not too pleased with only making Class 3 Radiant Spirit Pills.

“I wonder what allows more Radiant Saint Force to be infused into the pills. Could the pill shells themselves be the limiting factor?” Jian Chen thought.

Storing the Radiant Spirit Pills he made into his Space Ring, Jian Chen exited his chambers. A soldier then led him to where He Yun was resting.

As the new hallmaster for alchemy, He Yun had a fair amount of status within the Flame Mercenaries now. Hence, He Yun had been given his own residential area within the palace.

It came as a large surprise to see that the high and mighty Saint Ruler of the Flame Mercenaries came to personally seek him out. Despite being an alchemist, which garnished him a decent amount of respect within the kingdom, even he would have to bend the knee and bow to a Heaven Saint Master, let alone a Saint Ruler that stood on top of even Heaven Saint Masters.

“There’s no need for work, master He Yun. I came here to ask several questions. Let us sit down and talk.” Jian Chen smiled kindly as he sat down at a nearby table.

“The captain only needs to ask for He Yun, and He Yun would come running as swiftly as possible! How could I dare have the

captain come see me?” Overwhelmed by Jian Chen’s kindness, he hurried to form a reply. Sitting down in the seat opposite of Jian Chen, He Yun grew nervous. He was in the presence of a Saint Ruler, and even if that Saint Ruler was many years his junior, He Yun was still extremely flustered.

On the Tian Yuan Continent, power dictated everything.

“Master He Yun, I came here this time to inquire about several aspects with the Radiant Spirit Pills. If I may, what are the highest level pills I could make with the pill shells you made for me.” Jian Chen asked.

“Captain, the pill shells I gave you were made using ordinary ingredients, so I think that the pill shells I made can only be Class 3 Radiant Spirit Pills at the very highest. The ingredients act as a limiter, sealing enough Radiant Saint Force to be classified as a Class 3 Radiant Spirit Pill. If one wishes to craft even higher-classed pills, then one must use even rarer ingredients to construct the shells.”

“Master He Yun, would you be able to help me craft higher-class pill shells then? I am in need of Radiant Spirit Pills no less than the sixth class.” Constructing Radiant Spirit Pills corresponded with the level of the Radiant Saint Master. Following that logic, Jian Chen would be able to craft Class 6 Radiant Spirit Pills since he was a Sixth Class Radiant Saint Master.

Thinking hard about the task, He Yun responded, “Captain, I have the ability to make the shells for Class 6 Radiant Spirit Pills, but the ingredients are far too precious. The pills require

ingredients at least a thousand years old. While not heavenly resources, they are still ingredients of expensive prices.”

“Master He Yun, make a list of whatever ingredients you need and I will have people collect them at once.”

Shortly afterward, a small list was made with the ingredients required to make a Class 6 Radiant Spirit Pill. With the list in hand, Jian Chen left He Yun to his own devices. He commanded people to gather the ingredients on the list as quickly as possible.

With Jian Chen personally commandeering the request, the ones who were called to serve were quick to return with the items. Only a single day was required for the ingredients to be gathered. The thousand-year-old ingredients, usually expensive in price, were found in the depths of a nearby mountain. Thus, they had been harvested swiftly.

With all the ingredients at hand, the newly recovered He Yun was sent straight back to his workshop to undergo the alchemical process. This time, it took two whole days for a hundred Radiant Spirit Pill shells to be made and given to Jian Chen.

Jian Chen wasted no time at all when the pill shells were given to him. Closing himself off in his room, he began to undergo the process of infusing Radiant Saint Force into them.

Crafting Class 6 Radiant Spirit Pills was far more difficult than crafting Class 3 Radiant Spirit Pills. Jian Chen was only able to craft three Class 6 Radiant Spirit Pills while taking the same

amount of time it took to craft thirty Class 3 Radiant Spirit pills. Since they were far more sturdy in shell, infusing Radiant Saint Force into them was far harder than their lower-grade counterparts. Jian Chen could only make three at his current skill level.

Half a day was spent by the time three Class 6 Radiant Spirit Pills were made. These pills were about a thumb in size and glowed with a milky-white light. Jian Chen levitated the pills in front of himself with a smile on his face.

The reason why he was crafting these Radiant Spirit Pills were for his friends and family. While he was a Radiant Saint Master, he couldn't always accompany them during their journeys. Should an unexpected danger befall them, a Radiant Spirit Pill could save their life in his place, so making some would take plenty of weight off his shoulders.

“Crafting three Class 6 Radiant Spirit Pills took up a fifth of my mental strength. Following that number, I should be able to craft fifteen pills before my energy is expended.” Jian Chen thought to himself. Looking at the nearby dozens of shell pieces, he muttered, “Three is not enough. I need to craft even more of them.” Having said that, Jian Chen floated another three pill shells. He then started to gather the Radiant Saint Force in the world, trying to infuse it with the pill shells once more.

The next few days were relatively calm. Absolutely nothing happened, and the Flame Mercenaries were able to continue with their mining without a hitch. Everyday was a new harvest of tungsten alloy, and the amount they had in store was accumulating

at an inconceivable rate.

The vein that was being mined became a heavily guarded area by the Flame Mercenaries. Practically every force they commanded stood there as silent watchers to prevent anything from happening.

Just as Jian Chen started on the third day of crafting the Class 6 Radiant Spirit Pills, an overwhelming might immediately flooded the area with its pressure. The clouds and wind in the sky immediately grew turbulent, and the overflowing energy in the world started to act up as well.

“Little Jian Chen, come out and accept your death!” An elderly voice boomed across the sky. Reverberating for kilometers around, the powerful voice had been loud enough to make the walls of the palace shake violently while some people felt their eardrums pop. Clapping their hands to their ears, the ones affected the most let out a wailing sound from pain.

Chapter 648: A Powerful Enemy

“Little Jian Chen, come out and accept your death!” An elderly voice boomed across the sky. Reverberating for kilometers around, the powerful voice had been loud enough to make the walls of the palace shake violently while some people felt their eardrums pop. Clapping their hands to their ears, the ones affected the most let out a wailing sound from pain.

Jian Chen’s eyes flew open instantly. He had been in the midst of infusing some pill shells with Radiant Saint Force. With just a thought, the gathered Radiant Saint Force flashed once before dissipating into the air.

“You’ve finally arrived and with friends!” Jian Chen muttered to himself. The urge to kill began to radiate from his eyes. He stored the three unfinished Radiant Saint Force into the bottles before he flashed away out of the palace.

Jian Chen looked very mysterious as he flew through the air with the wind element wrapped around his body, making it glow cyan.

As Jian Chen flew through the palace and up into the air, the aura leaking from him was majestic and ready for battle.

At the same time, another two bursts of energies made themselves known from the palace. The sudden occurrence of both led to the space around the palace to freeze up. With so many Saint Rulers gathered here, their auras were already clashing against one another with such pressure that everyone down below found it

hard to breathe. Their hearts were trying their best to keep beating, but their lungs seemed refuse to work, not letting them breathe.

The graceful white-robe wearing Jiede Tai and the proud gold-robe wearing Nubis flew out shortly after. They turned into beams of light as they followed Jian Chen into the sky.

Several seconds barely passed before Jian Chen, Nubis, and Jiede Tai were assembled several thousand meters in the air. Shoulder to shoulder, each one of them icily observed their opponents.

Right in front of them were three expressionless men. Of the three, one of them was the Saint Ruler of the Sect of Dragon and Tiger. The other two looked as if they were past their seventies, but their eyes were filled with an abstruse light reminiscent of the stars in the night sky.

Of these two, one of them wore a blue robe and had white hair that looked as if it had never experienced any grooming before. The elderly man's disheveled appearance made him look as though he was a beggar. His hands were crossed against his chest and his eyes seemed to be gauging the three figures in front of him.

The other wore robes made from what appeared to be sackcloth. Unlike his companion, his face was peaceful-looking. No killing intent could be detected from him, but there was a sharp aura that could be felt in its place. With these two factors, he resembled a being who would stand alone outside the secular world, but his eyes were by no means extraordinary. Combined with his simple clothes, this elder looked more like an elder enjoying a life of

peasantry out in the mountains.

Jian Chen's expressions hardened as he took in the three Saint Rulers. Three was a number that was more than enough to make him feel a great deal of pressure. It had been hard enough to completely subdue one Saint Ruler with three. By adding another two Saint Rulers with even more power to the mix, the situation would undoubtedly be worse off for him.

Peals of laughter erupted from the Saint Ruler from the Sect of Dragon and Tiger when he saw Jian Chen's hardened face. Snarling, he said, "Jian Chen, I've said it that day ago. The humiliation I've suffered will undoubtedly be returned tenfold to you. Today will be your deathday!"

"Do you really think you will be able to kill me?" Jian Chen asked emotionlessly. With his Chaotic Body and its ultimate defenses, he was sure that the Saint Ruler would be hardpressed to kill him.

"Jian Chen, the situation doesn't look good. I can't make out the strength of the other two. That means they're at the very least stronger than the one from the Sect of Dragon and Tiger." Jiede Tai grimly confided with Jian Chen.

Even Nubis clenched his fists so that the joints in his almost woman-like fingers popped one after another. "Jian Chen, this will not be easy. Their strengths are far too strong; that blue-robed elder is a Saint Ruler of the Fifth Heavenly Layer and the white-robed one is even stronger at the Sixth Heavenly Layer." Nubis' strength was at the same level as Jiede Tai, but as a Golden-Striped Silver Snake, he possessed something that was magical. He was

able to clearly divine the strength of the two Saint Rulers.

Blanching from shock, Jian Chen looked at the two other Saint Rulers. He hadn't thought that the ones that the Sect of Dragon and Tiger would invite would be that strong.

Now knowing the strength of his enemies, Jian Chen was no longer as confident as before. The gap between the two sides was just far too big to be made up for by any other means. A single Saint Ruler at the Fifth Heavenly Layer could easily dispatch of Nubis and Jiede Tai by himself. With a Sixth Heavenly Layer and a Fourth Heavenly Layer against him, Jian Chen would be powerless.

Hiding his right hand behind him, Jian Chen retrieved a jade stone from his Space Ring and crushed it without making a sound.

“Jian Chen, what do we do? We're no match for them!” Jiede Tai spoke in concern.

“How unexpected to come across such experts as soon as I step into the human world!” Nubis snarled. “There are many hidden dragons and tigers in this world it seems. Jian Chen, I'll fight the Sixth Heavenly Layer Saint Ruler. The other two will be up to you two.”

“Is that in your power?” Jian Chen asked in concern. The gaps between each Saint Ruler's Heavenly Layer were extremely large. Death would be inevitable for the Third Heavenly Layer Nubis to fight against the Sixth Heavenly Layer Saint Ruler.

“Aside from me, neither of you would be a match for him. I am a magical beast, don’t forget that. My strength isn’t comparable to a human of the same level, even more so as a beast from antiquity!” Nubis spoke.

“Since that’s the case, I should take care of that one. Your defenses are strong, but you are no Saint Ruler. You’ve no comprehension of the world mysteries, meaning that you do not possess the ability to fight him.”

“Let me handle the Saint Ruler from the Sect of Dragon and Tiger then.” Jian Chen spoke. The Chaotic Force in his dantian began to ripple across his entire body to maximize his defenses to their utmost limits.

On the other side, the Saint Ruler Situ Qing was also planning something similar, killing Jian Chen. “Ge Qiu, please stop the other two for me. Bi Hai, come help me kill Jian Chen.”

Bi Hai’s eyebrows knit together, “He’s using the elements in the world to fly. That means he isn’t even a Saint Ruler. To use the two of us against one, isn’t that using a bit too much for far too little?”

“Bi Hai, don’t underestimate him. This brat has a talent that outshines anyone else in history. Even you’ll be amazed. We must fight him together and kill him. If not, then he’ll cause no end of trouble for us.” The Saint Ruler spoke before charging at Jian Chen with Ge Qiu and Bi Hai not too far behind.

“Hiss!” Out of nowhere, the soul-piercing hiss of a snake could be heard as Nubis’ entire body turned golden. The next second, his entire body transformed into that of a snake about half a meter thick. His transformation made him into a beast that inferior magical beasts could not compare to. Even the length of his body was shockingly long at what seemed to be ten thousand meters. By the way he was coiled up in the air, his entire body looked as if it could wrap around the entire world. There was also a duality of golden and silver colors flashing on its body. This was the regal Golden-Striped Silver Snake at its mightiest.

No more precautions could be made for a Saint Ruler of the Sixth Heavenly Layer, so Nubis had to show his true power all at once.

His sudden transformation had left the three opposing Saint Rulers utterly speechless. For a good while, nothing could be said or done as they stared at the giant snake coiled in the sky.

“He was a magical beast!” Situ Qing gasped.

“Golden-Striped Silver Snakes are beasts that have lived since long ago. Their poisons are unequalled!” Ge Qiu cried out as well. His eyes narrowed ever so slightly, and even his previously amicable expression gained a tint of steel to it. A Class 7 Golden-Striped Silver Snake had a poison that could threaten the life of even a Saint Ruler.

The blue-robed Bi Hai stared at Nubis with a grim light in his eyes, “Did it come out of Cross Mountain?”

However, Nubis had already sprung into motion. His body trembled slightly with enough force to shake the world around him as a golden light emanated from his body. Then, with blinding speed, Nubis flew toward Ge Qiu to trap him inside his coil.

“I shall handle this old one. The other two are up to you two!” A coarse hiss sounded through the air. When Nubis transformed, even his voice had changed. Now, it was indistinguishable whether Nubis was a male or female.

Chapter 649: Gathering Experts From Every Direction (One)

With Nubis fighting to stall the strongest of the three enemies, Jiede Tai flew charged at Bi Hai to challenge him to a battle.

Originally, Bi Hai had planned on fighting Jian Chen with Situ Qing, but he had no other choice but to give up on that idea because of Jiede Tai's assault.

And so Situ Qing was left to battle Jian Chen by himself. Since he knew just how strong Jian Chen was, Situ Qing decided to use his entire strength from the get-go. Bringing out his Saint Weapon at once, he charged at Jian Chen and swung at him again and again. With each swing, a crack appeared in the air. Every swing he made surpassed what the world could handle.

Every single portion of Jian Chen's body was covered by Chaotic Force, pushing his defenses to their limits. Thanks to his clothing, the gray glow from the energy was concealed underneath. Using the Illusionary Flash, Jian Chen was almost able to teleport place to place like a ghost to fight the Saint Ruler.

“Jian Chen, you'll die today for sure!” Situ Qing laughed as his blade blazed red with fire. The intense flames shooting off from his blade evaporated the very air around it, bringing the temperature to a sweltering height.

There was a crimson flash of light as the Saint Ruler's blade became one with the world as it traveled for Jian Chen's neck.

Thanks to Situ Qing's understanding of the mysteries of space, Jian Chen was unable to dodge his strike with his non-existent understanding of space. Since he was unable to dodge, the blade immediately zoomed in to make contact with his body.

"Ha!" Eyes glowing bright, Jian Chen urged even more Chaotic Force from his dantian before infusing them into his fist to slam into the incoming blade.

If he couldn't dodge, then he'd just have to fight head-on!

The Chaotic Body was his greatest advantage against a Saint Ruler!

"Bang!" Both of Jian Chen's fists made contact with Situ Qing's weapon, causing an immediate whiplash of energy to break out and quake the area around them. Jian Chen had not come out unscathed. A terrifying wound on his hands appeared where the blade had cut halfway through them.

The Saint Ruler's stroke had been used the utmost power, so Jian Chen's fingers were mangled almost to the point of no return.

The immense pain from the damage inflicted to his fingers caused Jian Chen to wince violently, but his hands began to regenerate at an accelerated speed because of the Chaotic Body. In just a moment's time, a third of the wounds had healed up and the bones themselves had started to fuse together.

A powerful boost had been granted to Jian Chen following the synthesis of the Chaotic Force and Body. This boost was an obscenely powerful regenerative force. With how fast he could regenerate and heal his wounds, he was practically untouchable to the world.

“Jian Chen, let’s see how long you can last!” Situ Qing hatefully spat. Unsurprised that Jian Chen could handle his attack, Situ Qing struck out again with his Saint Weapon.

On the other side, the immensity that was Nubis’ body coiled around the entire area where the poorly-dress Ge Qiu was, leaving everyone else unable to see what was happening inside.

Bang! Bang! Bang! Bang!

One after another, a series of muffled blows exploded from within, reminiscent to the sound of a beating heart. Following these blows, Nubis’ entire body seemed to give a violent shake.

“Ta!” As if lightning went off within Nubis’ body, another burst of sound could be heard. The shock wave from that blast rippled past and out around Nubis’ body, cracking the ground beneath. The golden prison that was Nubis’ body suddenly spanned across the sky like a long golden rope or a ribbon with a shiny luster.

As soon as the prison was beaten away, a gray wisp of poisonous smog was exposed to the world. Almost like how a dragon would move, the smog billowed in every direction, mixing the air with its

poisonous miasma. Soon enough, the air was dangerous to breathe in while the radius of the miasma continued to increase.

The poison of the Golden-Striped Silver Snake was extremely potent. Even Jiede Tai, Bi Hai, and Situ Qing, who were fighting far away from Nubis, felt light-headed after breathing in the noxious fumes. Only Jian Chen remained unaffected.

“The poison of a Golden-Striped Silver Snake is as strong as the legends say.” The blue-robed elder said, using a serious voice. Each of the three fighters immediately stopped breathing and consciously avoided the area where the poison had assimilated into the air.

Many of the people in the city below had already breathed in the miasma by accident. Those people promptly fainted from its effects. The previously clamorous city down below instantaneously became as still as a ghost city. The streets were filled with people who had fainted from the poison, and only those who had reached the Earth Saint Master realm managed to withstand the poison to some degree. Even then, their bodies swayed slightly where they stood, looking as if they would fall in any second.

Bi Lian and You Yue were the only ones that were not yet Earth Saint Masters within the palace, and thus had promptly fainted on the floor. Only a hundred Earth Saint Masters were in the palace. Each and every single one of them tightly clenching their noses. From what they knew so far, the poison would only affect them if they breathed it in.

Tie Ta was the only exception to this scene. He was the only one

that stood there with a vacant stare at the skybound battle up above. It seemed as if the poison assimilating through the air was completely harmless to him.

“Idiot! What are you so dazed about, there’s poison in the air — hurry up, cover your face!” Ming Dong urged him. An antidote appeared in his mouth before he ate it, but it served no use.

Taking a deep whiff of the air, Tie Ta gave a questioning mutter, “Is there really poison? I don’t feel anything though?” But just to be safe, he clenched his nose shut like the others.

In the sky, Nubis was still in his snake form. He extended his jaws and began to take in a huge breath of air. Quickly, the poison that was in the area began to fly toward Nubis’ mouth, and in no time at all, all of the poison was completely gone from the area.

With the poison gone, Ge Qiu could be seen again in clear sight. His eyes were closed shut and his face was a lot more ashen than before. The poison had affected him heavily, and a black wisp of smog could be seen spiralling up from his body.

“It’s no wonder you’re called an ancient beast from the past with a poison like this. Your reputation isn’t an empty one, I can bear witness to that.” Ge Qiu’s eyes opened to reveal completely white eyes devoid of any poison.

A crimson light danced across Nubis’ eyes as he glared at Ge Qiu. His jaws opened wide to hiss out, “Old one, the poison from the great Nubis cannot be so easily neutralized. The great Nubis might

not be able to kill you, but let's see if you'll be able to do anything else with me here." With the final word being hissed out, Nubis and Ge Qiu began to fight with one another again. A smog of poison continued to obscure their battle.

Jiede Tai had been fighting the blue-robed elder quite passionately as well. The two of them continued to strike at one another with powerful blows that felt as if they could split apart the world. Since he was up against a Saint Ruler two Heavenly Layers stronger than he was, Jiede Tai couldn't afford to hold back. He struck with all that he had whenever possible.

On the other hand, his opponent was fighting with the utmost ease as if there was no pressure at all. Each Heavenly Layer that separated a Saint Ruler from another was extremely massive. A deficit like that couldn't be made up easily, unless one was an ancient beast like Nubis.

The battle between Jian Chen and Situ Qing had been especially bitter for Jian Chen. Each blow from Situ Qing was infused with the powers of space so that Jian Chen was left unable to dodge it. After such an extensive battle, Jian Chen had sustained many many injuries and his clothes were stained with his blood, but despite the bad state he was in, his fighting prowess hadn't weakened in the slightest. If anything, the battle had served to empower him and make him fight even harder.

The indomitable force that was Jian Chen astounded even Situ Qing. Trying to kill Jian Chen was as hard as killing a cockroach and a hundred times harder than killing a dragonfly, but Situ Qing was still sure that he could kill him.

“Bi Hai, stop wasting your time with him and lend me a hand here! We need to kill Jian Chen!” Situ Qing implored Bi Hai. He desperately wanted to kill Jian Chen today and would need the Fifth Heavenly Layer Saint Ruler to help him.

The blue-robed elder nodded his head after hearing Situ Qing’s request. While he was battling Jiede Tai, he had been taking careful notes of the fight between Jian Chen and Situ Qing, so even he was extremely shocked by Jian Chen’s fortitude.

Without any more misgivings, the blue-robed elder launched an all-out attack against Jiede Tai. Thanks to the large difference in strength between the two, only a few more exchanges were needed before Jiede Tai was dealt a devastating blow to the chest, sending him flying to the ground below.

Without Jiede Tai to stop him, the blue-robed elder didn’t hesitate. He immediately speed toward Jian Chen. The power of the world began to congregate in his hands as he delivered a palm strike to Jian Chen’s chest.

Even Jian Chen felt himself grow grim at the powerful energy in that palm. He could sense that the power in his attack was several times stronger than the attacks of Situ Qing. It was very possible that his Chaotic Body would be unable to withstand it.

“Brother Jian Chen, I, Huang Tianba have come to help you!” At that moment, a loud but elderly voice boomed from the far horizon. During the next second, a white figure sped over to them

at an incredible speed.

Chapter 650: Gathering Experts From Every Direction (Two)

At the most crucial moment, the patriarch of the Huang family came speeding forward. A wave of energy washed over the entire area with so much pressure it seemed to freeze the entire place.

The fist of the blue-robed elder stopped just barely an inch away from Jian Chen's chest. Turning his head, the elder looked at the incoming person with narrowed eyes.

"Blast it all! I didn't think that Jian Chen would have such a powerful amount of assistance!" Situ Qing wailed bitterly. The incoming person had an aura that terrified even him; this person was stronger than he was!

"This person is equal to me in strength as a Fifth Heavenly Layer Saint Ruler. Situ Qing, it seems like you'll have to deal with Jian Chen yourself." The blue-robed elder spoke expressionlessly.

Situ Qing gave a slight nod of his head. He knew that this newcomer was a strong one that only Bi Hai could handle.

"I thought that Ge Qiu would be able to handle the other two while Bi Hai and I would be able to fight and kill Jian Chen together. I didn't expect one of them to be the ancient Golden-Striped Silver Snake, able to fight one on one with Ge Qiu. This brat, if I knew he had such powerful help, then I would have asked even more experts to come. I very much doubt the Shi family would decline even the tungsten alloy deposit if offered." The

Saint Ruler thought bitterly to himself. With the addition of a Fifth Heavenly Layer Saint Ruler into the fight, it would be very hard to kill Jian Chen now.

As if one with space, the patriarch of the Huang family sped toward the fight with impeccable speed. When he first spoke, he had been extremely far away from Jian Chen, but by the time he finished speaking, he was already to where Jian Chen was before moving to strike the blue-robed elder.

Becoming wary of him, Bi Hai lashed out with a palm strike filled with the world's power to greet him.

“Bang!”

When the two palms struck each other, it was as if an explosion was made between them. Following the ear-deafening explosion, a wave of energy billowed out, wreaking havoc wherever it spread.

Huang Tianba and the blue-robed elder were equally matched in strength. Almost as if they were pillars that held up the heavens themselves, the two men stood dignified in the air. Even though the energy from their strike originated in between them, neither of them moved a single inch from their spots.

Soon after, the berserk fallout of energy faded away and Huang Tianba stood protectively in front of Jian Chen like a stone stele. Now that there was a gap between them and the enemy, Huang Tianba turned around to look at Jian Chen. As soon as he saw his blood-stained figure, Huang Tianba's face immediately grew dark.

“Brother Jian Chen, are you alright!” He asked in concern.

Jian Chen nodded his head with a dry smile, “It was fortunate that senior came hurrying over. Any later and I’m sure this junior would’ve been in trouble.”

“As long as you’re fine, that’s good, brother Jian Chen. Hurry up and heal from your wound. Let me deal with this!” Huang Tianba announced before turning his head to look at the fight between Nubis and the poorly-dressed elder. In truth, he was shocked at the sight, and even though he couldn’t exactly tell who the two were, their might was unquestionable. However, what really shocked Huang Tianba was the fact that Jian Chen had been able to find such help.

Far away, Nubis and Ge Qiu were still fiercely battling with each other. Although their battle had started in the air, one of the two would sometimes knock the other down toward the ground, and as soon as they were on the ground, the fight would progress for some time before flying back up into the air. Furthermore, the longer they fought, the farther away they moved away from the others. Their fight was so fierce that whenever they exchanged attacks, the sky would echo with a devastating boom and crumble the nearest mountain into pieces.

A ceasefire temporarily happened following Huang Tianba’s entrance, allowing both fighters a moment of reprieve. Staring at each other in silence, both fighters waited for the other to make a move.

Earlier in the fight, Ge Qiu managed to knock Jiede Tai back to

the ground. Given the interruption in the fighting, Jiede Tai was given enough time to make it back up to Jian Chen, but his face was pale and traces of blood could be seen at the corner of his lips. Clearly the attack he sustained from Ge Qiu had not been a light one.

“Huang Tianba, Saint Ruler of the Huang family, I didn’t think I’d see even you here today. It’s been five hundred years since our last meeting. How unexpected to see that you were able to reach the Fifth Heavenly Layer.” Situ Qing laughed coldly in apparent greeting to his acquaintance.

Leveling a cold glare at the Saint Ruler from the Sect of Dragon and Tiger, Huang Tianba said, “Situ Qing, I advise you to cease your actions against brother Jian Chen and offer up your apologies. End your grievances at once or you’ll not live to regret it.”

Situ Qing’s eyes flashed with a cold light, “Huang Tianba, you speak a little too soon. The days that Jian Chen will live are numbered. Do you think you’d be able to change that by yourself?

“And according to what I know, your Huang family isn’t in good straits either. Your feuds aren’t easy to neglect, so I should be advising you to back away from this fight or else you will earn another strong foe for your Huang family!”

“Hahahaha!” Huang Tianba laughed out loud as if mocking Situ Qing, “Situ Qing, if you were to say these words to me before, I would perhaps be intimidated, but today, your words and these friends of yours hold no threat to my Huang family! If they dare

approach, I cannot guarantee that they'll be able to return home alive."

"Is that right? Huang Tianba, it's been a scant few years since we last met, but you've seemed to have become senile since then if you'd ignore even my Hongfu clan. Allow me to experience just what capabilities you have to back up what you say."

The voice of an elder suddenly rang out after Huang Tianba with a powerful volume that reverberated across the sky.

Just ten kilometers away, two black-robed figures suddenly appeared out of nowhere, flying to where Jian Chen was.

The sudden arrival of this speaker caused Huang Tianba to falter slightly. His face grew dark before he whirled around to look at the two black-robed elders, "What brought you two here?"

"The two of us just only arrived here two days ago. At first we planned on watching the show from the sidelines, but when you came running here, Huang Tianba, with your arrogant words, neither of us could let it stand. Let us three fight then, and see if you have the power to ignore even our Hongfu clan." One of the two elders laughed. Promptly snapping a jade stone in half he threw the pieces into the air so that the turbulent winds could carry them away.

Chapter 651: Gathering Experts From Every Direction (Three)

A cold sneer crept onto Huang Tianba's face when he saw the black-robed elder crush the jade stone. "Jin Tian, Jin Feng, it would appear that you invited some helpers before you arrived."

"You guess correctly, Huang Tianba. Allow us two to inform you of our good news. Our Hongfu clan is now allied to the Yan family through a bond of blood. From today on, whatever sorrows or celebrations are to be had, our two families will live through both of them together. Thus, we've invited the lord of the Yan family, Yan Nan, to join us today." One of the two smiled.

The Hongfu clan had two Saint Rulers who were brothers by birth. One of them was called Jin Tian and was at the Third Heavenly Layer. More importantly was the fact that he owned a Ruler Armament that allowed him to fight on par with a Fourth Heavenly Layer Saint Ruler. Even a Fifth Heavenly Layer Saint Ruler would have to put a little more effort in fighting him.

Jin Tian's younger brother Jin Feng was a Second Heavenly Layer Saint Ruler with a Ruler Armament of his own so that he could fight against a Third Heavenly Layer Saint Ruler and defend against a Fourth Heavenly Layer Saint Ruler. Paired with his brother, they could contend with a Fifth Heavenly Layer Saint Ruler.

"Jin Tian, Jin Feng, does your Hongfu clan also wish for a share of the tungsten alloy?" Huang Tianba sneered.

“That is indeed our goal.” The Hongfu clan didn’t bother to deny the truth. “The tungsten alloy is an extremely precious object. Even a mountain of purple gold wouldn’t be worth a deposit of tungsten alloy, let alone a tremendous wealth like this. How could our Hongfu clan ignore it?”

Huang Tianba snorted, “Jin Tian, Jin Feng, trying to take tungsten alloy by yourselves is nothing more than the dreams of a madman. Do you not know that Jian Chen, the captain of the Flame Mercenaries, is also an Imperial Protector of the Qinhuang Kingdom?”

“Don’t even bother mentioning the Qinhuang Kingdom! Our Hongfu clan may be hermits, but we aren’t deaf to the world. With the restoration of the previous regime of the Holy Empire of the Three Great Empires, the subordinate Qinhuang Kingdom has no other choice but to get involved! They can hardly protect themselves, let alone spare a finger in this matter.” Jin Tian spoke.

“I underestimated your knowledge, it seems.” Huang Tianba grumbled.

No sooner did Huang Tianba finish speaking when another figure came speeding toward them at the speed of lightning. Coming to a stop right by the side of Jin Feng and Jin Tian, this newcomer stood in the air with an intimidating amount of pressure radiating from his body, stifling the air around.

The newcomer looked to be in his forties in age. His hair was

down to his waist, but it was being blown this way and that in the air. His stature was bulky and his figure was doughty with tanned skin to complement his build. In truth, he looked more like a violent black bear.

Staring calmly at this man, Huang Tianba said, “Lord Yan, it would be best for your family to stay out of this affair. Understand that the tungsten alloy is an object that’ll burn the hand of those that touch it. Even with the Yan and the Hongfu, you will not be able to safeguard it from the others.”

“Combined with us, the possibilities of taking the tungsten alloy would perhaps go up.” Situ Qing coldly laughed. Cupping his hands in greeting to the three men, he said, “My friends, I presume you know that judging by our earlier fight, the two of us were on par with one another. Victory won’t be an easy task, but if we join forces, then the deposit will be ours. Would a fifty-fifty share suffice with you three?”

“Excellently so!” The Saint Ruler from the Hongfu clan agreed straight away. He knew that out of all the Saint Rulers here, his party was currently the weakest group. If they didn’t join forces with one of the two, they’d lose for sure.

“Let that be it then. We’ll have Bi Hai deal with Huang Tianba, and the four of us will fight to kill Jian Chen.” Situ Qing spoke. Jian Chen was the target of his grudge, and Situ Qing wished to kill him. However, he lacked the power to do so. If he didn’t hurry to improve his odds, he’d perhaps be the one to lose his life instead.

“That’ll do. Then let us fight at once. The sooner we take the

tungsten alloy, the better. A dream is only a dream during the night.” Lord Yan calmly spoke without ever once considering Jian Chen to be a foe to contend with.

“One moment!” Jian Chen’s voice suddenly made itself known as they were talking to one another.

“Jian Chen, what more do you have to say before your imminent death?” Situ Qing sneered.

As if mocking Situ Qing, Jian Chen gave him a strange look, “Saint Ruler, do you really think that if you ally yourself with the Hongfu clan and the Yan family, you’d be able to take the tungsten alloy? How laughably naive you are.”

“I need none of your concern, Jian Chen!” Situ Qing’s eyes flashed crimson, “Do you really think you’re safe yourself? There’s no way for you to escape today’s fate!”

“Very well, then allow me to show you how I’ll escape this fate today.” Jian Chen smiled before turning in another direction. “Seniors, you have come all this way today, there is no need to hide yourself. If you could, please show yourselves!” He cried out loud with a voice that echoed further and further beyond into the landscape.

“Hahahaha! Jian Chen, you truly do deserve the title of being the King of Mercenaries! You have such power at such a tender age, and you’re able to sense even us as well! Not bad at all, you are a praiseworthy one!” An elderly voice replied to Jian Chen with an

equally loud volume.

Then just ten kilometers away, two figures in white materialized into the world, but following their arrival, another three elders suddenly made themselves known as well.

Originally ecstatic with the chance of being able to win, Situ Qing's joy plummeted as soon as he saw these five men appear out of nowhere. Even the three Saint Rulers from the Hongfu clan and Yan family grew stern as well. The arrival of these five changed the battlefield drastically.

“Everyone, we’ve seen our fill of entertainment. Let us all reveal ourselves then.” One elder smiled as he addressed the empty air around him.

One by one, figures began to appear out of nowhere throughout the area. In a short few moments, over a dozen unknown figures filled the sky, and all of them were Saint Rulers!

They had been watching the fight since the very beginning, but they had managed to hide themselves thanks to a secret method. Thus, they stood a few dozen kilometers away to watch.

By now, Situ Qing's face had grown as dark as a shadow. He couldn't see through the strength of a dozen of these newcomers, meaning that they were all Saint Rulers of the Sixth Heavenly Layer at the very least.

Even Nubis and Ge Qiu ceased their fighting with so many people appearing out of nowhere. Sensing the strength of these figures, even they grew tense.

Reverting back to his human form, Nubis flew back to Jian Chen with a cursory glare at the figures around them. “There’s trouble. Many of these individuals are Sixth Heavenly Layer Saint Rulers. One of them is even a Seventh Heavenly Layer Saint Ruler. I cannot help you with this, Jian Chen.”

A slight fluctuation occurred over Jian Chen’s face, but he remained calm to say, “They’re for sure after the tungsten alloy. What a hot item this tungsten alloy is to attract so many strong individuals, but still, there’s no need to worry. We aren’t easy to bully.”

“Correct, there’s nothing to fear.” Huang Tianba folded his arms over his chest and laughed.

Nubis’ eyes shined brightly for a few seconds when he saw just how confident these two were, but he said nothing.

On the other side, the ashen-faced Ge Qiu arrived back at Situ Qing’s side, “Situ Qing, the situation isn’t looking very well.”

Situ Qing nodded his head slightly, but when he saw the pigment of Ge Qiu’s face, he hurried to say, “Ge Qiu, you should hurry to flush the poison out of your body. With the strength of the poison of a Golden-Striped Silver Snake, even a Third Heavenly Saint Ruler would be able to fight you.”

Nodding, Ge Qiu closed his eyes and started to prepare the process of detoxifying his body.

By now, all of the experts had convened together. One of the elders cupped his hands in greeting to Jian Chen, “I am Mo Ziming, grand elder of the Divine Sword sect, and this one to my side is Jian Xu. We are pleased to meet you, friend.”

“This junior greets his seniors!” Jian Chen returned the greeting as well.

“Divine Sword sect? I didn’t believe that even they would come. The Divine Sword sect has existed for tens of thousands of years — an age longer than even the ancient clans.” Huang Tianba remarked in shock.

Even Jian Chen had to look at these two individuals in a new light after that.

“We are from Baihua City. Brother Jian Chen, I am Bai Yan.” An elegantly dressed man cupped his hands and saluted him gracefully.

One by one, the individuals gathered around the area began to introduce themselves to Jian Chen. All of them had extremely powerful individuals as patrons and were thus a part of an extremely strong group. Two of them were from groups stronger than the most ancient clans, and one of them was a Saint Ruler of the Seventh Heavenly Layer. That alone was enough to match an

ancient clan.

Despite their extremely lofty statuses, they treated Jian Chen with the utmost respect. Prior to their entry, each one of them had made their inquiries on Jian Chen. Therefore, they knew a decent amount of information. Now that he was comparable to a Saint Ruler in strength, it was enough for them to speak as equals, being courteous to a genius with limitless potential.

Unless there was absolutely no choice, none of them wanted to make Jian Chen their enemy.

“Seniors, if my guess is correct, you all must be here for the tungsten alloy.” Jian Chen spoke.

“Quick to the point, I see. Then we won’t mince words either, brother Jian Chen. Your guess is correct. Our Baihua City came here today for the tungsten alloy. We hope that brother Jian Chen will resign yourself to part with twenty percent of the deposit. Naturally, we won’t mistreat you, this will be an extremely beneficial trade to the both of us.” The graceful-looking Bai Yan spoke.

“Our Divine Sword sect wishes to trade for the tungsten alloy as well. Similarly, we hope that brother Jian Chen will be fine with trading twenty percent of the deposit to us.” The grand elder Mo Ziming opened his mouth to speak.

“Our Nine Yang School...”

Shortly afterward, the groups began to offer out their prices in hopes of taking a part of the tungsten alloy. Each one of them had originally planned on taking the tungsten alloy by force, but with how chaotic the situation was with so many forces gathering, no one would be able to monopolize it all. So thus, they would have to change their plans.

Jian Chen's face had grown dark after listening to everyone's offers. Every one of them wanted ten or twenty percent of the deposit. While that wasn't a big amount individually, there'd be none left for him if he were to divvy it up like that, and that would be not be worth it at all.

Suddenly, a melodious voice made itself known.

“Hehehe, little brother Jian Chen. It's been a few years since we met, yet you've changed so much! Perceiving this change has left this sister awe-shocked you know.”

Chapter 652: Tianmu Clan

This familiar voice alarmed Jian Chen. Whirling around with a startled expression, Jian Chen could see another three figures flying through the air. The most eye-catching figure was the young woman in between the two other figures. From appearance alone, she looked to be in her twenties at the very oldest. She wore a red robe with an equally red ribbon tied at her waist in a pretty-looking bow. Her appearance was almost as if she was a seductress stepping straight out of a painting. Her white jade-like arms were exposed to the sun, making them look illustrious and resplendent, and combined with the beautiful slender-white legs that were also exposed, she was a living example of a woman that could seduce any man that looked at her.

Her appearance was without a doubt a being of beauty that could bring a country to its knees, but compared to You Yue or Huang Luan, this woman was still clearly lacking. However, even if she did, she possessed a rare kind of beauty. The womanly charm that exuded from her body was of a superior degree in comparison to You Yue or Huang Luan however.

Right beside this woman was an elderly man and woman. The both of them wore simple clothing, and from how they appeared, the two of them looked to be a married pair.

“Tianmu Ling, it’s you!” Jian Chen remarked. He was shocked; this woman was one of the few outstanding youths that participated in the Gathering of Mercenaries.

“Hehehe, little brother Jian Chen, how unexpected that you

remember me. I feel quite happy about that~” Tianmu stared at Jian Chen full of interest. Her right hand touched her lips as if to hide a small laugh, “Little brother Jian Chen, it’s been a few years now, I never would’ve imagined that you’d reach such heights. It’s hard to believe that you could fight even a Saint Ruler now, but this young lady has nothing but the utmost respect for you now.”

Looking down at his bloodsoaked clothes, Jian Chen forced out a smile, “Tianmu Ling, spare me your sarcasm. While I can fight a Saint Ruler, I’ve done nothing but take a beating from them.”

Peeling with laughter, Tianmu Ling said, “Little brother Jian Chen, you might as well throw your lot in with this older sister. I can protect you, and even though my strength is weaker than yours as an Earth Saint Master, this older sister can guarantee that no Saint Ruler will bully you.”

Jian Chen’s heart skipped a beat. According to what she was saying, he could guess that Tianmu Ling’s clan was most likely so tremendously powerful that even these people gathered here today were of no importance to them.

Curious, Jian Chen glanced at the two elders beside her. Just inwardly, he remarked to himself that these two elders surely had to possess an extremely terrifying strength.

“Blast it all; what bad luck we have. Why are such strong humans coming out one after another? That elderly male next to that young female stands at the zenith of the Saint Ruler realm. Only one more step is needed for him to enter the Saint King realm, and that elder female is at the Eighth Heavenly Layer. The two of them

could stop all the Saint Rulers here if they wished.” Nubis cursed to Jian Chen.

Jian Chen’s heart skipped a beat as he looked on in shock at the two elders next to Tianmu Ling. Waves of shock spread through his heart as he registered the news given to him by Nubis. He hadn’t thought that Tianmu Ling would be able to manage such a terrifyingly strong power like this. These two elders were at the Eighth and Ninth Heavenly Layer!

Seeing how Jian Chen was silent, Tianmu Ling looked to the two elders next to her and held their hands coyishly. “Grandpa Jun, Grandma Wang, you have to help little brother Jian Chen, okay? I’ll ignore you if you don’t!”

“Hahaha, very well, very well then. We’ll help him for you, great-granddaughter. As long as your little brother Jian Chen is willing to compromise with us, we’ll lend him a hand.” The one named grandpa Jun lovingly replied to her. His eyes hid none of the doting affection he felt. Thus, it was obviously apparent that he held Tianmu Ling in high regards.

“What a decent young man this one is. Unarrogant and sensible, unlike the other heirs who know nothing but arrogance. His talent is decent, and his potential is massive. But more importantly, he has grown to be rather handsome. A good match for our Ling’er. This grandmother approves.” The one known as grandma Wang laughed.

“Grandma Wang, don’t be so irresponsible with your words. There is nothing but an innocent friendship between your great-

granddaughter and Jian Chen. It's not what you think." Tianmu Ling complained with a pout to her lips.

Smiling benevolently, the old woman spoke, "Yes yes yes, it was naught but this old woman's daydreams. Your grandmother won't speak of it again, so please don't be so mad, great-granddaughter."

"Of course I won't!" Tianmu Ling smiled before turning her head to wave at Jian Chen, "Little brother Jian Chen, come over here! Grandpa Jun and Grandma Wang will protect you."

"Tianmu Ling, you must be here for the tungsten alloy as well." Jian Chen inquired.

"And quick to the point. This old woman likes that. Indeed, we came all the way here specifically for the tungsten alloy. Little boy, you cannot monopolize this deposit all by yourself. You do not have the power. Why not give half of it to our Tianmu clan. We will ensure that you will be protected, and we will take care of any other troublesome matters. You will not be dissatisfied." The woman made an offer.

Upon mention of the Tianmu clan, a shift of mood was displayed on everyone's faces.

"The Tianmu clan? So even the Tianmu clan has come over here." The grand elder from the Divine Sword sect spoke with skepticism.

Even Huang Tianba looked grim at the mention of the Tianmu clan. “The tungsten alloy has a great deal of allure if even the Tianmu clan has their interest piqued. The Tianmu clan are one of the ancient families with powers that reign supreme over many others. They even have a Saint King overseeing their clan.” He whispered to Jian Chen.

“Saint King!” Jian Chen sucked in a sharp breath at the mention of a Saint King. Existences like those were almost at the same level as gods on the continent.

“So even one of the most ancient families has come. A clan like theirs could challenge even the Gilligan clan.” Nubis sighed in slight surprise.

“Brother Jian Chen, the tungsten alloy is extremely precious. You can’t give even a little of it to anyone.” Huang Tianba mentioned to Jian Chen.

“Little brother Jian Chen, don’t bother listening to that old man. The tungsten alloy is indeed precious, but the fact that you’re trying to hold it for yourself would make others red at the eyes after hearing such news. Without the power to defend it, it’ll only bring trouble onto you. It’s best that you cooperate with my Tianmu clan.” Came Tianmu Ling’s sing-song voice.

No one else spoke a word around them. While they themselves were of strong factions, they were only hermit clans and families in the end. Compared to one of the ancient families, all of them were of completely inferior statuses, yet no one was quite willing to give up. Even if it cost them an arm or leg, they wanted to make

a deal for this precious treasure.

“So even the Tianmu clan has come. Jun Mohao, Wang Yanhong, I didn’t believe that you two would be the ones who came.” At that moment, another elderly voice reverberated through the sky as two elderly men came walking toward them, coming to a stop just five hundred meters away.

The sight of these two caused both grandpa Jun and grandma Wang to raise an eyebrow. However, it was grandma Wang that spoke first, “Aoyun clan, so even you’ve come for the tungsten alloy.”

“What!? He’s from the Aoyun clan?” Huang Tianba was thunderstruck. Staring fixedly at these two old men, he whispered, “The Aoyun clan is a clan I’ve only heard mention of before, but today will be the very first time I’ve ever seen any one of them. The Aoyun clan is also an ancient family that are as equally as famous as the Tianmu clan. I never would have imagined that two ancient families would appear within a thousand years of one another.”

“Another strong enemy has appeared. These two elderly males are of the Seventh and Ninth Heavenly Layer.” Nubis bitterly revealed. More and more strong individuals were showing up out of nowhere, making the situation far more complicated than it should be. This was no longer a battle between isolated hermit families, it was now a dispute between ancient families.

“Correct. We’ve come here today for the tungsten alloy. We will do what we must to get a portion of that tungsten alloy.” One of

the elders spoke.

“It’s a shame that you’re too late. Half of the tungsten alloy has been given to us, the remaining half is for Jian Chen to use. There is none left for you.” The old woman next to Tianmu Ling replied.

The expressions of the two elders from the Aoyun clan darkened when they heard what she said. Turning to look at the bloodsoaked Jian Chen, one of the two elders spoke unyieldingly, “You must be Jian Chen. Since the Tianmu clan has laid claim to one half, give us the other half. The Aoyun clan won’t mistreat you. Whatever the Tianmu clan offered, we can provide the same.”

Jian Chen’s expression grew uncomfortable at this. The Aoyun clan was simply far too much if they were trying to lay claim to what he owned.

“How unfortunate that your Aoyun clan is also an ancient family. The way you do things is excessive. This tungsten alloy is for little brother Jian Chen; how uncouth of you to try and take it without giving him any.” Tianmu Ling spoke crossly.

The two elders from the Aoyun clan looked hard at Tianmu Ling; killing intent poured from their eyes in massive amounts as one of them growled, “A mere Earth Saint Master dare comment on our Aoyun clan? You must be tired of living.”

“Pah! If you dare touch even a single hair of my great-granddaughter’s head, don’t even think about returning home.” Jun Mohao took a sudden step forward. A mountain-like pressure

began to emanate from his body with such power that any Saint Ruler beneath the Fifth Heavenly Layer felt as if an actual mountain was pressing onto them.

A Saint Ruler of the Ninth Heavenly Layer was already at the zenith of their respective realm. Only one more step would be required for them to cross over into the Saint King realm, so the pressure that they could give off at a moment's notice was more than enough to intimidate any Saint Ruler beneath the Fifth Heavenly Layer.

“Tianmu clan, what is the meaning of this? Do you wish to make my Aoyun clan your enemy? We do not fear you.” The other elder from the Aoyun clan declared before silently taking out a jade stone with his hand.

Chapter 653: Tian Jian Has Arrived

“What? You wish to take on the two of us by yourselves?” Jun Mohao coldly laughed, “Earth Saint Master, so what? If you dare bully my great-granddaughter, your bodies will remain behind here forever, so I declare. Even the helper that you plan on calling will meet their demise.”

The two figures from the Aoyun clan had ugly looks on their faces. A mighty Seventh Heavenly Layer was being humiliated and given no respect at all, but with how strong the enemy was, they had no choice but to accept their bitter fate. In the case that they really did anger Jun Mohao, it would be extremely dire for the Aoyun clan.

After all, he wasn't by himself. He still had Wang Yanhong who was nearly as strong as he was with him.

The two Saint Rulers from the Aoyun clan stared balefully at Tianmu Ling right in between the two elders. Even they were shocked to see that a mere Earth Saint Master was being so affectionately looked over by two supremely strong beings. If it was for her, they'd not hesitate to fight. Knowing this, the Aoyun clan felt troubled that a conflict would actually happen.

Sighing, the two elders regained their normal expressions and looked to Jian Chen. “Jian Chen, it would best for you to hand over the other half to our Aoyun clan. Rest assured, our Aoyun clan is an ancient family, we will not mistreat you.” Perhaps it was because of the stiff words he had received from Jun Mohao, but his face was unnaturally dark. A glint of sharp light could be seen

flashing from his eyes as if attempting to intimidate Jian Chen into accepting.

Displeased, Jian Chen looked back at him with a wooden expression. He was not happy at the reception he received from the elder. “My apologies, I cannot give half the deposit to your Aoyun clan.”

“Jian Chen, think twice about the aftermath that would await you. Give it some consideration. I’ll give you some time.” The other elder ominously growled.

Still resolute in his decision, Jian Chen shook his head. “There’s no need for that. I’ve made my choice. I will not give the tungsten alloy to the Aoyun clan.”

“Little brother Jian Chen, you don’t need to be afraid of the Aoyun clan! If they try to bully you, the Tianmu clan won’t sit idly on the side!” Tianmu Ling laughed.

A forced smile crept onto Jian Chen’s face as well when he turned to meet her stare. “I appreciate your help, lady Tianmu Ling, but this one should have enough power to protect the tungsten alloy myself. There’s no need for you to waste your energy for me.” Jian Chen’s voice trailed off by this point as if thinking about what next to say, “But this one has thought about the tungsten alloy. If the Tianmu clan has need for it, I’ll offer some up to your clan then when all of the ore is excavated.”

His words caused Jun Mohao and Wang Yanhong to be taken

back.

“Hahaha, and here I believed that the Tianmu clan truly did lay claim to half the tungsten alloy. What an unexpected outcome!” One of the elders from the Aoyun clan laughed out loud involuntarily.

“Jian Chen, is... is there a problem with your head!? I went through a lot so that you’d be able to keep at least half of the tungsten alloy, but you’re refusing to accept our kindness! Don’t you know? If not for me, you wouldn’t even have a bit of it left?” Tianmu Ling spoke in frustration. Her previous calm was no longer there to be seen since. She knew that if Jian Chen earned the ire of the two elders next to her, trouble would befall him.

“Hahaha. If Jian Chen wishes to monopolize the tungsten alloy, why not kill him? Once he’s dead, the tungsten alloy has no master. Your Tianmu clan and Aoyun clan could split the deposit fifty-fifty then without fear of conflict.” Situ Qing suddenly interjected. Now that even the ancient families were involved, his strength to defend was practically nonexistent. By now, he had given up on taking the tungsten alloy and only cared about killing Jian Chen. The death of Jian Chen was the most important goal.

“A modest proposal.” The elders from the Aoyun clan nodded in approval at Situ Qing’s suggestion.

A sinister smile was plastered across Situ Qing’s face. “There is no need for the esteemed ancient families to kill Jian Chen, however. Allow this one to do the honors. Ge Qiu, you deal with that magical beast. Jin Tian, Jin Feng, you deal with Huang

Tianba. Bi Hai, you and I will kill Jian Chen.”

“Very well. Huang Tianba, the grievances between our two families have accumulated for well over a thousand years. Today, we shall end it all. With your death, your Huang family will follow you!” Jin Tian laughed before drew a long sword with his hand. This sword was illustriously bright and radiated a white light. Following its appearance, all of the light in the world looked as if it had been amplified. A tremendous wave of energy gushed out from the sword as if a sleeping beast had finally awoken. Even the atmosphere felt rather docile around them as if cowering in fear.

“A Ruler Armament!” Jiede Tai cried out.

“A Ruler Armament!” Jian Chen’s heart skipped a beat as he stared hard at the long sword in Jin Tian’s hand. This Ruler Armament was considerably larger than his old Light Wind Sword, but it was still similar for all intents and purposes. Since it was a Ruler Armament, it’d be able to take in Chaotic Force without breaking.

His heart refused to calm down. Even as he looked at the long sword, he could hardly contain the coveting look in his eyes.

“I must take this Ruler Armament no matter what.” Jian Chen nearly howled to himself. His hands clenched together in excitement. Finding a Ruler Armament that matched him was not an easy task at all.

A five-meter-long spear appeared in Jin Feng’s hand. This spear

exuded an impeccable energy from it, befitting a Ruler Armament. The two Saint Rulers of the Hongfu clan were wielders of Ruler Armaments.

Ge Qiu had already taken the chance to lunge for Nubis. With Nubis obstructed, Situ Qing and Bi Hai were free to chase down Jian Chen to try and kill him together.

Choosing to hide their hands in their sleeves and do nothing, the two elders from the Aoyun clan stood off to the side. They planned on letting Situ Qing kill Jian Chen for them so that no master could lay claim to the tungsten alloy. From there on, the Aoyun clan and Tianmu clan could split the deposit without fear of conflict.

“Grandpa Jun, grandma Wang, you have to help Jian Chen! He’s no match for those two!” Tianmu Ling pulled at their robes as she tried to plead for assistance.

“Dear great-granddaughter, this can’t be blamed on your great-grandpa or great-grandma. We wanted to help him, but he decided to try and take the tungsten alloy all for himself. Let him reap the consequences of his own actions then.” Jun Mohao explained.

Tianmu Ling could only let out a sigh of regret at that. From this point on, she knew that there was no way that either of the two would help him.

“Jian Chen, prepare to die!”

On the other side, Situ Qing dove straight for Jian Chen. With the help of Bi Hai, Situ Qing was now more than capable of killing Jian Chen.

Suddenly, the space around Jian Chen suddenly froze up, locking both Jian Chen, Situ Qing, and Bi Hai in place.

Then the space to Jian Chen's side began to intensely ripple with energy. The very next second, a Space Gate opened up to reveal a white-robed middle-aged man. He walked out to stand right next to Jian Chen.

There wasn't an extraordinary amount of energy emanating from this man. He resembled an ordinary man, but despite that, everyone could tell that his very person was one with the world.

It was Ming Dong's uncle, the grand elder of Mercenary City — Tian Jian!

"Jian Chen pays his respects to senior!" Upon seeing this man, Jian Chen immediately assumed respectful posture. Tian Jian's appearance wasn't unexpected to him since he knew that the patriarch of the Huang family had notified him with a jade stone.

"Huang Tianba pays his respects to senior!" Huang Tianba adopted the same respectful posture as well.

Chapter 654: Precursor To Arrival

The sudden appearance of Tian Jian shocked every single Saint Ruler in attendance. Every single faction could hardly keep their own emotions in check as they gaped at Tian Jian in absolute shock.

Opening a Space Gate into the world itself was a feat only a Saint King could do!

This white-robed middle-aged man was clearly an existence even more paramount than that of a Saint Ruler!

Jin Tian and Jin Feng of the Hongfu clan were both aghast as they looked at Tian Jian. Looking at the still bowing figure of Huang Tianba, the both of them looked rather unsure of what to do, yet their faces were still as dark as before. Their arch-enemy Huang Tianba clearly knew this powerful entity, meaning that this was an extremely bad omen for the Hongfu clan.

“How unexpected to see that there’s a Saint King standing behind Jian Chen as well.” Jiede Tai thought to himself with fear. A Saint King could turn their noses up to even an ancient family. In the case that an ancient family had one of those, they would practically fear nothing.

Bi Hai and Situ Qing finally regained their ability to move as well. The two of them could only cease their pursuit of Jian Chen and look at Tian Jian in fear. Situ Qing in particular looked to be frightened to death.

Tian Jian stood in the middle of the sky with naught an extraordinary presence to be seen from his person, but his figure felt as if it was one with the world. If one wasn't paying too much attention to him, he would have most likely been ignored.

Giving a cursory look around the place, Tian Jian's eyes hovered momentarily on Jian Chen before curiously glancing to the ground beneath him. At last, a baffled look appeared on his face, "So there was a deposit of tungsten alloy here!"

The battle Jian Chen had been fighting in had originally started over the city, but as time passed, the battle had moved farther and farther away to the mountains where no one was. As it just so happened, these mountains were right next to the tungsten alloy.

"Senior, the tungsten alloy was originally found by this junior, but so many people came out of nowhere to try and lay claim to it. This junior lacks the strength to fight them all, so I wish to ask senior to help settle this matter fairly." Jian Chen cupped his hands as he pleaded to Tian Jian. Even he knew that if he wanted to keep the entire deposit, he'd have to ask Tian Jian for help. There was no other way.

Staring at the dozen Saint Rulers gathered before him, Tian Jian waved his hand, "You may leave from whenceforth you came."

He didn't say it explicitly, but everyone knew that he was clearly helping Jian Chen protect the tungsten alloy. These Saint Rulers didn't dare say anything. With their strength, they had no power

to offend a Saint King. Even the two ancient families wouldn't dare to.

“Senior, we are from the Tianmu clan. We traveled thousands and thousands of kilometers in hopes of being able to win some tungsten alloy. How could we leave with just a word like that?” Jun Mohao cupped his hands. Despite talking to a Saint King, he wasn't intimidated. It wasn't as if the Tianmu clan didn't have one, so they could afford some elbow room.

“Sire, we of the Aoyun clan won't back down so easily. Whatever it takes, we the Aoyun clan will take some of it somehow.” One of the two elders from the Aoyun clan spoke.

“Senior, if you stand behind Jian Chen, our strengths are all the same then. We should all take a step back and split this deposit threeways. Our Aoyun clan, the Tianmu clan, and you will each take a part.” The elder from the Aoyun clan suggested.

Tian Jian's eyebrows crinkled together, “I don't wish to repeat myself a second time.” This time, there was an icier hint to his voice.

With Tian Jian helping him now, the blockage in Jian Chen's throat started to calm down a bit. Having him help out was such a huge relief. He would be able to resolve the problem with the two ancient families.

“Senior, this is far too much.” The elder from the Aoyun clan remarked. The jade stone appeared in his hand again, and in the

next second, he crushed it.

“What a surprise to see that Jian Chen would have such powerful support. Even the two of us wouldn’t be enough, let us go report to the patriarch.” Wang Yanhong whispered.

“That seems like the only option left.” Jun Mohao nodded his head. A jade stone appeared in his hand as well, and along with the Aoyun clan’s elder, he crushed it to notify the individual from their clan.

Saint Kings could tear apart the space to travel inexplicably long distances at a moment’s notice. As soon as the jade stones were crushed, two Space Gates immediately materialized in the sky near each other.

Even before they could step through the Space Gates, a tremendous aura could be felt. Like a terrifying beast from the ancient past, their auras were extremely intimidating and froze the atmosphere. Even the air itself seemed to stop its turbulent spread and the dozen Saint Rulers felt as if the breath in their throats suddenly refused to go down. The comparatively weaker two Saint Rulers from the Hongfu clan and Jiede Tai were especially affected by this pressure, so their faces were extremely pale. Even Jian Chen himself felt his body unable to move as if the world had been turned into a prison where he was denied any movement.

Chapter 655: Tian Jian's Strength

Thanks to the Space Gates that opened up in the fabric of the world, the Saint Kings of the Aoyun clan and the Tianmu clan arrived. Although they were also Saint Kings, the Saint Kings of the Aoyun and Tianmu clan would made their entrance far more impressive than Tian Jian. The pressure that accompanied their arrivals was far beyond what Tian Jian's 'ordinary' presence was.

A white-robed and another gray-robed old man walked out of their respective Space Gates. Both of them looked to be in their seventies, and had eyes that shone with the brightness of a sea of stars. If one were to look at their eyes, it'd be possible that they'd be lost in them. The two of them stood right in front of their respective families, and their elderly bodies looked as if they were immortal figures that would never die. Practically anyone that looked at them felt a strange mystique wash over them as if feeling that the world had recognized these figures as the strongest.

“We pay our respects to the lord!”

“We pay our respects to the grand elder!”

The elders from the Aoyunu and Tianmu clan both bowed their figures down to the waist toward the two Saint Kings respectfully. Shortly afterward, they began to recount a detailed explanation of what was going on.

By now, all of the Saint Rulers gathered here from the other parties had moved far away. Each one of them had given up on the

idea of taking a part of the tungsten alloy for themselves. There wasn't even a point to even think about it now. With the ancient families taking part in this affair and two more Saint Kings joining the fray, it had long since become a battle they couldn't participate in.

The two Saint Kings came to a quick realization of what was going on. They quickly turned to look at the white-robed Tian Jian who was still standing there without a care in the world.

“Sire, whom might you be!” The Saint King from the Tianmu clan asked respectfully. Despite him being unable to see through Tian Jian's strength, he didn't exactly fear Tian Jian either. All Saint Kings could hide their strengths, making it hard for others to tell just how strong they were in general.

“I'm nobody important. This tungsten alloy isn't yours. Go back home.” Tian Jian plainly responded. From the way he talked, it was plain to see that he didn't see these two Saint Kings as a threat.

Tian Jian's words caused the Saint King from the Tianmu clan to darken in the face. His cavalier words demonstrated that he cared not that a Saint King was in front of him, thus angering the Tianmu clan's Saint King. Furthermore, Tian Jian's tone was very monotonous, but his words were commanding by telling the two clans to return home. This was a direct slap to the faces of both the Aoyun clan and the Tianmu clan.

From far away, the dozen hidden Saint Rulers all gave each other strange looks. They were all trying their best to guess Tian Jian's strength and identity who he was. Throughout the entire

continent, there weren't many that could easily dismiss two ancient families and speak so rudely to them at the same time.

The Saint King from the Aoyun clan grew solemn as well. Glaring at Tian Jian, he spoke, "Sire, you are audacious. Telling us to go back home with just a single sentence? Do you think that you can fight the Tianmu clan and the Aoyun clan by yourself?"

Folding his hands behind his back, Tian Jian replied, "I don't wish to fight you, but it seems that if I don't, you two will not go away."

"How arrogant! Sire, if you are so confident in your own skill, then allow this elder to bear witness to it!" The Saint King from the Aoyun clan sneered before a condensed amount of World Force began to form around his palm. With frightening speed, he flew toward Tian Jian with a fist ready to punch.

World Force was the energy that a Saint King could wield. Compared to Saint Force, World Force was far stronger. It was incorporeal since it was an energy made of 'nothingness,' but its strength was extremely potent.

Still standing with his hands behind his back, Tian Jian made no sign of moving. Instead, a bright gleam of golden light flew forth from his eyes, and shot toward the Saint King with frightening speed.

The speed in which the golden light was traveling was incredibly fast. It easily pierced through the World Force and dispersed it

without a problem before continuing toward the Saint King without slowing.

“Pft!”

The beam of golden light struck the chest of the Saint King and tore through him as if he was made of tofu. The next moment, a small cavity the size of two fingers could be seen in his chest.

Two rivers of blood flowed forth from the wound that the Saint King sustained. Looking at the two wounds in his chest, the Saint King was astounded and could only look on in disbelief.

The eyes of the Saint King of the Tianmu clan were as wide as copper plates. He could only stare at the chest of the Saint King of the Aoyun clan as blood continued to drip from it. Like everyone else, he was astounded as well.

The Saint Rulers who were all looking at the fight were tongue-tied. Floored by the sight of this wound, not a single one of them could believe their eyes.

Everyone was simply thunderstruck. Despite it happening right in front of their eyes, everyone just had to doubt themselves. A mighty Saint King had been easily injured right in front of them!

“G-gra-grand elder, are you alright?” One of the two Saint Rulers was quick to respond. Flying to the Saint King, the faces of the Saint Rulers were especially white as they stuttered out a question.

Their grand elder was a supreme Saint King. Through the eyes of the continent, these beings essentially stood on top of all. To be easily injured by someone who may as well be blowing dust off his shoulder was a mindblowing event.

It felt as if the Saint King hadn't heard either of the two. He could only stare at the seemingly ordinary-looking Tian Jian in shock, "Wh— who are you!" Fear filled his voice as he spoke. He knew he couldn't treat Tian Jian with the same arrogance as before.

Even the Saint King from the Tianmu clan withdrew his aura, looking at Tian Jian in fear. Even he found it hard to believe that a tremendously powerful entity like a Saint King would be so easily injured by another.

Nubis and Jiede Tai were stunned as well. Both of their faces knew only terror from the startling reveal of Tian Jian's strength. Nubis most especially was lacking the usual look of arrogance on his face.

Huang Tianba looked to Jiede Tai and Nubis and said, "This is the grand elder of Mercenary City. Hurry up and pay your respects." Although he was speaking to the two of them, Huang Tianba didn't bother to hide his voice, so all the others heard him too.

"What!? He's the grand elder of Mercenary City!"

At the mention of his status, the ones who heard it gasped out loud. The two Saint Kings were no exception.

For a while, everyone was far too dazed to say a word. Not a single person made a move either, but then, one of them bowed his head down to Tian Jian, “This junior pays his respects to the grand elder!”

“This junior pays his respects to senior!” Jiede Tai and Nubis immediately bowed their heads low in respect to Tian Jian. At this moment, the two of them felt their hearts leap into their throats. Not once had they ever thought that Jian Chen would have the powerful grand elder of Mercenary City behind him.

“You... you really are the grand elder of Mercenary City!” The Saint King of the Aoyun clan exclaimed in shock. The next second, his face paled even more drastically than before.

Chapter 656: Victory

The Saint King from the Tianmu clan could hardly contain his shock for Tian Jian, someone he had disregarded as unimportant earlier. He found it hard to believe that this person was actually the grand elder of Mercenary City, but what was even harder to believe was the fact that he would be the one supporting Jian Chen, the one with the tungsten alloy.

The grand elder of Mercenary City was essentially the highest position of leadership in Mercenary City. They were the upholders of law for the city. The grand elder controlled even the several dozen Saint Rulers seated there. Thus, the grand elder was without exception someone the heads of the ancient families couldn't even be compared with.

Not only was Mercenary City an incredibly strong faction, the grand elder himself had reached a terrifyingly strong level of power. In front of him, the Tianmu and the Aoyun clan were essentially powerless.

“But... just how!? How does Jian Chen and the grand elder of Mercenary City even know each other!?” Tianmu Ling looked at Jian Chen in a daze. Despite being an Earth Saint Master, she was part of an ancient family. Her knowledge of these matters was far better than the normal person, so she knew just how important the grand elder of Mercenary City was.

It was akin to being the absolute leader of the entire continent!

“Ai!” Jun Mohao regained his calm composure relatively quicker than the others with a sigh, “How unexpected that he would invite the grand elder of Mercenary City. Let us cut the games. The only ones that could possibly fight Mercenary City would be the legendary guardian clans.”

“Ling’er, your friend here isn’t as ordinary as we were led to believe. He’s invited the grand elder of Mercenary City of all people! Inconceivable, quite utterly inconceivable. Who would dare try to take a portion of the tungsten alloy now?” Wang Yanhong spoke to the still dazed Tianmu Ling.

The Saint King of the Tianmu clan let out a deep breath before looking at Tian Jian in fear. “This one, Tianmu Yuan, pays his respects to the grand elder. I did not think that the grand elder would appear here today, what a surprise for us. If there has been any offense committed by my Tianmu clan today, then I hope that the grand elder will find it in himself to forgive us.” This time, the Saint King’s words were far more docile in nature than before. There wasn’t any more arrogance, and even his aura was more subdued.

In front of the grand elder of Mercenary City, Tianmu Yuan didn’t even have the right to be arrogant.

“No worries. As long as you give up your desire for this tungsten alloy, then there will be no problem.” Tian Jian stated.

“Then, as the grand elder says, our Tianmu clan will no longer wish for any bit of the tungsten alloy. We’ll be making our leave then.” Tianmu Yuan replied. He then gave Tian Jian his goodbye,

and by opening a Space Gate into the world, he, along with the other members of his clan, left the area.

“Grand elder, this one has been disrespectful to you. I hope the grand elder will find it in his heart to allow this one, Aoyun Qingping, to offer up compensation.” The Saint King of the Aoyun clan was completely submissive as well. He gave a deep bow to Tian Jian since he knew that he was in a tight spot. Even if Tian Jian forgave him, the fact that he and the Aoyun clan had committed an offense toward Tian Jian would be known to everyone. It was the grand elder of Mercenary City that he offended. Out of all the people on the continent, Tian Jian was one of the few that could not be offended.

“Go back from whence you came. That is the last time I will repeat myself.” Tian Jian spoke calmly. He didn’t seem to hold any emotion at all in his words.

“Yes, my Aoyun clan will leave straight away. We will definitely give up our involvement with the tungsten alloy.” The Saint King hurried to respond before taking his clan with him through a Space Gate he made.

In the blink of an eye, the two Saint Kings, who had arrived with a thunderous entrance, made a hasty retreat in defeat. Now that they were gone, the only ones left were the several hermit clans and Saint Rulers, such as Situ Qing and the others.

“Honorable grand elder, our Divine Sword sect will no longer partake in this affair either.”

“Honorable grand elder, we of Baihua City will no longer interfere with the tungsten alloy affair.”

.....

Soon after, many of the hermit clans and schools began to pledge their non-interference with the tungsten alloy. With the grand elder there and the strongest ancient families gone, they had no other choice.

After experiencing this, they were all now fully aware that the captain of the Flame Mercenaries, Jian Chen, was an individual they could not be offended under any circumstances. Although his strength wasn't necessarily at a level where he could fight them, the mountain that was his patron stood at the very top of the pyramid of the continent.

This time, Jian Chen now had a name even among the hermit clans and families!

This resulted in each of the Saint Rulers bidding a friendly farewell to Jian Chen before leaving. Situ Qing and the others each revealed hard looks on their faces. None of them could have imagined that their plans would change so drastically. The grand elder appearing out of nowhere had thrown a wrench into their plans, and now Situ Qing and the two Saint Rulers from the Hongfu clan were scared to pieces.

“Why are you all in a daze? Hurry up and run!” Situ Qing had

been the first to respond, snapping the others out of their confusion. Turning to run away, they quickly traveled several hundred kilometers at the fastest speed they could muster. To stay there now would be to wait for their deaths.

The two Saint Rulers of the Hongfu clan, Bi Hai, and Ge Qiu hadn't hesitated either. Each one of them were traveling as fast as they could to get out of there.

"Where do you think you're going? Stop them!" Jian Chen cried out before chasing after Situ Qing.

"Jin Tian, Jin Feng, escaping won't be as easy as you think! Why don't you stay behind and settle your grievances with me?" Huang Tianba laughed. In his hand was a long, golden bow. He shot two arrows straight at the escaping Jin Tian and Jin Feng.

"Old one, our fight has yet to finish!" Nubis hissed out loud before transforming into a golden light to chase after Ge Qiu. Jiede Tai didn't hesitate to chase down the blue-robed Bi Hai that had injured him earlier. Despite his strength being less than Bi Hai's strength, with the patron behind him, Jiede Tai wasn't afraid in the slightest anymore.

"Whoosh! Whoosh!"

The two golden energy arrows shot toward Jin Tian and Jin Feng at breakneck speeds. As expected from a Ruler Armament, the arrows that it shot locked onto the two men's auras precisely without fail.

Without decreasing their speeds, the two men took out their own Ruler Armaments to knock away the golden arrows, and then continued on their way.

On the other side, Ge Qiu was already farther away than the others. He was essentially out of sight already, leaving Nubis no chance of catching up to him. The distance in strength between the two was far too great, and Ge Qiu's understanding of space far too substantial.

Likewise, Jian Chen had been unable to chase down Situ Qing. Jian Chen's adversary escaped, and he returned depressed.

Chapter 657: Bi Hai

Neither Nubis nor Jian Chen were able to chase down their opponents, and Huang Tianba himself wasn't willing to chase down his two opponents. Instead, he notched his golden bow and took aim at Bi Hai before letting loose several arrows.

“Whoosh!”

The energy that was in the bow transformed into a radiant arc of light before jettisoning toward the escaping Bi Hai. Since these energy arrows were locked onto Bi Hai's personal aura, the arrows would follow Bi Hai no matter which way he turned.

Despite how fast Bi Hai was, a Ruler Armament contained too much power to be shaken off. In practically two seconds, the energy arrows were right on the verge of hitting him.

With no way to dodge, Bi Hai could only turn to divert the arrows away. So much energy began to flow into his palm that the space around it trembled slightly as if it was about to collapse.

The power in Bi Hai's palm was great, but a Ruler Armament was the weapon that a Saint Ruler at the Ninth Heavenly Layer left behind. On its own, a Ruler Armament was extremely powerful. If it was wielded by another Saint Ruler such as Huang Tianba, the power of the bow would be incomparably different than when Huang Luan used it back in the Gathering of the Mercenaries, meaning this arrow wouldn't be so easily blocked.

Even as Bi Hai slammed his hand across the arrows to stop them, the arrows continued on toward his chest unimpeded.

Amazement flashed across Bi Hai's eyes as he let out a surprised voice, "So this is a Ruler Armament!" Despite the shock, Bi Hai's arm continued to move into the next motion to materialize a broadsword into his hand. With lightning quick speed, he brought the giant sword down onto the arrow with such force that a crack was left in the space behind the word's path.

"Boom!"

When the giant sword and the golden energy arrows collided, an explosion rang out across the sky. Energy washed over the entire world and caused such backlash that even the sky above turned color.

Bi Hai had no Ruler Armament of his own, so blocking with his own sword cost him a considerable amount of energy. Even though the two Saint Rulers of the Hongfu clan were weaker than him, they depended on their Ruler Armament to block the arrows.

In order to block a Ruler Armament with ease, one would have to be stronger than a Ruler Armament. Besides that, the only other option was to use another Ruler Armament.

Thrown back a considerable distance, Bi Hai's eyes honed in on the drawn bow. Huang Tianba had already notched it in preparation to fire again, so Bi Hai said nothing and turned around to continue running.

“Where do you think you’re running off too!?”

The delay had given Jiede Tai enough time to catch up. Flying toward him, Jiede Tai’s Saint Weapon arced onto him; he would consider this strike vengeance for the palm strike Bi Hai given him some time before.

“Whoosh!”

At the same time, Huang Tianba shot a second arrow at Bi Hai. It flew, with blinding speed, through the sky.

Bi Hai’s face grew grim when he felt the arrow come flying toward him. Turning to dodge Jiede Tai’s weapon, he gained another thousand meters in distance before urging his water-attributed Saint Force to overflow his body. With a loud shout, he cried, “Fourth Miracle Water of Bi—Absolute Rebirth!”

His water-attributed Saint Force completely surrounded his body, and quickly took his body out of sight, hovering in the middle of the sky within a bubble.

“Whoosh!” The golden energy arrow shot straight through the blue sphere and disappeared over the horizon, but when the blue sphere faded away, the human inside could no longer be seen.

“Blast! He’s escaped!” Jiede Tai angrily cursed between grit teeth at the sight.

From far away, Huang Tianba slowly put down his bow to look at the area where Bi Hai was once was. “What a strange escape technique. Even my Solunar Bow was unable to track him.” He sighed.

“How unfortunate that not even a single one could be chased down.” Nubis lamented. He turned his head back to look at the still standing Tian Jian; he knew that if this grand elder were to wish for it, none of their enemies would have been able to escape.

On the other side, Jian Chen was frozen still from shock as his eyes stared in the direction Bi Hai had escaped in.

“Miracle Water of Bi, that’s the name of the Bi family’s battle skill; who is this man?” Jian Chen muttered to himself in confusion.

“The patriarch was the one who created the Miracle Water of Bi, but there’s only three layers to it. The Human Tier, the Earth Tier, and the Heaven Tier. But that elder had clearly said there was a fourth one. Could... could he be...” By now, Jian Chen’s entire body was shaking violently as if an unbelievable thought had occurred to him.

Instantly, Jian Chen turned to look at Jiede Tai and Nubis, “What was the name of that blue-robed Saint Ruler?” He urgently asked.

Huang Tianba, Jiede Tai, and Nubis looked strangely at Jian

Chen. The three of them were confused on what had caused this strange behavior from Jian Chen.

“Should be Bi Hai. That is what I heard the Saint Ruler from the Sect of Dragon and Tiger call him.” Jiede Tai said.

Jian Chen’s face blanched as a light flickered through his eyes. “Bi Hai, Bi Hai! His name is Bi Hai, and he wields one of the battle skills of the Bi family. Surely this can’t be a coincidence?”

Chapter 658: Origin Energy Of The Metal Spirit

Huang Tianba walked up to Jian Chen with a curious look on his face, “Brother Jian Chen, what’s wrong? Is there some history between you and that Bi Hai? If he has some grievances with you, then rest assured, I’ll help you fight him. Although we’re of equal strengths, he has no Ruler Armament. There’s no way he would be a match for me, and against the two of us, there should be no concern.”

Jian Chen shook his head, but no words came from his mouth. The very thought of Bi Hai’s identity had caused his mind to be temporarily knocked for a loop. He was excited, but also nervous.

“Jian Chen!”

Just then, a calm voice suddenly pulled Jian Chen out of his deep thoughts.

Following the source of the voice, Jian Chen looked to Tian Jian’s twinkling eyes. Discarding his thoughts, he cupped his hands, “Thank you senior for your assistance today. If not for you, I, Jian Chen, surely would’ve lost the tungsten alloy.”

“Jian Chen, tungsten alloy deposits are extremely rare on the Tian Yuan Continent. The fact that you found one is thanks to your good fortune. From a cursory glance, I found that there is Origin Essence—a strange miracle of the world—at the very center of the vein. It’s something that could help a Saint Ruler at the

Ninth Heavenly Layer breakthrough to become a Saint King.” Tian Jian remarked.

“What? This Origin Essence could help a Saint Ruler breakthrough to become a Saint King?” Huang Tianba asked in disbelief.

He wasn’t the only one surprised. Jian Chen, Nubis, and Jiede Tai were all surprised as well. Normally, the three of them would be stoic beyond all else, but this information was more than enough to shock them.

The Origin Essence hidden within the tungsten alloy was enough to help a Saint Ruler make the breakthrough to become a Saint King. A godly item like that is so desirable some Saint Ruler’s would start to froth at the mouth for it. Absolutely no one would be able to remain their usual calm when hearing this news, a Saint King would not be an exception.

“If that’s the case, then wouldn’t even more people start to pay attention to the tungsten alloy? If these ancient families were so willing to come forward and take it, then I’m sure they’ll stoop to having someone act in the darkness.” Jiede Tai asked in concern.

This was a thought that didn’t quite occur to Jian Chen. Straight away, his relaxed demeanor tensed up once again.

Tian Jian only laughed at the change. “Jian Chen, there’s no need for you to worry. Tungsten alloy is already a very hard material to begin with, and this Origin Essence has bolstered the

tungsten alloy to the highest quality. Compared to regular grade of tungsten alloy, this stuff is a hundred times stronger, and with the tungsten alloy's peculiar ability to dissipate energy, breaking it open would be a very hard task. I'd be unable to break open the tungsten alloy that protects the Origin Essence with my meager abilities. With that, you should not be concerned about anyone trying to do so under your nose."

The three men and beast let out a sigh in relief having heard that. Even the greed in their hearts was diminished; if the grand elder of Mercenary City was unable to break through the tungsten alloy to get to the Origin Essence, then who else in the continent would be able to?

In their minds, the Origin Essence was already a treasure that absolutely nobody could claim.

After sighing in relief, Jian Chen's eyebrows suddenly knit together, "If senior is unable to break open the tungsten alloy, wouldn't that mean I'm guarding a treasure I can only look at, but not use?"

"Jian Chen, with your talents, becoming a Saint King won't be a challenge. It's best not to dwell on such matters and focus on your cultivation." Tian Jian spoke.

"Yes, senior!" Jian Chen replied obediently like a student replying dutifully to their teacher's teachings. Now that this matter was done and settled with, the Origin Essence, or whatever, was nothing more than an item that would be hard to get.

“Master... master! This is the Origin Force from the Metal Spirit of the five elements! Excellent! I never thought that we’d find the Origin Force of one the five elemental spirits here. This is a spirit of the world, an unbelievably rare encounter!” The voice of Ziying suddenly made itself known.

“Aiyah, it really is the Origin Energy of the Metal Spirit. And here Qingsuo thought that this world wouldn’t have the presence of Metal or Wood Spirits, but here it is now.” The singsong voice of Qingsuo made itself known as well.

Jian Chen’s expression went askew at the two spirits voices, but he recollected himself quickly to ask, “Ziying, Qingsuo, are you saying that the Origin Essence that is hidden within the tungsten alloy is the Origin Energy of the Metal Spirit?”

“Yes, master. It really is the energy of the Metal Spirit. We are sure it’s the presence of one of the five elementals.” Ziying replied excitedly.

“Master, the energy down below might be quite weak, but it still holds a considerable amount of power. If master can absorb it, the Chaotic Body will increase in strength again.” Ziying spoke.

Jian Chen was moved by this suggestion, but the very thought of the extremely strong tungsten alloy that was protecting the Origin Essence left him with a headache. “Ziying, Qingsuo, the tungsten alloy is guarding the Origin Essence. How would I take it?”

Ziying and Qingsuo quietened down as to think. Before long, Ziying replied first in vexation, “Because of the influence of the Metal Spirit’s Origin Energy, the surrounding rock has become extremely metallic in nature. With master’s current strength, breaking through this layer to get to the Origin Energy is all but impossible.”

“Master, you just need to wait for the Azulet swords to be forged to retrieve the Metal Spirit’s Origin Energy.” Qingsuo spoke.

“Again the Azulet swords!” Even just the mention of the swords caused a sharp headache for Jian Chen. It was an ardent wish for him to hurry up and forge the Azulet swords, but forging the swords was beyond his reach because of how difficult the materials were to get and because he lacked the power to do so.

“Forget it, it’s not as if the Origin energy will be running away from here in any case, and no other person should be able to take it. I’ll let this matter be.” Jian Chen thought to himself.

“Jian Chen, since the matters here have been taken care of, I’ll be taking my leave.” Tian Jian’s calm voice broke through Jian Chen’s thoughts.

“Senior, since you came all the way here, why not come in and have a drink of tea? It’d be an honor for this junior to act as host.” Jian Chen asked. Inviting the grand elder of Mercenary City in for a drink would make the Flame Mercenaries’ standing skyrocket.

Tian Jian smiled, “There’s no need. I’ve done what I promised

today. I may not have helped you with your enemies, but with your strength, you've more than enough power to deal with them. Whatever's left for you to do will be up to you."

"Then thank you senior for your assistance. With this, the ones helping the Saint Ruler from the Sect of Dragon and Tiger will think twice now. Presumably, the Hongfu clan will find their bonds with the Yan family broken, leaving the Sect of Dragon and Tiger alone with the Honfu clan. That should be a small enough power for us to deal with." Huang Tianba spoke.

Chapter 659: Patriarch Of The Bi Clan (One)

Tian Jian didn't stay for long. He left through a crack in space without even seeing Ming Dong. Men like him had long since lost their material greed. They spent their days living in isolation, away from the world. Very rarely did they interfere, and even if a scuffle somewhere in the world happened, they'd be disinclined to look into it.

Huang Tianba, Nubis, and Jiede Tai were all still in quite a flummox even after Tian Jian left.

Tian Jian was, after all, the grand elder of Mercenary City. A man like him had stopped two ancient families and several hermit families from fighting their group. This meant without a doubt that Jian Chen's group had a definite relationship with the grand elder of Mercenary City, a major benefit for them. At the very least, the hermit and ancient families would think twice about fighting them now.

Only Jian Chen was left with an unhappy expression. The surprise of the Metal Spirit within the tungsten alloy gave him plenty to think about. Even now, he was floating in mid-air with a ponderous look, thinking about the blue-robed Bi Hai.

"Brother Jian Chen, we've not only managed to secure the tungsten alloy, we've also managed to deter the others with the power of the grand elder. From now on, we won't need to pay as much attention to the tungsten alloy. Now that the biggest headache is gone, what are you so worried about?" Huang Tianba asked Jian Chen.

Vanquishing his thoughts, Jian Chen smiled, “The biggest problem is gone with the tungsten alloy, that much is true. We won’t need to worry about another group trying to take it away from us, so we should all head back for now. Today’s events call for a celebration.”

Then, Jian Chen fished out a white bottle from his Space Ring and gave it to Jiede Tai, “Jiede Tai, there’s five Class 6 Radiant Spirit Pills in here. They’re yours to use and heal your wounds with.”

Accepting the pills, Jiede Tai immediately popped the bottle open and took two of the pills into his mouth. Sparing a slight glance at the remaining three Radiant Spirit Pills, he hesitated just briefly before putting them into his own Space Ring. The wounds he had sustained from Bi Hai’s palm were not light at all.

Shortly afterward, everyone returned to the interior of the city. The inhabitants of the city that had been unfortunate enough to fall prey to Nubis’ poison were awake once more. The poison of a Golden-Striped Silver Snake was extremely toxic, but they had only ingested the air that was sprinkled with it. Combined with the fact that Nubis had diluted most of it by taking it back into himself, cutting away the source, the poison that the inhabitants of the city ingested wasn’t enough to kill them.

By now the city was in a tumultuous chaos. Everyone was grouped in bunches as they filled the streets to talk to each other about the battle between the Saint Rulers with gusto.

Many of the horses and magical beasts responsible for pulling trading goods and such were all paralyzed with fear thanks to the intimidating might of the Class 7 Nubis. Many of them were unable to stand and were reduced to a shivering bundle of flesh that couldn't be moved even when their owners tried to push and prod them. As a result, the streets were jampacked with people clogging the way.

In the palace, the blood-soaked Jian Chen came walking back with Nubis and the others. As soon as their foot stepped onto the ground, a horde of people came forward to meet them.

“Jian Chen, are you okay? Was the Saint Ruler from the Sect of Dragon and Tiger driven away?”

“Jian Chen, you're hurt! There's so much blood...”

“Brother, are you okay? Are your wounds serious?”

“Captain, what's going on?”

“Captain, are you okay? Let me notify the Radiant Saint Masters to come...”

“The captain's injured! Call for a Radiant Saint Master!”

.....

The friends of Jian Chen and important characters from the Flame Mercenaries came to talk to him in droves with everyone talking at once. All of them were filled with a great deal of concern and worry for him. Jian Chen was after all the pillar of the Flame Mercenaries. Everyone knew that without Jian Chen, the Flame Mercenaries would have no path forward. If Jian Chen fell, the Flame Mercenaries would fall too.

Shushing everyone with a hand, Jian Chen said in a strong voice, “There is no need for concern; my injuries aren’t serious. They are only scratches, but I’ve important news to tell everyone. From today on, no one will try to take our tungsten alloy now. So please rest assured.”

“Is that right? That’s great!”

Everyone let out a rejoicing cry of celebration at Jian Chen’s words. The tungsten alloy was a veritable treasure trove for the Flame Mercenaries. As long as they held it, they would not be lacking money in the future.

“The city is in a messy spot right now. If everyone could, please go into the city and establish some order.” Jian Chen commanded.

“Yes, captain! We’ll go at once!” Several of the mercenaries immediately retreated to carry out his orders.

Soon afterward, Jian Chen returned to his own room and washed his body. He cleaned away the blood before inspecting his body.

It was still as white and unmarked as a newborn with very lustrous skin, similar a woman's. The wounds he sustained during the battle were nowhere to be seen, not even a single scar remained.

“The regenerative power of the Chaotic Body is far too powerful. If I had received such wounds in the past, I would've been left incapacitated for several days. The Chaotic Body's regenerative power is almost instantaneous. It heals my wounds in less than a breath's worth of time.” Jian Chen sighed as he praised the Chaotic Body.

Taking out a clean set of robes from his Space Ring, Jian Chen dried himself off and then put them on. Walking out from the bathing area, he noticed Ming Dong and the others gathered in the lounge. When they saw the rosy-red hue of health on Jian Chen's face, they all looked surprised.

“Jian Chen, your wounds shouldn't have healed that fast! Your clothes were extremely bloody just a moment ago. Don't tell me that blood was from the Saint Ruler from the Sect of Dragon and Tiger!” Ming Dong couldn't help but ask. He simply couldn't believe that Jian Chen would have been able to inflict that much damage on someone who had reached the Saint Ruler realm, like Situ Qing.

Jian Chen laughed, but he made no motion to answer Ming Dong's question. “Now that the problem with the tungsten alloy is resolved, I need to return home for an important matter. I'll leave you all to take care of the matters while I'm gone.”

“Brother, you left for a very long time already and only just got back. Why must you leave so soon?” Bi Lian pouted in disappointment.

Jian Chen’s face was solemn as he answered her, “Lian’er, this is a matter that concerns our family. Your cousin must go and confirm something.”

Seeing the solemn look on his face, Bi Lian realized that this was no small issue like she had thought. “Okay, then. Brother, you have to come back soon though!”

Chapter 660: Patriarch Of The Bi Clan (Two)

With the great battle drawn to an end, Jian Chen bid farewell to everyone before bringing Nubis and the still sleeping white tiger cub with him to the Gesun Kingdom.

He originally planned on going by himself without bringing anyone else, but when he thought about Nubis' personality, he changed his mind. Nubis was a magical beast and was bloodthirsty by nature, unlike the calm and rational Jiede Tai. Jian Chen was unwilling to let the arrogant Nubis stay behind while he was gone. If something happened, then it would definitely become a problem.

Jian Chen and Nubis flew through the sky at dreadfully fast speeds before Nubis finally spoke. "Jian Chen, this one had never once thought that you and the grand elder of Mercenary City would have such a relationship. I, the great Nubis, am surprised. As long as the grand elder stands behind you, then I can guarantee that not many people on the continent will try to bully you." Nubis' eyes landed upon the tiger cub in Jian Chen's arm with a slightly more concentrated gaze. "Every single grand elder of Mercenary City has always been a very talented person. This one in particular seems to be very knowledgeable. Jian Chen, surely you did not tell him about the Winged Tiger God."

"Senior Tian Jian already knows about the Winged Tiger God." Jian Chen replied.

"What? He knows already?" Nubis' expression grew sharp, "That

isn't good. The Winged Tiger God is still a youngling, meaning it's still at a tameable age. With the greed that you humans possess, even the strongest of individuals would want to take it. If the Winged Tiger God reaches maturity, it'll be an indomitable force of power that no human would be able to withstand unless another human like Mo Tianyun were to be borne again."

Jian Chen shook his head, "I'm already aware of the situation. Rest assured, the situation isn't as bad as you think it is. Senior Tian Jian, the second elder, and the fourth elder are the only ones from Mercenary City that know about the Winged Tiger God. None of the three have any desire to take the cub. In fact, they were more than happy to give it a large amount of heavenly resources."

"Is that true?" Nubis questioned. "How curious. Why has Mercenary City decided to do that? Don't they know how terrifying the Winged Tiger God is? With their strength, there'd be no way to stop the destruction the Winged Tiger God could cause other than by taming it. The Winged Tiger God at its maturity is a huge threat to the entire Tian Yuan Continent."

"They were told to do so by Mo Tianyun from a long time ago. It was in the very first laws that the grand elder was given." Jian Chen replied.

"Mo Tianyun said that?" Nubis grew even more curious now. "Was there some sort of friendly relationship between humanity's strongest, Mo Tianyun, and the mythological Winged Tiger God? The information I've heard has never once said anything about the two having any sort of communication."

“That, I don’t know, but the time since that era has long since passed. Whatever little information we have isn’t complete, and nothing concrete can be learned. Perhaps there is some sort of hidden detail we’re not aware of.” Jian Chen suggested.

Nubis nodded his head in solemn agreement, “That much I agree with!”

After that, Jian Chen and Nubis continued on their path while occasionally talking about one topic or another. With their speed, it only took one day worth of travel to traverse several tens of thousands of kilometers, arriving back in the Gesun Kingdom.

Stepping into the Gesun Kingdom’s territory, Jian Chen and Nubis immediately continued to Lore City. In a flash, they arrived at their destination where the Eastern Deity Swords from the Qinhuang Kingdom remained camped outside.

“That must be the army of the Qinhuang Kingdom, so they’ve made their way even here as well. What a rich display, it is no wonder they are considered one of the Eight Great Empires.” Nubis couldn’t help but remark after seeing their camp.

Jian Chen could only smile in silence. Flying into the Changyang Manor, the two of them stopped right outside the gates.

Since Jian Chen hadn’t bothered to hide his aura, his arrival was felt by all of the Heaven Saint Masters. Straight away, four powerful auras flew forth from the interior to surround him in every direction.

These four Heaven Saint Masters were the housekeeper Chang Wuji, Qin Wuming, Qin Wujian, and Qin Wutian.

Sensing the aggressive demeanor of the four, Nubis' expression grew sour. A flash of cold light streaked across his face, and the power that came with being a Class 7 Magical Beast immediately manifested itself within his eyes. Instead of staring at Heaven Saint Masters, he looked as if he was looking at a weak little ant.

Jian Chen's heart skipped a beat when he felt the change overcome Nubis' expression. Claspig his shoulder, he said under his breath, "Nubis, this is my home. Don't be rash."

Immediately, the look on Nubis' face softened to only look at the four men in disdain. Turning to Jian Chen, he hissed, "The great Nubis, why must you never remember that."

Not sure whether he should laugh or cry, Jian Chen replied, "Fine fine, the great Nubis, please don't be rash here. This is my home."

"Understood, but tell these little ones to cease their actions now. There shall be no impudence in front of the great Nubis." Nubis lazily responded.

Without even needing to be told again, the four Heaven Saint Masters immediately withdrew their fighting auras once they recognized that one of the two people was Jian Chen.

“The fourth master has returned!”

“We pay our respects to the Imperial Protector!”

Chang Wuji and the three others immediately greeted him. Chang Wuji looked at Jian Chen with a cordial smile of familiarity. Qin Wuming and the other two bowed to him respectfully.

The battle between the Flame Mercenaries and the Sect of Dragon and Tiger had preceded Jian Chen’s arrival. Everyone had quickly learned of the battle since three Saint Rulers had fled from the Flame Mercenaries and Situ Qing had been heavily injured. So much interest was piqued that practically everyone knew that the captain of the Flame Mercenaries was a Saint Ruler. Even with so much distance between the Gesun Kingdom and the Heavenly Eagle Kingdom, Chang Wuji and the others were able to learn that their fourth master was a Saint Ruler.

“Fourth master, I’ll notify the lord of your return. The lord and the fourth lady have been missing you dearly. They have been hoping for your return every day.” Chang Wuji spoke as he turned around.

“No need, uncle Chang. I wish to speak to my mother. I’ll meet with father in a moment.” Jian Chen explained.

“Yes, that’s fine. Then I’ll call for a banquet to celebrate the fourth master’s return.” Chang Wuji retreated into the manor. Although he looked quite old, his movements were as spry as a

twenty-something year old youth.

“Qin Wujian, Qin Wuming, Qin Wutian, you may all go in to rest. I’ll be taking care of some matters first.” Jian Chen spoke.

“Yes, Imperial Protector!” The three men bowed respectfully before bowing out.

Afterward, Jian Chen led Nubis to a room of his own and commandes several maids and servants to wait on him should he require anything. He then left to meet his mother.

Chapter 661: Patriarch Of The Bi Clan

(Three)

Walking straight to Bi Yuntian's room, Jian Chen stopped right in front of the doors. The two maids standing guard there respectfully said, "We pay our respects to the fourth master!" "Fourth lady, the fourth master has returned."

"What? Xiang'er is back?" The ecstatic voice of Bi Yuntian immediately zoomed out of her room. The sounds of shuffling footsteps could then be heard before the doors to her room opened up.

"You two may leave; there's no need to remain guard here. Without my order, no one has permission to enter this room." Jian Chen commanded the two maids before striding in.

"This maid hears and obeys." The two maids bowed slightly before leaving the area.

"Xiang'er, you've finally returned! This time you simply must stay a little longer." Bi Yuntian spoke in her common graceful speech. Today, she was wearing a white, satin robe that complemented the warm smile on her face as she greeted her child.

Even the normally stalwart Jian Chen softened in the face at the sight of his very own mother. "Mother, your child is an unfilial one to not spend time with you. How have you been these past few days, mother?"

“All is well. Your mother spends her days in peace here, but you, Xiang’er, you must be tired, running around all day.” Bi Yuntian spoke with concerned affection.

“Xiang’er, we’ve reports from two days ago that some mighty Saint Ruler from the Sect of Dragon and Tiger launched an attack before being beaten by another. Is that true?”

Jian Chen nodded his head with a faint smile, “It’s correct. Mother, the Flame Mercenaries have grown far stronger than before. Thanks to your son, the Flame Mercenaries now have an additional two Saint Rulers overseeing it.”

“Is that right? Oh how excellent!” Bi Yuntian’s face lit up with glee. She had heard this information two days ago, but to have it actually confirmed by the mouth of Jian Chen himself made it no less astonishing to hear, even if it was for the second time.

“Xiang’er. Your mother has heard that you’ve made the breakthrough to become a Saint Ruler. Is that true as well?” Bi Yuntian followed up her question with more questions. There was a slight tremor to her voice, as if she was eagerly expecting to hear confirmation from her son.

A pained smile greeted her this time. “Mother, your son is still a Heaven Saint Master, but I’ve the fighting prowess of a Saint Ruler. At the very most, the weakest Saint Rulers won’t be much of a threat to your son.”

This time, Bi Yuntian found it hard to reply at all. A Saint Ruler was in her eyes the same as standing at the very top of the continent. She had never expected her very own son to attain such a position, and as a parent, this was an undoubtedly major achievement that she was proud to know about.

This was all a mother could ever ask for!

Jian Chen was silent as well for a moment. “Mother.” He began, “I came back this time with extremely important information I wanted you to confirm.”

His words brought Bi Yuntian back to reality and helped her calm herself back to normal, “Xiang’er, say whatever it is you wish to say.”

“Mother, your son wishes to ask about the Bi family. Would you happen to know some information about the patriarch?” Jian Chen asked.

At the very mention of the Bi family, the expression on Bi Yuntian’s face slipped just slightly. The previously excited look slowly melted away from her face, growing slightly somber. “Xiang’er, the great catastrophe that befell the Bi family happened to your mother when I was very young, so the matters of the Bi family are rather limited to me. I’ve only seen the patriarch’s likeness from a statue.

“Mother, would you happen to know the name of the patriarch then?” Jian Chen urged.

“Not only was our patriarch the progenitor of our clan, he was also the only Saint Ruler. With his existence, the Bi family became known as a great family that existed for a millenia. His name was held in such high regards that everyone knew it; that was only natural! The patriarch’s name—he was Bi Hai!” Bi Yuntian bitterly replied.

“Bi Hai; it really is Bi Hai! That’s his name!” Jian Chen muttered just slightly to himself. In his mind, images of the blue-robed figure that fought Jiede Tai began to resurface.

Noticing the meaning behind Jian Chen’s words, Bi Yuntian grew suspicious. “Xiang’er, could it be that you’ve heard Bi Hai’s name elsewhere?”

He nodded, but no words found their way through his mouth. Instead, he pulled out a brush and some paper from his Space Ring. He then began to paint a swift picture of Bi Hai’s likeness from what he could remember of the battle. The figure in the painting was the blue-robed Bi Hai, and it was so realistic that one would almost think that there was no difference between this painting and the real person.

Presenting the finished painting to Bi Yuntian, Jian Chen asked, “Mother, do you recognize this person?”

Bi Yuntian shook her head however. The person in this painting was unfamiliar to her, “I don’t. Your mother has never seen this person before.”

“Mother, didn’t you say that you’ve seen a statue of the patriarch before? Please look carefully, does this person look the same as our patriarch?” Jian Chen urged.

“Xiang’er, your mother has seen a statue of the patriarch before, but he was a middle-aged man at that time in appearance. This elderly man in the painting holds no resemblance to him.”

The paper fell from Jian Chen’s hand as he bowed his head to think.

His previous and current actions allowed Bi Yuntian to connect the dots. Sternly, she looked to him, “Xiang’er, tell your mother, was the person you saw possibly the patriarch of our Bi family?”

Deciding not to hide it this time, Jian Chen nodded his head, “Mother, your child has indeed met a man named Bi Hai, but I’ve yet to determine whether he really is the patriarch of the Bi family. I need time to verify that fact.”

“Xiang’er, then what are you waiting for? Hurry! Hurry and confirm his identity! No matter what methods you use, you must find out whether or not he is our patriarch. Don’t forget that we both have the blood of the Bi family in our veins! As long as we can find our patriarch, there is a hope that we cannot let pass by!” Bi Yuntian exclaimed in a hurry to emphasis her statement.

Determined, Jian Chen replied, “Understood. Mother, your son will be leaving to verify who he is. Since there’s no time to waste,

your son will be leaving at once.” With that, Jian Chen turned about and left the room without hesitation.

This time, Bi Yuntian didn’t move to hold him back. “Xiang’er, go fast and return soon!”

Chapter 662: Visiting The Sect Of Dragon And Tiger

Not even two hours had passed since Jian Chen arrived at Changyang Manor with Nubis before they left with a speed that was just as fast as when they came. They came quickly, they left quickly. Changyang Ba didn't even have a chance to see his own son.

Finding the patriarch of the Bi family was far more important; there was no time to lose.

Conflicted, Bi Yuntian stood at beyond the doors to her own room to watch Jian Chen disappear into the skies. Her heart found it very hard to remain calm at that moment since Jian Chen's abrupt news about the patriarch of the Bi family immediately broken the tranquility she was in. At the same time, she was extremely nervous on whether or not that person was really the same Bi Hai she knew to be the patriarch.

"Xiang'er! Xiang'ers back?" Suddenly, a dignified but excited voice echoed through the halls as Changyang Ba came running into view.

Right behind him were several of the higher ranking members of the Changyang manor, each one of them running excitedly with Changyang Ba towards Bi Yuntian's room.

Striding to Bi Yuntian's side and looking left and right, Changyang Ba asked, "Yun'er, Xiang'er has returned hasn't he?"

Where is he then?”

Taking in a deep breath to calm her nerves, Bi Yuntian couldn't help but smile to see the hurried expression on her husband's face. “Xiang'er has already left.”

“What? He left?” Changyang Ba didn't believe it for a moment. Smiling, he spoke, “Yun'er, let's dispense with the jokes. Xiang'er only just came back, but it's been a long time since I last saw him. As a father, I wish to see my son.”

“It's true. Husband, Xiang'er has left. He has important matters to take care of and so he couldn't stay for long.” Bi Yuntian replied.

Bi Yuntian was never a person to make jokes, so Changyang Ba had no other choice but to believe that Jian Chen had really left. Sighing, he said, “A pity that I was late then. I hadn't the idea that Xiang'er would be in such a hurry to leave. It's rare that he comes back home already. It seems that our son is quite rushed if he has to leave home as quickly as he came then.”

“Little Yun, I've heard that the fourth master has broken through to become a Saint Ruler. Would that tidbit of information be true?” An elder besides Changyang Ba suddenly; he was one of the doyen of the Changyang manor.

The fellow doyens of the clan immediately looked to Bi Yuntian expectantly. Each of their eyes glowed brightly as if waiting for her answer. The reason why all of the doyens gathered here today was to verify this highly important piece of information.

Seeing the highly excited looks of anticipation on everyone's faces, Bi Yuntian couldn't help but have a proud smile on her own face. "I only just asked this of Xiang'er himself. Xiang'er is truly an amazing child. Not only does he not fear any Saint Ruler, he has the strength to fight one as well."

"Is that true? That's....that's amazing! I never would have imagined that our Changyang manor would be blessed with a Saint Ruler--dear heavens! Saint Rulers are rare even on the Tian Yuan Continent; and yet our Changyang manor has one of them!"

"This is great information! Our Changyang manor has been blessed with an unprecedented genius. Just barely in his twenties and he has already become a Saint Ruler!"

"From now on, our Changyang manor will no longer be a smalltime clan in this part of the kingdom. With a Saint Ruler, our Changyang manor can set its eyes over the entire continent. We will be a face that everyone knows!"

"Like how the boat rises with the tides, our Changyang manor will rise too, hahaha!"

One by one, the doyens of the Changyang manor began to laugh in excitement. Each one of them were hardly able to contain their joy, and their excitement were already far beyond what they would normally be willing to express.

.....

One day later, Jian Chen and Nubis returned back to where the Nubis clan was. After his return, Ming Dong and the others immediately gathered around him.

“Brother, what in the world caused you to leave in such a hurry? You only left just two days ago, and based on the distance between the Gesun Kingdom and here, you couldn’t possibly left in this place long enough.” Ming Dong asked Jian Chen curiously for the details.

“Brother, what in the world happened? Tell us it, hopefully we can all find a solution.” Bi Lian asked in concern.

“Jian Chen, did something bad happened?” You Yue surmised with a dark expression.

Revealing a light smile, Jian Chen replied, “There’s no need for everyone to guess the situation. I can’t talk about it for now, but it isn’t anything bad. Or rather, it’s a rather good affair. Let us go our own ways for now, I’ve some things I wish to discuss with senior Huang and Jiede Tai.”

Afterwards, Jian Chen walked over to the garden where Huang Tianba and Jiede Tai were currently engaged in a game of chess. Along with Nubis, the four of them sat around a circular table where several maids brought out refreshments and drinks to adorn the table.

Due to the fact that Nubis spent the majority of his life in Cross

Mountains without leaving, the delicacies of mankind were an unknown to him. Unable to help himself, each part of the refreshments were gobbled up by him while commenting happily on the taste.

After the maids had their fun bringing even more snacks to Nubis, Jian Chen spoke to them, “You may leave now.”

“Yes!” The maids bowed before retreating away from the garden.

“Brother Jian Chen, what business might you have for you to call on us?” After the maids left, Huang Tianba opened his mouth to speak.

Jian Chen was quiet for a brief moment before replying, “I wish to find the blue-robed one named Bi Hai. The one that Situ Qing invited. Would either of you three know of a way to find him?”

“That man’s strength is as strong as mine. I’ve not enough strength to leave a mark on him.” Jiede Tai remarked.

“My Solunar Bow was able to lock onto his aura so that he shouldn’t have been able to run away, but there was some sort of mysterious escape technique he used to completely erase his aura. Even now I still can’t find him.” Huang Tianba spoke.

Jian Chen looked to Nubis in hopes that this ancient beast would know of some particular method to find Bi Hai.

Noticing his gaze, Nubis shrugged his shoulders, “I’ve never even fought with that human before, don’t look to me for advice. I’d know not where he went, but if you wished to find that tattered-robe old one, then I’d have a way. His entire body was infected with my poison, as long as he doesn’t completely neutralize the poison, I’ll be able to sense his position no matter where he is.”

Jian Chen’s eyebrows flew up, “It seems that if we wish to find his position, we have to find out from the Saint Ruler from the Sect of Dragon and Tiger himself.”

“Brother Jian Chen, don’t you have a grudge with them still? You may as well nip the problem now, with the power we have now, the Sect of Dragon and Tiger has no way of threatening us anymore.” Huang Tianba proposed.

“That was my plan.” Jian Chen nodded his head in some thought, “The Saint Ruler would do anything to kill me now and as soon as possible. If not for my fortitude, I really would’ve died at his hands. I can’t return this favor with a lenient hand, I will make him fall with our visit. Jiede Tai, stay here in the meanwhile. Nubis, senior Huang, the three of us will hurry on towards their sect.”

“Haha, brother Jian Chen is surprisingly a decisively firm type of a person. I can respect that.” Huang Tianba laughed before following Jian Chen out.

Afterwards, Jian Chen bade farewell to Ming Dong and the others before leaving with Nubis and Huang Tianba off towards the Sect of Dragon and Tiger.

The Sect of Dragon and Tiger wasn't too far away from the Heavenly Eagle Kingdom, and with Jian Chen's speed, they were easily able to reach the sect's resting grounds in no time at all. From far away, Jian Chen and them could see the people within the sect moving about.

Floating in front of the sect, Jian Chen's eyes stare frostily at the buildings down below. "Saint Ruler of the Sect of Dragon and Tiger, come out and die!" Jian Chen's voice wasn't any louder than normal, but the entire world could still hear his echoing voice.

Immediately, the Sect of Dragon and Tiger was brought into chaos. A great deal of people began to pour out from the buildings to stare up at the three figures floating in midair. They felt uneasy since they didn't recognize the three figures, but knowing that they were blatantly undermining the sect's strength, the people knew that these three people would not be weak.

Several figures flew out into the skies before quickly coming to a stop in front of Jian Chen and the other two. Each one of them stared at Jian Chen dangerously, and at the very front of this group was the sectmaster Kris.

He recognized Jian Chen straight away with a crestfallen face. All semblance of color bled away from his face at once, leaving him with an extremely pale coloration as he shrieked, "Jian Chen, it's you!"

Chapter 663: Fall Of A Saint Ruler (One)

Leveling a cold look at the horrified expression Kris had, Jian Chen revealed a callous grin, “Sectmaster Kris, so we meet again so soon.”

Kris had not even a little bit of color left in his face by now. All he could do was look behind at the dozen Heaven Saint Masters behind him with a look of utter despair.

When they accompanied the Saint Ruler last time, Jian Chen had killed off several of their Heaven Saint Masters and drastically reduced the Sect of Dragon and Tiger’s strength. The Heaven Saint Masters with him here today were ones that recently broke through thanks the several millenia’s worth of knowledge saved up by the Sect of Dragon and Tiger.

At mention of the name ‘Jian Chen’, the other Heaven Saint Masters all blanched. They didn’t participate in the fight with Jian Chen last time, but the horrifying story about how Jian Chen killed several of them with a single palm was told to them. They knew that Jian Chen was young, but his strength was already past into the Saint Ruler realm, a realm that was completely beyond what they could fight against.

“Jian Ch--Jian Chen, ju--just what are you planning to do?” A slight stammer arose in Kris’ voice when he looked behind at the other two figures with Jian Chen. He was nervous and completely intimidated by the enormous power the other side had. With the Heaven Saint Masters gathered here, their combined powers wouldn’t even be enough to give the Saint Rulers as big as a

problem of having food stuck between their teeth. Not only could these three kill them at a flick of the finger, there was no hope of escape for the Heaven Saint Masters.

Jian Chen couldn't help but smile at the completely cowed figure that was Kris. "Sectmaster Kris, fear not, I didn't come today to make trouble with you Heaven Saint Masters. Hurry up and call out your Saint Ruler."

His words caused the Heaven Saint Masters behind the sectmaster to let out a long exhale in relief. The heart that was threatening to leap out from their throats finally resettled back into their chests. But the last few words spoken by Jian Chen was still enough to cause some pain for them.

"Jian Chen, our previous sectmaster hasn't returned since the battle!" Kris spoke beneath his breath, as if carefully observing Jian Chen's reaction in fear that Jian Chen might just kill him out of anger. Right now, his entire life was literally resting on the palm of Jian Chen's hand.

"What, your Saint Ruler isn't here?" Jian Chen spoke with a heavy look.

Kris' heart skipped a beat at the icy look in Jian Chen's face. Without delay, he quipped, "Ever since our escape, the previous sectmaster never returned back to the sect. None of us know where he is."

Nubis' tongue flicked in and out from his lips before looking to

Jian Chen. “They speak correctly. That man hasn’t returned, there is no scent of his being in the air.”

Thinking for a brief moment, Jian Chen spoke, “It seems that we must go find him then, starting from the other two guests. Nubis, you must know where one of them went, please lead the way.”

“The response is weakening, he must be in the process of detoxifying it. We need to hurry or else he’ll completely detoxify himself, leaving us with no trace to follow.” Nubis spoke.

“Then there’s no time to lose. We need to go at once.” Jian Chen responded before flying away with Nubis and Huang Tianba.

Watching the three men fly away, the men from the Sect of Dragon and Tiger let out a sigh in relief. Their foreheads were all completely drenched with sweat due to their anxiety from this stand off. Although the three of them didn’t feel as if they were Saint Rulers, the amount of pressure exuded onto them was still extremely massive and practically scared them out of their wits.

“Sectmaster, what should we do? Although they aren’t after us, how do we make sure that they don’t do so later?”

“As Saint Rulers, they don’t even need to bother fighting one of us. But below them is the rest of the Flame Mercenaries, do you think they’ll send them after our sect to eliminate us? With our strength, we stand no chance of fighting them.”

“Ai, if I knew that such a day would come, I’d never would have sought trouble with such an outstanding genius. We’ve brought trouble onto our heads.”

Quibbling amongst each other, the Heaven Saint Masters from the Sect of Dragon and Tiger continued to speak about just how they gained a powerful enemy with furrowed eyebrows.

“Sectmaster, the Flame Mercenaries are far too close to us. If we stay here, we won’t be safe. We should evacuate the sect at once.” One of the elders spoke to Kris.

“Yes, sectmaster, we should hurry and evacuate right away. This way, we’ll be safer than before.” Another elder spoke out in agreement.

Kris shook his head however with a sigh, “A migration of the sect isn’t as easy as you say it is. We don’t have that many disciples, but there’s still several thousand of them. There’s no way we could move so many people without a trace, and neither can we disappear without a trace to begin with. The Flame Mercenaries have grown extremely strong and their names have spread throughout the area. Not a single person here doesn’t know their name. If they wish to find us, then we’d have no way of escaping into any direction. Where would you even propose we run off to? There’s nowhere to go, and nowhere to hide. Unless we give up on our disciples and escape by ourselves would we stand a chance, but I, Kris, will never do that.”

“Then what should we do, sit here and wait for our deaths?” Someone asked.

“Our personal relationship with Jian Chen isn’t too far gone. The one that he has an unforgivable relationship with is the sectmaster himself. See how he didn’t do a thing to us when he first came. I can guess that Jian Chen doesn’t plan on killing us. There’s time to turn this situation around, as long as we find a day to visit them to offer up our apologies, I believe could make this mountain into a molehill and eventually a gone deal.” Kris replied.

.....

In a vast mountain range stood an ancient-looking manor. This manor was extremely quiet with nary a sound to be heard. No one could be seen either, making it seem like an abandoned manor if anything where no one lived. From the outside, the manor looked dilapidated, but the interior was utterly spotless.

At this moment, a white-robed man was standing right next to the grim-looking Ge Qiu in the center of a room. Both of them looked worried and extremely uneasy.

At this moment, the sounds of footsteps could be heard as another elder came walking into the room to sit by the elderly man.

“Ge Qiu, how goes detoxifying the poison?” The second man asked the first.

Ge Qiu nodded his head, “The poison of a Golden-Striped Silver Snake is well deserving of its name if it can endanger the life of

even a Saint Ruler. If not for the fact that I'm stronger than the snake, then this poison surely would've been a lot harder to detoxify."

He sighed before looking back to the elder to condemn him, "Situ Qing, I told you before to not meddle with the affairs of the people. And yet you still don't listen. Are you content now? A powerful foe has appeared, and he invited the grand elder of Mercenary City. How will you deal with this now? If not for the fact that the grand elder is loathed to do anything to us, our group would have been unable to escape from that place alive."

Situ Qing's face grew rigid. "I didn't think that Jian Chen would have such a mountainous support behind him. He has not only the grand elder of Mercenary City as a patron, but an ancient beast of extremely strong strength. Ai, killing him will be even harder now."

Ge Qiu's eyes blinked, "Situ Qing, the way I see it, you're asking for death. Even now, you still wish to kill Jian Chen. You should think about how to protect yourself. While you're safe here in the meanwhile, it won't be long til they find you. Sooner or later, they'll arrive here and drag even this manor into your troubles. Ai, I've been brought into your own troubles by helping you out."

"Ge Qiu, you're right. For the sake of not implicating the manor if they arrive here, I'll be on my way away from this place as soon as possible." Situ Qing stood up as if to prepare to leave.

"You cannot fight them by yourself. You may as well run as far away as you can." Ge Qiu offered up his suggestion.

Just then, the expression on Ge Qiu's face changed. "They've come already. Situ Qing, it's too late for you to even leave it seems."

Chapter 664: Fall Of A Saint Ruler (Two)

“You cannot fight them by yourself. You may as well run as far away as you can.” Ge Qiu spoke. But then as soon as he finished speaking, his expression changed shortly afterwards, “They’ve come already. Situ Qing, it’s too late for you to even leave it seems.” He said.

Situ Qing blanched, “Have they already found us here?” He whispered.

Ge Qiu nodded his head solemnly. “They’re already outside!”

“Impossible! This place is hidden extremely well and extremely far away. We left no traces when we escaped back then, how could they have found us?” Situ Qing was besides himself in panic. Jian Chen’s sudden arrival was extremely unexpected to him.

“There’s a total of three people there. That troublesome snake and the patriarch of the Huang family. With the two of us, that’ll be a hard force to deal with. But this manor belongs to me, and if I interfere anymore, then this manor will possibly face extinction. The people behind this manor might be strong, but the people behind Jian Chen are equally strong--especially that grand elder. This is a predicament. Situ Qing, please forgive me for being unable to help you.” Ge Qiu sighed helplessly.

“It seems I can only try to run as far as I can. The difference between our strengths isn’t too high. If I try running, I might just be able to make my escape.” Situ Qing muttered.

.....

Outside the manor, Jian Chen, Nubis, and Huang Tianba stood in the skies with a icy look down onto the quiet floor grounds. Despite not a single person in sight, the three of them knew that this manor wasn't completely abandoned.

With their strength, they could naturally hear every single footstep within the quiet manor. In total, there were several hundred people, but these people were all hidden away in their rooms to cultivate and weren't moving at all from.

"I've lost sense of the the old one. This means my poison has been fully detoxified by him. But judging from the last second, he is hidden away in this place." Nubis commented.

Jian Chen's presence had also completely surrounded the manor, enabling him perfect vision of the entirety of the area. Sighing, he spoke, "So there was a hidden school in this place. There's just about five hundred men, but their combined strength is far beyond what the Sect of Dragon and Tiger can boast. About half of their men are Earth Saint Masters at the very least, and they've several times more Heaven Saint Masters as well."

"What a unique school this is. Everyone is hidden away to practice their cultivation, making them genuine hermits that have detached themselves from the secular world. Becoming Saint Rulers would be no problem for such figures that stand aloof like this. Even these mere Earth Saint Masters would be capable of

achieving such a height, what a remarkable place.” Huang Tianba praised.

Jian Chen nodded his head in agreement as well. This school was extremely different to all the other schools he had once seen. But he cleared out his throat to speak, “Master of the manor to this place, please come on out for a chat.”

Jian Chen’s voice had spread throughout the entire manor with such volume that even the hermits deep in a meditational trance were shaken awake. Immediately, all the doors in the manor flew open as men after men came filing out. One by one, they looked up at the three men in the air, and but even Jian Chen’s appearance had brokered no immediate change in their expression or even eye light.

In an instant, the previously quiet manor was filled with clamor and men from every corner.

Twenty-something Heaven Saint Masters dressed in plain clothing appeared in the skies to come to a stop on equal grounds with Jian Chen and the other two. The leader of the group was an elderly figure with hair tied up behind his back. Cupping his hands, he spoke kindly, “How may I address these three sires? This one is the housekeeper of the manor, Bing Huo. Pleased to make your acquaintance”

“You may step down.”

Just as Jian Chen was about to reply, an elderly voice suddenly

spoke out from the manor. This voice wasn't as loud, but everyone could hear it nonetheless. Soon after, a single elderly figure in sackcloth clothing came forward into the skies.

“We pay our respects to the manor lord!”

As soon as this elder appeared, every single Heaven Saint Master in attendance immediately bowed to pay their respects.

“It's you!” Jian Chen immediately smiled upon sight of this elder.

“Old one, our fight has yet to finish. We should continue it today and see just who the real winner once in for all.” Nubis hissed, ready to fight at a moment's notice.

The elder moved to the front of the group to look at the three men. Turning his head back, the elder spoke, “Bing Huo, you may all leave and continue with your tasks.”

“Yes, manor lord!” The twenty Heaven Saint Masters all spoke out at once before disappearing back into the manor.

Then, the elder turned back to Jian Chen. “This one is the lord of the Four Harmonies Manor, Ge Qiu. The affairs of last time has nothing to do with this manor, I hope that you three will not try to implicate them in it. If there's business, do it with me instead.”

“You are a leader, and yet you didn't think of the consequences with making me your enemy. You've brought trouble onto my

group, and now that you see that my side is stronger than yours, you still wish to retreat without losses? How easy do you take that to be?” Jian Chen laughed.

In the middle of this conversation, a single figure in white immediately flew out from the depths of the manor to leave as quickly and quietly as he could. In a flash, he disappeared into the forest without making a single sound.

Noticing this, Ge Qiu gave a faint smile before addressing Jian Chen, “Jian Chen, I know that you have Mercenary City standing behind you, and even the ancient families fear you. But my Four Harmonies Manor has patrons of its own. Might you have heard of the Pure Heart Pavilion before?”

“Pure Heart Pavilion?” Jian Chen asked in confusion. But then one of the memories in his head came rushing back to him.

Back when he was searching for the Saint Ruler’s cave, he came across a small village where a small school was. That school’s name was the Pure Heart Pavilion.

However, the headmaster of that pavilion was only just a Heaven Saint Master and wasn’t too incredible-looking.

The name Pure Heart Pavilion led Nubis and Huang Tianba to both ponder for a moment. The Four Harmonies Manor was an extremely strong school on the continent, and there weren’t many factions that could rival them in overall strength. At the very least, they could be considered an ancient family in status.

Half a moment later, Huang Tianba seemed to have met a conclusion. His eyes light up from realization and grew wide as a result. “Pure Heart Pavilion?” He gasped. “Could it be the very same Pure Heart Pavilion as one of the ten guardian clans?”

“Correct; they are the one and the same!” Ge Qiu confirmed.

“Your....your Four Harmonies Manor has connections with the Pure Heart Pavilion of the ten guardian clans?” Huang Tianba repeated in utter astonishment.

“That is correct. Our Four Harmonies Manor are related to the Pure Heart Pavilion. And it is no ordinary relationship either. In all honesty, the Four Harmonies Manor can be considered an outer sect to the Pure Heart Pavilion. Its goal is to find cultivators from the outside that are compatible with being disciples for the Pure Heart Pavilion.” Ge Qiu spoke.

“So I see. Then you are the Pure Heart Pavilion’s outer sect. No wonder your students can all ignore the temptations of the secular world.” Huang Tianba spoke with clarity.

At the mention of the guardian clans, Jian Chen’s eyebrows furrowed together. Although he didn’t understand much about them, he knew that a guardian clan’s strength surely must be enormous and therefore difficult to take on.

“You detestable human, you are men of the guardian clans?” Nubis’ hissed between his teeth. Although he wasn’t afraid of

anything in the world, the men of the guardian clans were no pushovers. They could just as easily kill the entire Gilligan clan if push came to shove.

Huang Tianba's expression darkened by several shades. Turning his head to Jian Chen, he whispered, "Jian Chen, the guardian clans of the continent all possess obscenely strong strength. They stand miles apart from even the ancient families and have ever since protected the Tian Yuan Continent in the shadows. They aren't weaker than Mercenary City even. We should consider this a done deal. Offending the guardian clans for such a small manner would give senior Tian Jian no small amount of trouble himself."

Having listened to Huang Tianba, Jian Chen sighed. He hadn't expected to hear that this elder was in fact affiliated with one of the guardian clans. This meant he had no other choice but to give up on making him an enemy. After all, his current strength wasn't even enough to deal with an ancient family by himself, let alone the guardian clans which were even stronger than the ancient families.

"Very well then. Ge Qiu, I'll let go of the unhappy business we once had with each other before. But on one condition, you must tell me where the Saint Ruler of the Sect of Dragon and Tiger is." Jian Chen spoke.

"Jian Chen. Situ Qing has long since left. He is no longer in this manor, and even I don't know where he has gone." Ge Qiu spoke.

"Is that right?" Jian Chen asked before turning to Nubis.

Focusing for a moment, Nubis sniffed at the air with his nose and flicked his tongue out to seemingly taste it. “He has been found. He only just left, we can chase after him still.” Straight away, he transformed into a beam of golden light and shot towards the direction where Situ Qing had left in.

“We’ll be going too then.” Jian Chen and Jiede Tai immediately gave chase to follow Nubis. And in the blink of an eye, they were gone from sight.

Ge Qiu stared off into the distance where Jian Chen and the others were flying towards with a small sigh. “Situ Qing, it’s not that I don’t wish to help you, but that I’m unable to help you. Jian Chen has the grand elder of Mercenary City backing him up, and I can’t invite the Pure Heart Pavilion to help out. This matter can only be resolved by me alone; in the case something happens, the Pure Heart Pavilion won’t bother to help out this manor. Mercenary City is strong, and even the guardian clans are unwilling to make trouble with them over such a trivial matter, let alone a just cause. The Pure Heart Pavilion has no interest in interfering at all I’m afraid.”

Chapter 665: Fall Of A Saint Ruler (Three)

In a mountain range, the white-robed Situ Qing could be seen borrowing the cover of the forest to make a speedy but silent escape. Not a single sound could be heard from his movements, and even traces of his movements weren't seen. He was even afraid of using Spatial Force to aid his escape until he made it out of the Four Harmonies Manor. The use of Spatial Force could be felt by a Saint Ruler, and that would immediately reveal his location.

Since he was trying to hide his tracks, he couldn't travel as fast. So traveling fifty or so kilometers took a dozen times slower than usual.

"I've traveled a decent distance; should be able to use the Spatial Force now I suppose. I need to meet with Bi Hai, we won't be a match for the three of them, but at the very least we can secure a better chance of survival." Situ Qing thought to himself before a sudden feeling forced him to turn his head behind. "They're almost here! Dammit, I've forgotten about that snake."

Without any more hesitation, Situ Qing immediately made use of his Spatial Force to join with the world itself and fly off with incredible speed away from his pursuers in hopes of widening the distance. Since he was as good as exposed, there wasn't any further need to hide. In this case, the best thing to do was to move as fast as possible.

Situ Qing's usage of the Spatial Force was ultimately detected by Huang Tianba, whose eyes immediately swung to look down at the concentrated patch of trees where Situ Qing was at. "I've found

him. He's using his Spatial Force ten kilometers ahead of us."

"Out of the three of us, only you have enough understanding of the mysteries of space to catch up to him. Hurry up and chase after him, he has not my poison, and so I cannot detect him if he travels too far away." Nubis spoke.

"Worry not, he won't escape me." Huang Tianba laughed. A golden bow immediately appeared in his hand; it was the Solunar Bow!

Pulling back on the drawstring of the bow, a golden arrow immediately materialized out of thin air. With a twang, the arrow was released with frightening speed towards Situ Qing. As it traveled through the skies, the arrow almost looked as if it was melting into the world.

The abnormality of this arrow was that there was no ear-piercing whistling that usually accompanied the shooting of an arrow. It was as if the arrow was one with the world and could pierce through space itself to chase down Situ Qing.

After he shot the arrow, Huang Tianba slowly put down his bow, "This arrow has locked onto his aura. Even if he's a Ninth Heavenly Layer Saint Ruler, he won't be able to escape it. This arrow can travel in between space itself."

"Ruler Armaments left behind by a Ninth Heavenly Layer are considerably strong if it can have such an effect like this." Nubis spoke out honestly.

No sooner did Nubis finished speaking when just thirty kilometers away, the arrow Huang Tianba fired out made contact with Situ Qing.

“Senior Huang, Nubis, lets go, quickly now. We must not let him escape this time.” Jian Chen spoke.

Utilizing the Spatial Force, Huang Tianba and Nubis both immediately blended in with the world itself and borrowed its power to speed forward. In the blink of an eye, they flew far away from Jian Chen towards Situ Qing.

Jian Chen himself began to use the Illusionary Flash to travel by himself since he had not yet understood the mysteries of space.

When Jian Chen arrived, he could only see that the Saint Ruler from the Sect of Dragon and Tiger was slammed against a broken cliff-side with blood dripping down from his mouth. Right in front of him was Huang Tianba and Nubis standing in a way that would prevent Situ Qing from escaping.

The power of a Ruler Armament was extremely strong, and the arrows shot forward from the Solunar Bow was strong enough to force even the Fifth Heavenly Layer Saint Ruler Bi Hai to use up a considerable amount of energy even though he was stronger than Situ Qing. This arrow wasn't made with Saint Force either, it borrowed the strength of the world to add to its strength, and therefore was undeniably harder to block. Thus, even if Situ Qing was able to block it, he wouldn't come out unscathed.

Jian Chen couldn't help but reveal a grand smile at the beaten figure of Situ Qing. "Situ Qing, this time you've nowhere to escape."

Situ Qing's face was especially dark. His eyes glared dangerously at Jian Chen with a snarl on his lips, "Jian Chen, the only regret I have was that I didn't kill you before. If I did, then none of this would've happened."

"Wrong. You should regret ever offending me and choosing to be my enemy. Otherwise, you would still be the high and mighty Saint Ruler of the Sect of Dragon and Tiger rather than being beaten into such a state. You've thrown your disciples away to the wolves to escape by yourself, how despicable." Jian Chen laughed in disdain at Situ Qing.

A gleam of light appeared in Situ Qing's face as he sighed, "You're right in that aspect. I should blame my greed, if I didn't grow curious about that strange power of yours, perhaps this wouldn't have happened."

"What a shame that it's too late to regret." By now, Jian Chen felt lazy to continue speaking, "Forward, kill him at once!" Upon finishing his command, Jian Chen immediately shot forward with Nubis and Huang Tianba to strike down Situ Qing. Since the three of them were surrounding him, not much time would be needed to kill the Saint Ruler.

Situ Qing wasn't one to sit and wait for his death however.

Without reservation, he materialized his Saint Weapon into view to fight for his life. Swing after swing, he tried his best to fight off the three enemies in a furious display of might that shook the space around them.

Huang Tianba put away his Solunar Bow in favor of bringing out his giant sword to fight Situ Qing. Each time he swung his giant sword, the powerful energy in the blade ripped at the space in the world.

Nubis' hands had formed golden claws that swiped and danced in the air to surround Situ Qing with the swipes. In twos and threes, claw marks began to appear all over his body with dreadful looking wounds. At the same time, Nubis' poison began to make its way into Situ Qing's body.

Jian Chen had his Chaotic Force covering his entire body so as to increase his defenses to the maximum. As of now, his fist was several times harder than steel as it struck at Situ Qing's Saint Weapon. Despite his fist having a small split from where the Saint Weapons struck, the flesh quickly healed back up over itself as if it didn't happen to begin with.

The battle between the four people was extremely intense. From the ground to the skies, they fought with explosive blow after blow. Even the ninth heavens would be able to hear this battle, and the power that came with the battle splashed over the entire area with such force that even the skies above began to change color from a lighter light to a darker shade.

Down below, the mountains they were fighting over continued to

crumble and collapse with countless of rubble avalanching downwards into the forests. Dust was kicked up into the air and completely buried the vegetations or else crushed them into pieces.

The earth quaked. The mountains shook. In this one moment, the mountain range was experiencing an event that may as well be the same as the ending of the world.

Situ Qing was inevitably facing impossible odds. After a dozen exchanges, his entire body was bloodsoaked and countless of cuts and claw marks from what Huang Tianba and Nubis inflicted.

Now that things had progressed to this, Situ Qing knew that there was no way he could escape with his life today. Determined, he cried out, “Jian Chen, even if this old man dies today, I’ll see to it that you won’t be let off so easily!” No sooner did he finish speaking did the Saint Ruler fly up into the skies. Coincidentally, his aura began to spike almost exponentially--it was a sign that he was breaking through from the Fourth Heavenly Layer to the Fifth Heavenly Layer. With his aura filling up the world around him and almost solidifying in pressure, even Jian Chen felt this pressure as if he was thrown into a quagmire. As thus, his mobility felt extremely limited.

Sensing the increase in the Saint Ruler’s aura, Jian Chen thought to himself, “Did he breakthrough?”

“Careful, he’s using up his own lifeforce to temporarily increase his strength; he’s on equal grounds with us now.” Huang Tianba spoke grimly. With Situ Qing fighting with his life on the line, the him of now posed quite a threat to the three of them.

“Jian Chen, accompany this old man to the underworld!” Completely ignoring Nubis and Huang Tianba, Situ Qing focused completely onto Jian Chen. His eyes were locked solely onto Jian Chen, and his Saint Weapon flew with amazing speed to strike at Jian Chen’s head in an attempt to demolish Jian Chen’s soul and kill him completely.

As he attacked, the space around the two men solidified almost as if it froze over to lock Jian Chen’s body into place. For the time being, Jian Chen would be unable to move from his spot, and for the first time since this battle begun, Jian Chen felt that he was at a very good odd of dying to this one strike.

Chapter 666: Fall Of A Saint Ruler (Four)

“Is this the power of a Fifth Heavenly Layer Saint Ruler? It’s far stronger than a Fourth Heavenly Layer Saint Ruler.” Jian Chen remarked to himself. Up against the Fourth Heavenly Layer Situ Qing, Jian Chen wasn’t at a good chance of winning, but he was at the very least assured that Situ Qing would be unable to pose a threat to him. But now that Situ Qing’s strength broke through to the Fifth Heavenly Layer, Jian Chen felt that he was up against a tremendous threat. This incoming strike would spell out a fatal blow to even him.

“Raah!” Jian Chen howled. All of the Chaotic Force in his dantian immediately rushed out of it to reinforce his entire body so that he could break free from the solidified space around him.

The solidified space around Jian Chen was assaulted by the surge of power coming from Jian Chen’s body and shook violently. In no time at all, the solidified space around Jian Chen had returned back to its normal condition and gave Jian Chen back his mobility. As a result, Jian Chen was able to dodge so that Situ Qing’s sword passed harmlessly overhead.

“Whoosh!” At that moment, another golden arrow shot at the Saint Weapon poised for Jian Chen’s forehead and knocked it aside. Simultaneously, a golden figure immediately sped in from the side and slammed against the Saint Weapon of Situ Qing so that it wouldn’t be able to hit Jian Chen again.

Being blocked by these two men were already within Situ Qing’s

considerations. His reaction to them were equally swift, and his right hand gave up the Saint Weapon in favor to strike at Jian Chen's chest with his fist.

“Bang!”

Following an explosive sound, the clothes on Jian Chen's chest exploded into powder and his chest into a mangled mess as if it were made of clay. Spiderweb-like fractures began to crawl up his skin. This would be the very first time Situ Qing's palm had enough energy to invade Jian Chen's body and disperse the Chaotic Force in it to destroy his internal organs. Even his heart had failed to escape injury and was torn apart.

Spitting out a mouthful of blood, Jian Chen's body fell from the skies and landed ruthlessly onto the ground below. His descent had been strong enough to smash into the ground and form a giant crater in the earth.

“Brother Jian Chen!” Huang Tianba cried out in alarm. Stabbing out at Situ Qing with frightening speed, he successfully skewered Situ Qing's body and then followed it up with a powerful palm strike onto his back to send Situ Qing flying downwards before he could react.

Situ Qing let out a mouthful of blood; his entire body came hurtling down to the ground at great speed. As it were, his life was already at an end, and using his own lifeforce to temporarily boost his own strength left him with practically no lifeforce left. Combined with the poison from Nubis invading his body and devouring his innards, he was already an arrow at the end of its

trajectory, a candle with its wick almost burnt away.

“Boom!”

Another explosion. Situ Qing was sent tumbling a hundred meters away from Jian Chen and slammed into the ground. The cliff in which he was smashed against was shattered into many different pieces.

Flying down, Huang Tianba and Jian Chen descended from the skies to reach the edge of where Jian Chen was.

“Brother Jian Chen, are you alright!” Huang Tianba asked in concern. Waving his hand, the energy of the world pulled Jian Chen up from the crater and gingerly laid him down onto the nearby patch of grass.

Nubis stared carefully at the beaten body of Jian Chen as well. He was more than aware of just how powerful Situ Qing’s palm strike was, and even if Jian Chen’s body was perversely strong, it wasn’t still at a comparable level with those of a Saint Ruler. Since Situ Qing was at the Fifth Heavenly Layer, Jian Chen would be hard-pressed to accept it.

Of the nine Heavenly Layers that defined the Saint Ruler realm, each Heavenly Layer was extremely substantial in difference from one another. The Fifth Heavenly Layer and Fourth Heavenly Layer for example had a tremendous difference from one another. If a Saint Ruler of the Fifth Heavenly Layer were to fight a Fourth Heavenly Layer Saint Ruler, he’d be able to fight two of them to a

standstill. Their comprehension of the mysteries of the world and mysteries of space was substantially lacking in contrast to the Fifth Heavenly Layer Saint Ruler. Jian Chen was no Saint Ruler in this aspect, and he could only borrow on his powerful body to contest against a Saint Ruler. But in front of a Fifth Heavenly Layer Saint Ruler, Jian Chen was powerless.

Jian Chen's face was extremely pale from his spot on the grassy ground. Several mouthful of blood were coughed out, but he managed to look weakly at Huang Tianba and Nubis anyways. "I'm managing. At the very least, I am still alive. It was unexpected that his palm strike would be that strong; I was almost unable to bear the brunt of it."

Seeing Jian Chen manage to respond, Nubis and Huang Tianba both felt their concerns ease up a bit. Giving a faint smile, Huang Tianba spoke, "Jian Chen, there is a huge difference in strength between a Saint Ruler of the Fourth Heavenly Layer and the Fifth Heavenly Layer. With your powerful body, you'd be able to make do against a Fourth Heavenly Layer Saint Ruler, but a Fifth Heavenly Layer Saint Ruler would make you look as if you had no defenses at all."

"But the fact that you were able to stay alive after receiving an all out blow from a Fifth Heavenly Layer Saint Ruler is a very proud achievement to have."

Painfully, Jian Chen struggled to climb to his feet, "Has Situ Qing died?"

"Of course not. Do you really think a Saint Ruler is that easy to

kill? He's a very enduring person, and unless there's a great difference in strength, a Saint Ruler won't die so easily." Nubis spoke. "But that Saint Ruler has already been poisoned by my toxins. Combined with the fact that he used his own life force as fuel for his power, he's not too far away from death itself."

News of that made Jian Chen immediately ignore his own injured state to try and drag himself to where the Saint Ruler was a hundred meters away.

He could see that Situ Qing's face was as pale as paper due to the lack of blood flowing in it. His eyes were closed and still from where he was, and his blood continue to pool underneath him in large amounts. Even the poison that had invaded his body started to appear in the blood around him.

Now that he used up his life force, he looked even older than before. His previously grizzly-white hair was all gone from his head, and his skin was wrinkled all over the place with flab that covered his face.

Seeing the appearance of Situ Qing, Jian Chen had felt rather conflicted about the situation. This man was a Saint Ruler, a high and mighty entity. But now he was reduced to such a miserable state like this.

Taking in a deep breath, Jian Chen schooled the emotions in his mind and looked to the man. "I know you haven't died just yet. You must answer me. That man named Bi Hai from the other day, where is he now?"

Slowly, Situ Qing opened his eyes to stare weakly at Jian Chen. With an equally weak voice, he spoke, “What....vitality you have. To be...alive still... from that.”

“Answer my question!” Jian Chen glared.

A slight smile appeared on his face, “I’m already a dying person, give up on trying to learn something from me.”

A furious light entered Jian Chen’s eyes, “That may be true, you’re a dying person about to leave this world. But don’t forget you still have thousands of disciples in your Sect of Dragon and Tiger. Do you wish for their corpses to be buried with you into your next life?”

Some vigor reentered Situ Qing’s eyes at that. Glaring, he looked to Jian Chen, “Ji--Jian Chen. You....what are you...planning?”

Smiling victoriously, Jian Chen replied, “Seems like you still care somewhat for the Sect of Dragon and Tiger. I, Jian Chen, promise you that if you tell me what I need to know about Bi Hai, then I’ll spare the Sect of Dragon and Tiger. If you don’t, then I’ll wipe them off the continent.”

Hesitation befell Situ Qing for a brief moment. Then finally, a look of resolution appeared on his face as he finally relented to Jian Chen for the sake of the Sect of Dragon and Tiger. “You win, Jian Chen. I....I’ll tell you about Bi Hai. I hope that you’ll....keep to your word then....”

Chapter 667: A Mystery Of The Past

“Several ten thousand kilometers from here, there’ll be a mountain range. Bi Hai will be in a cave recuperating from his wounds and cultivating. This map has a detailed note of his location. As long as you follow it, you’ll find him.” By now, Situ Qing’s voice was extremely faint, but he managed to pull out a map from his Space Ring.

Taking the map from Situ Qing, Jian Chen began to trace the details on it to arrive at Bi Hai’s location.

“Situ Qing, you swear that Bi Hai is here? I hope that you won’t be risking the lives of all your disciples on a small joke.” Jian Chen warned.

“The friendship between Bi Hai and I aren’t as deep as you think. I used him merely for protection, so rest assured. I’ve no reason to give you a false map. For the past dozen years, Bi Hai has been living in the same place. But after we split, our relationship with one another was split as well. Where he is now is unknown to me, that all depends on your luck.” Situ Qing spoke.

Putting down the map, Jian Chen spoke, “Very well then, I’ll believe you in the meanwhile. If your information is true, then I’ll forgive the Sect of Dragon and Tiger. Is there anything else you wish to say?”

Situ Qing’s face was already beyond pale by this point with all of his life force practically gone from his body. The doughty body of

his was nearly shriveled away to being a skeleton with only a layer of skin covering the bones.

Slowly, he closed his eyes. The life in them were already growing fainter and fainter, and he grew quiet. At last, he spoke, “I should apologize to the Sect of Dragon and Tiger for the troubles I’ve brought onto them. So many experts have lost their lives, and yet I’ve abandoned them to escape with my own life. I, Situ Qing, have no more face to show to the juniors of the sect. Jian Chen, I hope that you’ll bury my body in the wildlands and let the beasts gnaw at my corpse. Only by this will my guilt be alleviated by some degree....”

And with that, Situ Qing died. His body grew icy cold from the lost of its spirit from its departure from the world.

Standing above the corpse of Situ Qing, Jian Chen, Huang Tianba, and Nubis all looked at it with a conflicted expression.

An existence as mighty as a Saint Ruler had died right in front of them.

Some time passed on by before Jian Chen finally exhaled and waved his hand to take the Space Ring Situ Qing had. Then with another wave, the earth next to him was immediately dug out to form a ten meter wide crater. Using the power of his mind, he slowly lowered the corpse of the Saint Ruler into it and buried him.

Situ Qing’s last words may have been to have Jian Chen leave his corpse for the beasts to devour on, but Jian Chen had no intention

on doing so. He was a Saint Ruler after all, and even if he was dead, it was by no means proper to treat his corpse like that.

“Brother Jian Chen, now that we’ve killed Situ Qing, what shall our next step be? Shall we continue to enact vengeance on Bi Hai?” Huang Tianba asked from behind.

“We continue on to find Bi Hai.” Jian Chen didn’t hesitate to reply.

From there, the three of them decided to rest for half the day in that place before leaving. In that time span, Jian Chen’s wounds were completely healed, allowing Jian Chen to travel freely with Huang Tianba and Nubis to fly onwards.

“Jian Chen, how did you manage to get ahold of such a perversely strong body like this? Your wounds are worse than mine, and yet your recovery rate would leave anyone speechless. No matter what the wound, only half a day is required for them to heal up over itself. This one cannot understand you at all.” Nubis eyed Jian Chen with some shock and jealousy.

“Indeed, brother Jian Chen. Your body is indeed strange if it can take a blow from a Fifth Heavenly Layer Saint Ruler. If I didn’t know any better, I would’ve thought that you were a magical beast.” Huang Tianba remarked.

“According to the knowledge of I, the great Nubis, there is no magical beast that would have as strong of a physique as Jian Chen before they reached the seventh class. We magical beasts have

stronger bodies than humans, but to have something like this, the eighth class would be required.” Nubis paused briefly at this point, “Once some time ago, I had suspicion you were the wargod Aergyns of the Bai clans. But your personality is not at all like what he was like, making you very unlikely to be him.”

“Wargod Aergyns of the Bai clan!” Huang Tianba exclaimed as soon as he heard the name, “I’ve heard of him before! According to the legends, Aergyns was the strongest person in the Bai clan, and he was seen as a god in even his own clan! He was respected by countless of people and his strength was terrifying--he became a Saint Emperor at one point in his life!”

Nubis couldn’t help but hiss deprecatingly at that, “Using a mere Saint Emperor to describe the wargod Aergyns would be belittling an existence as great as him.” Thinking back the memories of the past, Nubis began to retell pieces of the past with great clarity.

“Your knowledge of the past is lacking. Allow this one to regale the story then.” Nubis spoke after tidying up his thoughts. “In that time, his strength was extremely strong. He stood at the top along side with the other three strongest of the their respective races. These four came to be known as Mo Tianyun of humanity, the Winged Tiger God of the beast clans, the Seagod of the deep waters and the wargod Aergyns of the ancient Bai clan.”

“The strength of these four were far beyond what anyone could possibly imagine. They were beings that long since transcended what a Saint Emperor could do, and as the strongest four in the world, they were people of the utmost glory. Living gods walking amongst mortals.”

“What--transcended even a Saint Emperor!” Jian Chen and Huang Tianba remarked in shock at the same time. This was far too shocking to hear, even if it was about humanity’s strongest, Mo Tianyun and the Winged Tiger God of the beast clans. From what Nubis said, they were stronger than even what a Saint Emperor were said to be.

Aside from the three named figures, the one that left Jian Chen completely confused was about the seagod. He had never heard of something like that, and it left him undeniably shocked.

“Of course. That era of time had no end of strong individuals, but the individuals that shined the most were Mo Tianyun and the Winged Tiger God. The Winged Tiger God once led us to fight the Bai clan, only for them to send out the wargod Aergyns himself to fight. The Bai clan was later repelled from the Shou Shen Continent, but they were then led to the Tian Yuan Continent afterwards.

“Originally, the wargod Aergyns led a group of the strongest individuals from the Bai clan to attack and drive humanity out of the continent. But it was then that Mo Tianyun appeared. His strength was astounding to say the least; he was no weaker than our Winged Tiger God. By himself, he managed to drive back the Bai clan. Even Aergyns suffered defeat at Mo Tianyun’s hand.

“The Bai clan and humanity fought for a hundred years in countless of wars and suffered countless of casualties from both sides. Ultimately, Aergyns decided the war for the Tian Yuan Continent to be not worth continuing and gave it up to focus on

attacking the Shou Shen Continent in hopes of recapturing their original lands.

“This time, the battle between the Bai clan and the beast clans persisted for thirty more years. Countless of losses incurred from the beast clans, but ultimately the Winged Tiger God could bear no more and finally managed to kill Aergyns.

“With Aergyns gone, the Bai clan lost the power to fight against both the beast clans and humanity. They gave up their original lands and continued the search for a new home in a vile and poor continent. From then, they have spent their time recuperating and waiting. But they’ve never stepped foot on either the Tian Yuan Continent or the Shou Shen Continent since then.”

Jian Chen and Huang Tianba both found it very hard to remain calm having listened to Nubi’s story. It was a great amount to take in, and they found it to be extremely hard to do so. The mysteries of the past that Nubis was speaking of was very rarely heard of to the humans.

But what really made them stunned beyond belief was of the existence that transcended the Saint Emperor realm, wargod Aergyns of the Bai clan. And yet, someone as strong as he died at the hands of the Winged Tiger God.

There was still the unnamed seagod from the sea abyss. Even he was a being that surpassed that of a Saint Emperor.

It took some time before the two men regained their bearings.

Jian Chen was the first to speak, “What about the sea abyss, why have I never heard of that before?”

Nubis thought for a moment how to explain things. “Allow this one to explain it to you. In this world, there are four races. Humanity, the magical beasts, the Bai, and those of the sea.”

“Could the sea abyss be all one single race then?” Jin Chen asked in confusion.

“Correct. And they are not weak by any means.

“The entirety of the sea abyss is one single powerful race that lay claim to everything in the sea. Because of how the sea suits their existence, they’ve never venture beyond the shores since the last hundred thousand years. That is why the existence of the beings of the sea are a mystery to humanity. They are powerful. Far more powerful than the Bai clan and humanity.” Nubis spoke.

“So there was even beings of the sea that we didn’t know about. If not for you mentioning them today, I never would have known about their existence in this world.” Huang Tianba remarked in surprise. The things he learned today was astonishing to say the last. It was like discovering a whole new continent itself.

“On your Tian Yuan Continent, there aren’t many clans that know of the beings of the sea. Only the most ancient families would have some records of the beings down below. But their knowledge isn’t as comprehensive as mine, as the Silver Striped Golden Snakes were responsible for passing down this knowledge.

This history is forever growing, and it will never weaken with the passage of time.” Nubis spoke with pride.

Chapter 668: Patriarch Of The Bi Clan

“I’ve never gone beneath the sea, but the memories I inherited has given me a deep understanding on some aspects. They are beings that have evolved to become highly intelligent; similar to the magical beasts of land. They are an extremely powerful race, and they are the only one of the four races to never take advantage of the other three races in any conflict. They are well-suited for life under water and not on land. Thus, when the battle for land started, the clans of the sea never participated, thus making it even harder for people to learn of their existence.”

“How many champions do the clans of the sea have?” Jian Chen asked.

“They’re rather comparable in numbers compared to humanity. In terms of comprehensive strength, they could easily stand against humanity. Naturally, this is knowledge from long ago. I’ve no information on the current situation of the sea clans. And I’ve little idea if they’ve become even stronger than humanity. In that war long ago, humanity lost far too many champions while the beings of the sea managed to maintain that golden age of theirs.”

“Ai!” Nubis sighed. “According the knowledge I inherited, Mo Tianyun, the Winged Tiger God, and Aergyns once fought each other in a very intense battle. Their strengths surpassed that of a Saint Emperor, and it nearly brought the world to ruin. Even the laws of the world were bent at their whims, and the energy of the world suffered catastrophic damages. This led to the champions of humanity thinning out and becoming rarer as a result and made understanding the mysteries of the world even harder, meaning even less Saint Rulers were to be had. Compared to before,

breaking through now is far harder. Even the most promising of genius have difficulty crossing this boundary, and the realms after that only gets harder, making it require far more time to cultivate strength.”

Jian Chen and Huang Tianba were already slackjawed from all the information they were hearing. Everything that Nubis was telling them was on par with *The Arabian Nights* itself in information. Even though they had never heard of it before, they believed in it completely.

But Nubis decided that this part here would be the stopping point. Waving his hand, he spoke, “I shall say no more. Knowing about this has no good benefits. Let us focus on the task at hand.”

Afterwards, Jian Chen and Huang Tianba continued on their journey with plenty of information to digest and think about. After half a day’s worth of travel, they finally managed to arrive at the place where Bi Hai was said to be.

Upon arrival, Jian Chen felt a rather sudden sense of anxiety. It was unknown whether Bi Hai was still here or not. If he wasn’t, finding a Saint Ruler that wanted to hide himself would be extremely difficult, especially on a continent as large as the Tian Yuan Continent.

The three came to a stop in midair so that Jian Chen could survey the thickets and trees down below. “Senior Huang, the great Nubis, you two stay here. I’ll go take a look myself.”

Huang Tianba gave a deep look at Jian Chen. From what emotions Jian Chen had going on, Huang Tianba could tell that there was some sort of secret between Jian Chen and Bi Hai, so he nodded his head. “Very well. Brother Jian Chen, be careful. If he fights you, you must call out at once.”

Jian Chen nodded his head and then left the two Saint Rulers in the air to fly down by himself.

With his speed, it only took several moments for Jian Chen to traverse the remaining several kilometers to arrive at a hidden cave. It was so dark that practically nothing could be seen from the outside. But Jian Chen knew that this seemingly ordinary cave housed a Saint Ruler inside.

The further he walked into the cave, the more conflicted Jian Chen felt. All of the worries he had in his mind began to compile, and he grew afraid that Bi Hai wasn't the person he was looking for. The world had many coincidental events after all.

Jian Chen's eyes concentrated on the ground ten meters ahead of him. Letting out a sigh, he tried to calm his nerves and make his way further into the cave.

Not long after Jian Chen made a few steps into the cave, a series of footsteps could be heard from the other side. The footsteps drew closer and closer as a blue-robed elder came walking out from the darkness with his hands behind his back. It was Bi Hai.

Jian Chen's footsteps came to a stop as he looked to the elder.

The conflicting emotions in his mind refused to show on his face however, but beneath his steel demeanor was a heart that refused to slow down in tempo. Bi Hai was without a doubt here.

Emotionless, Bi Hai looked to Jian Chen with eyes that felt as if they could bore holes in Jian Chen. “So you’ve managed to find your way here. Situ Qing told you of my location I see. If I had known, I’d have changed my location earlier. I shouldn’t have stayed here after all.” His eyes flickered to the space above where Huang Tianba and Nubis were. They didn’t bother hiding their aura, so Bi Hai was easily able to detect their presence.

“Jian Chen. Even if I cannot fight the three of you, I can still run, even if you try to use a Ruler Armament. Are you willing to find out?” Bi Hai spoke without at all giving Jian Chen time to respond.

Knowing that Bi Hai was misunderstanding the situation, Jian Chen hastened to rectify it, “Senior, please don’t misunderstand. This junior came here today on matters unrelated to the battle a few days before.”

A flash of light gleamed across Bi Hai’s eyes, but he continued to look at Jian Chen with that same emotionless look. “Then why have you come?”

Thinking for a moment to clear his mind and thoughts, Jian Chen spoke, “Senior, this junior came here today for you.”

“For me?” Confusion flashed across Bi Hai’s face.

“Indeed.” Jian Chen nodded. “Senior, this junior has several items with me. Please take a good look.”

Jian Chen took out a thin manual from his Space Ring and let it hover over to Bi Hai by the use of his mindpower.

Taking the manual, Bi Hai began to flip through it. No sooner did he flip open to the first page did his expression change drastically. Shocked, his eyes flew to look at Jian Chen. He said nothing however and continued to read the manual.

Soon enough, the manual was completely thumbed through by Bi Hai, but the emotions that ran through Bi Hai’s face became even more shocked with each page. Even his hands which were holding the manual was starting to tremble from his emotions.

In no time at all, Bi Hai closed the manual shut to give Jian Chen a terrifying glare. “Where did you come across this battle skill?”

In this current moment, Bi Hai was hit with a tidal wave of emotions. For, in this manual given to him by Jian Chen, it contained the battle skills of the Bi family, the very same ones he invented long ago--the Miracle Water of Bi.

Seeing the drastic change that overcame Bi Hai’s face, Jian Chen was assured that he had found the right person. “Thirty years ago in Minghuo City, one of the cities belonging to the Karl Empire of the Three Great Empires, there was once a great family called the Bi family. Would senior happen to know of this family?”

“Boom!”

Unable to preserve his calm composure, a tremendous aura exploded forth from Bi Hai’s body and solidified the area around him so that Jian Chen felt himself unable to move a hand or foot in any direction.

Immediately, Bi Hai appeared right in front of Jian Chen with terrifying power, “Who are you!” He barked. “How did you come across the Miracle Water of Bi, are you related to the massacre of my Bi family thirty years ago?!”

“Whoosh!”

Appearing out of nowhere, a golden arrow made itself known as it flew towards Bi Hai with an ear-piercing sound. The golden arrow was locked onto Bi Hai’s aura, meaning that Bi Hai would have no way of dodging it.

A frosty light appeared in Bi Hai’s eyes as he grabbed onto Jian Chen and moved him to the front to use him as a shield against the arrow fired from a Ruler Armament.

But the result was not what Bi Hai was expecting, as the golden arrow suddenly rerouted itself besides Jian Chen to strike at Bi Hai from another direction.

Snorting, Bi Hai tossed Jian Chen to the side and took out his Saint Weapon to knock the golden arrow to the side.

As the golden arrow made contact with Bi Hai's Saint Weapon, an ear-deafening explosion rang out in the area. The energy backlash flooded the area and distorted the space itself to an extent where several pitch-dark cracks began to manifest before disappearing just as quickly as it appeared.

The mountain Bi Hai and Jian Chen were standing on began to quake before ultimately collapsing on itself, leaving both persons to fly into the skies.

At the same time, Huang Tianba came into view with the Solunar Bow in hand and the golden-robed Nubis by his side just twenty meters away. Both of them were glaring heavily at Bi Hai, and their auras were beginning to grow in amount to try and lock Bi Hai into place.

“Senior Huang, Nubis, stay your hand!” Jian Chen commanded at the two to try and de-escalate the situation.

Obeying Jian Chen, the two of them slowly withdrew their auras, but they remained where they stood without saying a word.

Bi Hai's eyes looked to the two men behind Jian Chen with the utmost of concentration. He was equal in strength to one of them, but he had no Ruler Armament. The other one was an ancient Silver Striped Golden Snake; a magical beast of antiquity that boasted tremendous battle strength. It could fight a Sixth Heavenly Layer Saint Ruler, making it an enemy to not fight if possible. Both men brought him a considerable amount of

pressure, and if the two of them were to truly fight him, Bi Hai's only option was to try to escape.

Glaring at the two for a moment, Bi Hai turned his eyes back to Jian Chen, "Who are you. Out with it." He growled.

By now, Jian Chen was completely sure that Bi Hai was who he thought he was. "Senior." He started with a quaking voice. "May you be the patriarch of the Bi family?"

"Indeed. The Bi family of the Minghuo City of the Karl Empire. That is the family this one founded." Bi Hai stated emotionlessly.

Straight away, Jian Chen's body fell to his knees in midair to kneel and speak, "This junior of the Bi family pays his respects to the patriarch!"

Chapter 669: Return Of The Ancestor (One)

As he knelt down to his knees, Jian Chen's heart was practically threatening to leap out of his chest. At last! He had found the long lost patriarch to the Bi family!

As one with the blood of Bi through his veins, this was a monumental occasion with great implications.

Bi Hai was appalled. These words spoken to him by Jian Chen had left him speechless and his actions had left him wide-eyed. For the longest of times, Bi Hai stared at Jian Chen with an askew glance, but not a single word was said.

On the other side, Huang Tianba and Nubis were both equally stunned. Just like Bi Hai, they could only really stare at the still kneeling Jian Chen while being as still as statues.

Although Huang Tianba guessed that there was some sort of secret between Bi Hai and Jian Chen, he wasn't able to tell what type of relationship there was exactly. Thus, he was just as surprised as the others were.

"What in the world is going on, has Jian Chen gone loose in the head?" Nubis was the first to finally speak. His eyes were wide-eyed from shock and his jaws were dropped open in surprise.

Huang Tianba was still speechless due to his own shock. Never did he imagine that the enemy he fought some time ago would be the ancestor to Jian Chen.

For a good while, Bi Hai didn't speak. His expression was filled with shock as he looked to Jian Chen, but at last he spoke, "Yo--you...what did you say?" He asked, unsure whether or not his hearing was still working.

"Patriarch, my mother was from the Bi family, and by extension, I am of the family line with the blood of Bi in my veins." Jian Chen replied.

"What! You're....you're a member of the Bi family?" A quivering finger of Bi Hai pointed at Jian Chen in disbelief. Since when did the Bi family have a Saint Ruler? He had never seen or heard of such a person before; surely a person like Jian Chen would leave an impression on Bi Hai.

"Yes, patriarch. This one is of the Bi family." Jian Chen replied.

"Impossible! This is impossible! If you're one of my own, how have I never heard of you before?" In this current moment, Bi Hai was filled with emotion. The Bi family was long since a source of heartache for him. He spent so many years to build the family up into what it was, and then it was destroyed all in one night; there was no way he wouldn't feel hurt by it.

He originally thought that no one survived the massacre of his family. So when he heard that there was somehow one survivor to his family; and a Saint Ruler no less. This too him, was a tremendous shock and also a great upset.

A thought struck Bi Hai, causing him to stare dangerously at Jian Chen, “Tell me who your parents were, and what name you used to be called by.”

“Patriarch, my mother is named Bi Yuntian. Thirty years ago, she was the daughter to the acting head of the Bi family. As for me, my name is unfortunately one you will not have heard of before. When the massacre happened, I wasn’t born yet.” Jian Chen replied.

“What; you weren’t born thirty years ago?” Bi Hai stared at Jian Chen in disbelief. Disbelief wouldn’t even be the right word to describe his face actually. This was the most shocking news he had ever heard of in his life in fact.

Not even thirty years old and he was already a Saint Ruler; if the Tian Yuan Continent were to hear about this, every single inhabitant would definitely be stunned.

“Blast; what a monster. He’s even younger than what I, the great Nubis, imagined! His potential is even better than the wargod Aergyns; is it possible that he is the reincarnation of Mo Tianyun? Aside from him, what other human would be as capable? It is no wonder the Winged Tiger God has reappeared in the world. I was worried that the Winged Tiger God would grow up to become a being that’d break the tranquility between the Shou Shen Continent and the Tian Yuan Continent, but it seems my concerns were unfounded.” Nubis sighed.

“You...you really are one of my descendants?” Bi Hai asked to

verify. Since this piece of information was far too amazing to believe, his heart found it hard to do so.

“Patriarch, if you don’t believe me, please follow me back to my Changyang Manor to see my mother. My mother will show you proof.” Jian Chen spoke.

“How wonderful! So there are still descendants remaining still. Come now then, we’ll go see your mother at once!” Bi Hai was completely besides himself with excitement now.

“Patriarch, I’ll take you to my Changyang Manor. If my mother knows that the patriarch still lives, she’ll definitely be overjoyed.” Jian Chen stood back up on his feet. Joy was evident in his own voice as well.

Soon afterwards, Jian Chen ordered Nubis and Huang Tianba to return to the Flame Mercenaries while he and Bi Hai returned to the Gesun Kingdom.

As soon as the two left, Huang Tianba and Nubis were left to stand in the middle of the skies. Still slightly sluggish from their shock, the two of them could only look off into the direction where Jian Chen and Bi Hai left towards.

For a while, neither of the two spoke.

“Ai, how unexpected that this would be the outcome. Bi Hai was the patriarch of Jian Chen? It’s really a freakish outcome.” After

an extended period of silence, Huang Tianba finally let out a sigh.

“The first time we met, we were enemies with him. Jian Chen was even injured by this man before. I, the great Nubis, had never thought that there would be such a secret between the two. You humans have many strange monstrosities on this world.” Nubis exclaimed.

“Jian Chen’s status isn’t just limited to being the fourth master of the Changyang Manor it seems if he’s also a descendant of the Bi. I’ve never heard of them before due to the distance between us, but they must be a strong one.” Huang Tianba spoke.

“From what the two were saying, I, the great Nubis, could hear that the Bi family was massacred. Forget it, we should head back ourselves.”

Afterwards, Huang Tianba and Nubis both returned back to Mercenary City.

Both Jian Chen and Huang Tianba were flying towards Changyang Manor with as much speed as they could muster. Perhaps it was because of the fact that he knew that there were still descendants of the Bi family that Bi Hai was excited, but his speed was extremely fast. It surpassed what Jian Chen was capable of even if he was forced to use the Illusionary Flash to travel as fast as he could.

“Allow me to carry you there, you just need to point the direction.” Bi Hai spoke as he and Jian Chen traveled with the

powers of Space. Bi Hai himself was extremely anxious to reach the Changyang Manor.

Suddenly, Jian Chen felt the world ahead of him start to distort and grow hazy as the scenery around him blended into chaos. Just barely, Jian Chen could make out the hazy blurs that were the mountains and rivers, but even those faded away from sight almost instantly. Even the bustling cities and verdant skies and clouds would change and blur away from vision as fast as they appeared.

They weren't illusions, it was only because of the fact that they were traveling far too fast to properly register as a definite image on their eyes. The speed in which they were traveling at was simply far too fast.

"This has to be the speed from when Spatial Force is used. How fast it is! This is many times faster than flying through the air; if I had this type of speed, then how long would it take to reach the Qinhuang Kingdom?" Jian Chen thought to himself. He was envious of such a speed; if he commandeered it, then he could travel home whenever he wished.

This time, it only took a short four hours to travel several hundred thousand kilometers back to the Gesun Kingdom and into Changyang Manor.

Masking his aura, Jian Chen only allowed for Chang Wuji, Qing Wuming and the other two Heaven Saint Masters to detect his arrival so that the four of them would come to greet him.

“Fourth master, you’ve returned so soon! Your departure several days ago was so sudden; the lord himself felt regretful that you couldn’t stay for a moment longer.” Chang Wuji smiled at both Jian Chen and then at the old figure behind him with an equally welcoming smile.

“Chang Wuji, I’ve something very important to attend to. We can talk later, but first, I must see mother.” Jian Chen spoke briefly to him before walking with Bi Hai towards the flower garden where his mother was. Because of his presence around the manor, he could sense that his mother was currently talking with his other aunts.

After the reconstruction of Changyang Manor, even the flower garden was expanded to three times its original size. At this very moment, Bi Yuntian and the other three aunts of Jian Chen were gathered around a pond of water to chat.

“Third sister, the past is the past. Don’t be so worried, Xiang’er is an obedient child and not a vengeful one. When Xiang’er comes back, we can have another talk where you two can talk it out.” The second aunt, Yu Fengyan spoke.

“Second sister is correct, us four sisters have lived together for over twenty years already. We shouldn’t squabble over such trivial matters like this. Third sister, when Xiang’er comes back, you should apologize to him. The three of us can help you afterwards; I’m sure that the situation will become a lot easier afterwards. Fourth sister, what do you think?” The eldest sister, Ling Long, spoke, before prompting Bi Yuntian to speak.

Bi Yuntian smiled and nodded her head to look at both Yu Fengyan and Ling Long. Then looking to Bai Yushuang, she spoke with a gentle voice, “Eldest sister and second sister are correct. Xiang’er might be someone of extreme importance, but he is still my child, and his nature has never changed since then. When he comes back, I’ll have a talk with Xiang’er and see that some plans can be made. It won’t be long until then. Soon, these small matters will be quickly forgotten about.”

Bai Yushuang’s face was streaked with tears as she looked up to Bi Yuntian pitifully, “Then please, fourth sister, please allow Xiang’er and I to have a talk. I’ve done him wrong in the past. I must apologize to him, as an aunt, I’ve failed in my duty to him. In the future, I will do my best to make up for this.”

News that Jian Chen was a Saint Ruler was no secret to the higher echelons of the Changyang Manor. Once news of that reached the ears of Bai Yushuang, became so frightened that her spirit was terror-struck as well. In her heart, she began to feel apologetic for what she had done to Jian Chen in the past, and with time, she began to try to find a day and opportunity to talk with the other three sisters to see if she could perhaps apologize to him.

“Mother, I’ve returned!” Just at that moment, the sound of Jian Chen came calling from a distance away. The four seated women all glanced upwards to see a young man and elderly figure come walking quickly towards them.

“Xiang’er is back! What fortunate timing.” Bi Yuntian grew

gleeful as soon as she recognized Jian Chen. She, Yu Fengyan, and Ling Long were all equally happy and excited to see him. Jian Chen was the pride and glory of Changyang Manor, and they all felt proud to be related to him.

Out of the four of them, only Bai Yushuang was the only one not entirely excited. Instead, she was rather apprehensive. But despite her feelings, she managed to force out a smile on her face.

Chapter 670: Return Of The Ancestor (Two)

“Mother, aunties, you all were here as well it seems.” Calling out to them all in greeting, Jian Chen approached them with a smile on his face.

“Xiang’er, your return was just in time! Come, come, your mother has some things I wish to talk about.” Bi Yuntian took Jian Chen by the hand and dragged him to sit down. Before he could even say anything, Bi Yuntian spoke first, “Xiang’er, today your mother wants to talk to you about your third aunt. She has done you wrong in the past, but in the end we are still family. I hope that you’ll forgive your third aunt and won’t begrudge her for before.”

Jian Chen was surprised by this and turned to look at his third aunt. He didn’t have a favorable opinion of her since he remembered how she used to treat him before. Ever since the beginning, she made life difficult for him with all the obstacles she put.

Bai Yushuang could feel herself grow quiet knowing that Jian Chen’s gaze was on her. Forcing a smile onto her face, she spoke, “Xiang’er, I’ve done many wrong things towards you as a result of my narrow-mindedness. I’ve failed in my duty as your aunty, and for the past few days, your third aunt has been reflecting on this. I’ve acknowledged my mistakes and wish to apologize to you, Xiang’er. I hope that you’ll forgive this aunty and give me another chance.”

But Jian Chen responded to her with a great big smile, “I’ve long

since forgotten about the past! Third aunty, you shouldn't be so concerned about such matters."

While Jian Chen didn't have a good opinion of her, she was still his aunt in the end. As the third wife of his father, she was family and someone he would see often. If he and her were to have a falling out, it would influence the entire household.

Jian Chen loved and cherished his family, as he had never one in his past life. Thus, he was reluctant to have anything sad happen to his household and would try to avoid any unfortunate situations such as this one by choosing to forgive the aunt.

Furthermore, he understood the power he had now. If he was adamant in pushing Bai Yushuang away, then the elders of the clan would surely try to protect their own statuses by treating her badly. This would then lead to Bai Yushuang being mistreated within the manor and cause problems with his father as well.

"Hahaha, the Xiang'er of today grows even more understanding with each passing day! Third sister, you've heard him. He has already forgotten about the matters of the past! You can rest assured now, there is no longer any conflict between us four sisters. There's no need for such conflict between family members after all." The eldest aunt spoke.

"Yes, of course! From now on, I will do my best to listen to my sisters!" Bai Yushuan nodded her head furiously with great joy. Knowing that Jian Chen was forgiving her had allowed all of her apprehension to simply melt away.

The second aunt looked to Jian Chen with a fond look, “Ah, Xiang’er. You’ve come back home again so soon! Why don’t you stay for longer this time?” Then, looking to Bi Hai, she gave an inquisitive look, “Xiang’er, who might this elder be?”

Bai Yushuang’s previous situation with him had knocked Jian Chen for a loop. But when Yu Fengyan brought him back to awareness of the more important matters. Straightening himself up with a solemn expression, he spoke, “Eldest aunt, second aunt, third aunt, I’ve important matters to talk with my mother. If we could have this conversation another time?”

“Ah, yes. No problem at all! Your mother hasn’t seen you for a long time, there must be plenty you two wish to talk about. We won’t take up anymore of your time then, take your time now!” Ling Long spoke before bring both Yu Fengyan and Bai Yushuang away from the garden. Passing by Bi Hai, the three of them looked only briefly at him to wonder just who he was before leaving completely.

When the three of them disappeared from sight, all that remained in the garden was Jian Chen, Bi Yuntian, and Bi Hai.

Bi Yuntian stared inquisitively at Jian Chen and was just about to ask what in the world was the matter with him when she stared behind at Bi Hai. Straight away, her face slackened as memories from several days ago came flooding back to her about what Jian Chen told her about the Bi family. Connecting two and two, Bi Yuntian quickly arrived at a conclusion.

“Xiang’er, who might this senior be?” She asked. Inside her chest, her heart was already starting to beat rapidly.

“Mother, your child has done well, I’ve found the patriarch of our Bi family, the patriarch lost to us well over thirty years ago!” Jian Chen spoke exuberantly.

“What!” Bi Yuntian’s face grew shocked; Jian Chen’s words had been like a clap of thunder to completely astound her where she stood. She had never expected to see that her own son would even find information of the lost patriarch, let alone actually bring him back.

For a good while, Bi Yuntian was speechless. Finally, she found herself looking at Bi Hai to ask with a trembling voice, “Are...are you really patriarch Bi, patriarch to my Bi family?”

Bi Hai studied Bi Yuntian closely; seeing that a descendant to his family was in front of him at this very moment had filled the elder with unrestrained emotions.

“That would be correct. I am the patriarch to the Bi family, Bi Hai.” He spoke with a hint of a shudder. In the current moment, he felt as if he was a father to the prodigal son, and his voice could hardly contain his emotions.

Now that his identity was confirmed, Bi Yuntian fell to her knees to cry out, “This descendant welcomes the return of the patriarch!”

“Up to your feet now, up I say. There are only us left to the Bi, there’s no need for such etiquette.” Bi Hai immediately hurried to lift Bi Yuntian to her feet. Now that he had found a member to his family, Bi Hai was besides himself with joy.

Slowly helping Bi Yuntian to her feet, Bi Hai opened his mouth to speak, “Tell me what you know of the massacre thirty years ago. Everything you know, you must tell me without a single detail left out!” He was frantic in his deep desire to learn just which person was the one responsible.

“Patriarch, the massacre happened when I was only a child, so I know little of the events, less of even who were responsible. But my father did tell me that they were after the inheritance of our Bi family.”

Bi Hai’s eyes flashed dangerously; whipping up a barrier to prevent sound from going past it, he placed the barrier around the entire garden. It glimmered hazily in the air, but the entire place within the sphere was now protected from the exterior without people even being able to see what was going on within.

“The beast fur, has it been taken from us?” Bi Hai asked grimly.

“It’s right here!” Jian Chen immediately produced a box from within his Space Ring to hand to Bi Hai, “Patriarch, there’s three pieces to the beast fur in here, one of them being the inheritance from our Bi family. The other two pieces were ones I found on my own during my travels.”

Without paying much attention to what Jian Chen's words, Bi Hai took the box and opened it to retrieve the pieces of the beast fur from within. When he saw the three pieces, his eyes flashed with a surprised look, "These three pieces are identical!"

"Yes, patriarch. They are all the exact same. Whether it's in size, shape, or material, it's all the same. Would you happen to know the secret behind them?" Jian Chen asked.

Chapter 671: Secrets Of The White Beast Fur

Bi Hai's hands grasped tightly at the three beast furs in his hand. For a while, he was deep in thought.

“These beast furs are of unordinary origins. I once found a piece of it in a secret location many years ago. It was with the assistance of this beast fur that I was able to make the breakthrough from a Heaven Saint Master to a Saint Ruler.”

“The beast furs have that powerful of an ability? It can truly help make the breakthrough into the mighty Saint Ruler realm?” Jian Chen couldn't help but gasp as he asked to verify the words Bi Hai said.

Sighing, Bi Hai replied, “It sounds rather incredulous at first mention, but they truly have that ability.”

“Patriarch, then how would one be able to use this piece of fur to make that breakthrough?” Jian Chen was somewhat urgent as he asked this question, he knew that it was imperative he knew this piece of information. With it, he'd be able to make the breakthrough to understanding the mysteries of the world to become a Saint Ruler.

But the patriarch shook his head with a regretful look. “I don't even know what had happened at the time when I had the beast furs. At one point, it began to release a divinely aura before the mysteries of the world began to evolve around me. I took this

chance to absorb its knowledge and comprehend it for myself to become a Saint Ruler.”

Jian Chen felt shocked by this information and could only stare incredulously at Bi Hai. In his mind, he knew that this seemingly ordinary piece of beast fur was actually capable of releasing an energy able to assist a person to make the breakthrough to become a Saint Ruler.

Pausing for a brief moment, Bi Hai began to continue his speech, “But even while I was able to become a Saint Ruler because of the beast fur, I wasn’t ever able to find out what conditions made it possible. Even after countless of experiments and research to find its secrets, they all ended up in failure. As such, I’ve spent two hundred years researching it and tried countless of methods to force its secrets out, but to no avail. With no further path to tread, I decided to pass it down within the family in hopes that one fortunate descendant would some day open up the secrets to this beast fur.”

“Alas, I had no idea that this beast fur would be such an unfortunate item. My family grew strong because of it, but at the same time, it was this same item that brought forth the downfall of it.” Bi Hai lamented grievously. The mystery that was the beast fur was a curse rather than fortune.

Jian Chen let out a sigh as well after seeing the pained look on Bi Hai’s face. The fate that befell the Bi family was simply far too tragic.

“Patriarch, if someone came to steal away the beast fur, then they have to know about the mystery behind it. Other than you, how many other people would know about it? Would they be involved?” Jian Chen asked.

Bi Hai slowly turned around to show the mother and son his back. Looking up to the skies, Bi Hai thought for a moment before scratching his head. “There is none that come to mind. I’ve never told anyone about the beast fur before besides those of the direct lineage to the Bi family. Even after thirty years since the massacre, I’ve come across no information that would help me learn about the ones responsible.”

But then his face darkened afterwards, “But the enemy is a very strong one. Thirty years ago, I was of the Fourth Heavenly Layer, and the one chasing me was at the very least a Sixth Heavenly Layer Saint Ruler. I was nearly at the brink of death itself before I finally managed to comprehend a holy art to escape. By use of this holy art, I managed to escape death by a fluke.”

“While I was able to escape with my life, I was not able to escape unscathed. My energy was extremely dilapidated, and it was then that the Saint Ruler of the Sect of Dragon and Tiger found me. He fed me Radiant Spirit Pills and helped me recover my strength, thus I owed him a favor.” Bi Hai shook his head as he remembered the past, “But I never would’ve imagined that it would be due to this favor that I would nearly kill my very own descendant. It is worth rejoicing that the situation didn’t reach such a point like that however, or I’d feel regret for all eternity afterwards.”

“Patriarch, what happens in the past should stay in the past, let’s

not talk any more about it. Aren't we doing well and fine now?" Jian Chen smiled dryly.

Bi Hai nodded his head to smile gratefully at him, "I will take revenge for the massacre of my family. That is a definite. The enemies to the Bi may be strong, and they may even be a part of an even stronger force, but with a genius like you in my family, I've faith that taking vengeance for my family will not be an impossible task."

Jian Chen grew solemn at Bi Hai's words, "Patriarch, please rest assured. I will take back the blood debt of the Bi family into my own hands. No matter who the enemy is, I will make sure they will pay the terrible price a hundredfold."

"Very well! While slightly outlandish for now, you've the strength to back up your words. However, I've still no idea to who might be our mysterious assailant, so talking about vengeance is still quite early. In the meanwhile, you should focus on bringing up your strength.. As you are now, my descendant, you've not the power to take vengeance yet. Even I myself don't have the strength to do so yet." Bi Hai spoke.

Jian Chen nodded his head earnestly.

Looking at the three pieces of beast fur for a moment longer, Bi Hai returned them to Jian Chen, "My child, you are the one remaining hope to our Bi family. I entrust these three pieces to you for safekeeping. Perhaps you'll come to see the evolution of the mysteries of the world and use it to empower yourself."

Jian Chen hesitated to accept the beast furs, but he finally relented after a while, “I believe that there’ll be more than just three of these pieces. I wonder what grand secret these pieces of fur are hiding. It can’t simply just be a tool for evolving the mysteries of the world.”

“Your guess would be correct. Ever since I saw these three pieces of fur, I came to the same conclusion myself. But I still cannot conjecture much else from that. So let us leave the discussion there. It’d be fruitless to try and comment any further without knowing anything more.” Bi Hai spoke. Turning his head to Bi Yuntian, his voice took on a gentler tone, “My child, how many more of our family do you know has survived?”

“Patriarch, including this mother and son pair here, there are still another two more for a total of four to my knowledge.” Bi Yuntian spoke darkly.

“Ai!” Bi Hai sighed sorrowfully. His face grew grim for a moment before slowly returning to its normal color, “Very well, let us not talk anymore about this topic. There’s plenty of people waiting for your outside, you two should finish up what business you have with them.”

And with that, the barrier around the garden was dispelled, causing the exterior of the barrier to once more appear in Jian Chen’s eyes along with a group of people waiting anxiously outside the barrier radius. Amongst this group was the clan leader, Changyang Ba.

“Hahaha, Xiang’er, you’ve returned! The last time you came home, your dear father was unfortunately too slow to meet with you. This time, stay for some time, why don’t you?” Changyang Ba laughed out loud as he looked to his child with pride.

Calming himself down, Jian Chen looked to his father with a smile. But then the realization of something new to his father’s presence suddenly brought an excited smile to his face, “Father, you’ve become an Earth Saint Master!”

“Hahaha! I only just broke through not too long ago. Your father is already in his forties, if I couldn’t breakthrough to become an Earth Saint Master, that’d mean I had no skill to begin with.” Changyang Ba chortled. But when his eyes landed upon Bi Hai’s figure, a respectful look immediately entered his face. When he saw the barrier put up around the garden, he knew that this person here was responsible for it and that this person had to be a Saint Ruler.

“Xiang’er, whom might this senior be?” Changyang Ba asked. Despite knowing that his son was a Saint Ruler, he still didn’t dare neglect his etiquette towards another one.

Chapter 672: Seeing Brother Changyang Hu

“Xiang’er, whom might this senior be?” Changyang Ba asked. Despite knowing that his son was a Saint Ruler, he still didn’t dare neglect his etiquette towards another one.

“Husband, this is the patriarch to my Bi family.” Not even letting Jian Chen speak, Bi Yuntian beat him to the punch.

Changyang Ba was startled. Looking at Bi Hai, he couldn’t understand just how Bi Yuntian would suddenly have her family patriarch appear here. But he quickly recollected himself and cupped his hands in greeting to Bi Hai, “Junior Changyang Ba pays his respects to the patriarch.”

“This junior pays his respects to the senior!” Following Changyang Ba’s example, the other high-ranking members of the clan cupped and bowed their hands in respect to him. Each and every single one of them knew that the ability to create a barrier was something only a Saint Ruler could do.

But none of the doyens of the clan could hardly contain themselves. Not a single one of them thought that the figure right besides Bi Yuntian would also be a Saint Ruler.

“Patriarch, this is my father!” Jian Chen introduced Bi Hai to Changyang Ba.

The expression on Bi Hai’s face didn’t change. Instead, he measured Changyang Ba up and down with an indifferent look.

“While your talent is mediocre, you gave birth to an exceptional son. Well done.”

The earlier part to Bi Hai’s words made Changyang Ba feel rather embarrassed. The fact that a person of his age could breakthrough to become an Earth Saint Master was already considered quite decent, but it was by no means on the level of a genius. However, it also didn’t mean that he was bad either. So when Bi Hai commented that he was mediocre, Changyang Ba felt slightly depressed. But the later half of Bi Hai’s words filled him up with the utmost pride. Having a son as accomplished as Jian Chen was an achievement any father would be proud of.

“In the future, you needn’t call me patriarch. Just call me grandfather.” Bi Hai spoke.

“Yes, grandfather!” Bi Yuntian, Changyang Ba, and Jian Chen responded.

Soon after, Changyang Ba invited Bi Hai to the center of the manor to discuss. Due to Bi Hai’s status and absolute strength, he received the most warmest of welcomes from the entire clan. Even Jian Chen and Bi Yuntian accompanied him to the halls while talking. Never did any matter relating to the Bi family ever come up however.

Two hours later, the group assembled in the halls finally scattered apart, and for the time being, Bi Hai took up residence in the manor.

In Changyang Ba's room, Changyang Ba and Bi Yuntian sat by a table to talk to one another.

Changyang Ba looked to Bi Yuntian with a conflicted look. "Yun'er, could you possibly tell me what in the world is going on? Why has a Saint Ruler suddenly appeared in our manor? Was your previously family not a small one?" In the past, Changyang Ba asked Bi Yuntian of her family, but Changyang Ba had only thought that the Bi family was a small familial power to some small city since he had never heard of the name before. But when a Saint Ruler from the Bi family suddenly appeared out of nowhere today, he finally realized that the Bi family wasn't as unordinary as he thought.

Bi Yuntian sighed. "Husband, I beg your forgiveness for hiding so many things from you. Long before, I was experiencing some sorrows, and the true events that happened to my Bi family was not an easy matter to talk about."

"I can understand that. Yun'er, if things aren't convenient to talk about, then there is no need to talk about it." Changyang Ba spoke.

Bi Yuntian shook her head softly. "Now that I've finally found the patriarch to my family due to the help of Xiang'er, there's no need to hide it anymore. You should know about the circumstances to my family."

Afterwards, Bi Yuntian explained the entire story of what happened to the Bi family to Changyang Ba so that he could understand the story.

After listening to Bi Yuntian finish the epic that was her family history, Changyang Ba was very quiet for a long time. His mind was completely shocked at what he had just listened to.

A Saint Ruler that looked after a thousand year old family. A family that even the Changyang Clan couldn't possibly hope of using to scale in power. Changyang Ba could never have imagined that the fourth wife he chose would possibly be related to such a powerful family. It was all very hard to take in.

It took a long time for Changyang Ba to finally calm himself. His face was still filled with conflicting emotions however. "Yun'er," He sighed. "I've never thought that you'd have such an identity. You've must have felt burdened by these secrets. If the patriarch to your family didn't appear today, I'm sure you would have hidden this secret from me my entire life."

"Husband, I have my troubles. The enemies to the Bi family are strong, and even my patriarch stands no chance against them. For that reason, I never told you in case that news would leak out. Even though there is that chance today still, husband, I hope that you will keep my secret. It must never reach the ears of an outsider." Bi Yuntian repeated seriously.

Nodding his head, Changyang Ba pledged, "I understand. Be at ease, my wife. Your family secrets will be safeguarded by me. But we must find an excuse to tell the doyens of the clan as well."

.....

In a very remote part of the Changyang Manor, there was a small courtyard. It wasn't too big, but there was a small two story pavilion with a garden of its own to be seen.

It was quiet in this courtyard with not a single person to be seen. Even the soldiers patrolling nearby didn't dare go near. This courtyard felt almost abandoned and not important to the entire manor.

But despite this, there were actually eight strong-looking soldiers standing as still as statues around the place. Their glares were intimidating, and their expressions were blank. They represented the elite soldiers of the clan and were all Great Saint Masters in strength.

At this moment, a white-robed youth came striding forward to walk into this small courtyard.

Upon seeing this youth, the eight soldiers immediately felt shocked, but then a reverent look entered their eyes and they stood straight to attention to greet him.

“We pay our respects to the fourth master!” As soon as the youth came walking by, the eight soldiers bowed at the waist to greet him respectfully.

This youth was Jian Chen!

“There’s no need for such etiquette. How has my eldest brother fared recently?” Jian Chen asked the eight soldiers kindly.

“If I may report, fourth master, the eldest master has been in his room almost every day. Very rarely does he come out.” One soldier reported to him.

Jian Chen nodded his head with a conflicted look in his eyes as he regarded the faraway mansion. Sighing to himself, Jian Chen strode inside.

The small pavilion was spotless with simple furniture and decoration to be seen here and there. Not a single item that could be seen as ‘invaluable’ was placed inside, and it looked more like the house of a peasant farmer. Such a plain decorated interior made this place feel extremely offbeat in comparison to the entire Changyang Manor.

Sizing up the pavilion, Jian Chen then looked to the wooden stairs that lead up to the second story. Without bothering to hide his entrance, Jian Chen took one step at a time across the wooden boards so that they would creak loudly at every step.

“Fourth brother, fourth brother, is that you?” A simple-sounding voice called out to Jian Chen’s ears. It was a voice that was filled with warmth; it was the voice of Jian Chen’s eldest brother, Changyang Hu.

“Big brother, it’s me. Your fourth brother has come to see you.”

Jian Chen called up from down below. Scaling the stairs, he quickly made it up onto the second floor.

“Fourth brother, you’ve come! I knew I heard your voice just then! Come, someone help me up!” Changyang Hu’s voice shook with a nervous excitement.

As soon as Jian Chen entered the room where Changyang Hu was, he could see his limbless brother being attended to by two maids onto a wheelchair.

“This slave pays her respects to the fourth master!” Upon seeing Jian Chen, the two maids attending to Changyang Hu curtsied to Jian Chen.

Chapter 673: Breakthrough Into The Saint Ruler Realm(One)

“You two may leave.” Jian Chen spoke plainly to the two maids there.

“Yes, fourth master!’ The two maids bowed respectfully to him before making a gentle retreat from the room.

Jian Chen looked to his wheelchair bound brother. At the moment, Changyang Hu was wearing a simple blue-colored robe. Since he was limbless, the sleeves to the robe clung helplessly to the side of his body and wheelchair. Compared to the him before, there weren’t any major changes, but Jian Chen could sense that in Changyang Hu’s eyes, there was a hint of color to them rather than the dulled despair that one would normally expect from someone of his situation.

From Changyang Hu’s gaze alone, Jian Chen could tell that he was already accepting of the fact that he was limbless and was ready to move on from that fact. It was something that made Jian Chen feel rather comforted by.

“Eldest brother, you’ve suffered greatly; how have you fared these past few days!” Jian Chen arrived by Changyang Hu’s side and spoke in concern to his brother.

Changyang Hu was excited however. Smiling, he looked back at Jian Chen, “Hahaha, fourth brother, there’s no need to worry about your big brother! Even though I’ve lost my limbs and

became a cripple, I've felt rather calm these past few days! I've thought a lot recently, and you know. I came to realize something. The previously calm life I felt to be boring isn't so bad. I'm tired of the days of fighting and killing, a life like this has grown on me."

Just based on Changyang Hu's facial expressions, Jian Chen could tell that Changyang Hu was being honest. He couldn't sense a single lie or fabrication from Changyang Hu's lips, meaning that his eldest brother truly did feel this way.

"Big brother, you can rest assured now. Your four limbs will come back soon. Wait until your fourth brother becomes a Class 7 Radiant Saint Master. That'll be the day you recover completely." Jian Chen pledged.

"Hahaha, fourth brother, your big brother will wait for that day then. I might be accustomed to this type of lifestyle, but not having limbs can be rather inconvenient. I always need someone to help me, so if I can recover my limbs, that'll be for the better." Changyang Hu laughed. Compared to before, the Changyang Hu of today was in great spirits. The contrast between the two was so great that it felt as if they were completely different persons. To him, recovering his four limbs wasn't so that he could return to the life of cultivation, traveling, or fighting. He wanted those limbs back merely so that he could live his life in convenience.

In the time since Jian Chen last saw him, Changyang Hu had lost all of his heroic ambitions!

Realizing the great transformation his brother underwent, Jian Chen wasn't quite sure if he could call this situation a good or bad

thing. And for a moment, it caused Jian Chen quite a small amount of concern.

But then something suddenly caught Changyang Hu's attention. Staring strangely at Jian Chen, he spoke, "Fourth brother, would you verify the news your big brother heard recently? I heard that you broke through to go from a Heaven Saint Master to become a Saint Ruler. Is that true?"

Smiling, Jian Chen replied, "Big brother, what you heard is a half-truth and a half-lie."

"Half-truth and a half-lie?" Changyang Hu asked suspiciously.

"Big brother, I am still but a Heaven Saint Master and not yet a Saint Ruler. But because of some other factors, my battle strength is comparable to some of the weaker Saint Rulers. That's why some people have mistaken that I've become a Saint Ruler."

"Oh, I see now! But fourth brother, you've achieved so much at your age. As a big brother, I can only feel pride at your achievements. With your talent, fourth brother, your big brother has no doubts that you'll become a genuine Saint Ruler in no time at all." Changyang Hu laughed. His personality was a lot calmer than before, but knowing that his fourth brother had the strength of a Saint Ruler was enough to bring forth a tremendous wave of excitement to him. And yet, it was far harder to see his excitement compared to the other doyens in the clan.

His heart was practically as immovable as a boulder!

“Big brother, let me bring you on a stroll around the manor. You must have felt bored staying in this room all day.” Jian Chen suggested before pushing the wheelchair out from the pavilion.

“Fourth brother, why not take a stroll around the courtyard? There’s no need to go beyond that. Your big brother doesn’t really like staying in places with other people. It’s rather noisy, and your big brother enjoys the quiet places now. It’s the only way I can feel at peace.”

.....

For the entire day, Jian Chen spent the time with Changyang Hu before finally leaving. During that time, he spoke plenty with his brother, and from his brother did Jian Chen learn several things. Because of the great transformation his eldest brother had, Jian Chen couldn’t help but feel at times that his brother had seemingly seen enlightenment and broke free from the secular world. As it were, Changyang Hu felt rather unselfish for anything and desired nothing. Even an important matter like the return of his limbs weren’t anything that bore major impact on his future life or mood. It almost felt as if having limbs or not bore no difference at all to Changyang Hu.

That night, Jian Chen went to the room Bi Hai was in for a small chat before then returning to his own room to rest.

His room was magnificently decorated with great furniture and

decorations. Sitting at the center of his bed, Jian Chen held a Space Ring in his hand. It was the Space Ring Situ Qing left behind with all of his possessions in it.

“Situ Qing was an extremely wealthy person I see. Several dozen purple cards to his wealth? There has to be more to this I’m sure. I wonder just how many purple coins there are in total though.” Jian Chen sighed to himself after looking at the contents of the Space Ring.

Situ Qing was a Saint Ruler that lived for over a thousand years after all. As a hermit Saint Ruler, the items he amassed over the years surely had to be precious. It was definitely not something a Heaven Saint Master could compare in wealth; and every precious item in the Space Ring had at times confused even Jian Chen on what they were.

Taking out a thick book from the Space Ring, Jian Chen looked at the cover of the book to read out the calligraphic words “Secrets to the Dragon and Tiger”

Seeing the words on this book, Jian Chen’s eyes lit up. Flipping through the pages, Jian Chen’s smile grew wider and wider with each page read. “So this was a Heaven Tier Battle Skill. This has to be the resting skill that Situ Qing hid away on him.”

Studying the Heaven Tier Battle Skill for a moment, Jian Chen thought to himself, “Now that the Changyang Manor has become powerful with everyone within distance knowing of it, we should have the strength to protect these Heaven Tier Battle Skills. I can place these books here at home and wait for a day to let father

cultivate them then.”

In a flash, the treasures that the Sect of Dragon and Tiger once held was quickly redistributed and reclassified by Jian Chen as treasures for the Changyang clan.

Putting aside the book, Jian Chen took a second look at the contents of the Space Ring. Half a moment later, a circular scroll came tumbling out from the Space Ring.

“The shortcut to becoming a Saint Ruler, could this possibly be it!” Jian Chen’s eyes blazed with excitement as he stared at the scroll in his hand. The item that Jian Chen desired most from Situ Qing’s Space Ring was the acclaimed shortcut that would help him breakthrough to become a Saint Ruler.

Immediately untying the rope that held the scroll tight, Jian Chen unfurled the scroll in front of him. It wasn’t that big in size and was only a meter in length. The parchment was soft, and it felt more like fur rather than paper to the touch.

But when Jian Chen’s eyes fell upon the scroll, he couldn’t help but rub his eye in stupefied shock.

The reason for that was because of the fact that both sides to this scroll was completely white.

Not a single character could be seen on it, nor a splotch of ink.

It was completely white paper.

Chapter 674: Breakthrough Into The Saint Ruler Realm (Two)

“Did I find the wrong thing? The shortcut Situ Qing was talking surely isn’t this scroll.” Jian Chen stared vacantly at the scroll in his hands. Muttering to himself, Jian Chen thought of something at once and placed the scroll down to continue to rifle through the Space Ring.

Not too long after, three more scrolls came out from the Space Ring. These three scrolls were made from ordinary beast fur; material so common that it could not at all be considered precious.

But Jian Chen didn’t neglect the existence of these four scrolls for that reason. Opening up each and every one of these scrolls, Jian Chen laid them side to side to one another, but the effect had only left him in disappointment. While there were markings to be seen, it was all the writings of Situ Qing and his writings of several rather unimportant things. Other than that, there was nothing else on anything important such as breaking through to become a Saint Ruler, and certainly nothing that could help Jian Chen.

Rather disappointed, Jian Chen placed the three scrolls down onto the bed and continued to look into the Space Ring with renewed vigor. But no matter how many times he looked through the Space Ring, he couldn’t find a fifth scroll.

“What in the world is that scroll that can help one become a Saint Ruler? Why can’t I find it? Is it because it isn’t in Situ Qing’s Space Ring?” Jian Chen thought.

“Impossible. Such a precious item can’t possibly be put elsewhere. According to logic, it has to be on his person!” Jian Chen thought in contrast to his previous thoughts. Taking the scrolls he found earlier, he placed them out again for another look. In the end, all he could see was a blank canvas, other than that, there was nothing else of extraordinary stature.

Looking at the blank scrolls again and again, Jian Chen was trying his best to try and find whatever secrets there was to it.

Just at that moment, the mindspace within Jian Chen’s head shook violently as the fragments of the mysteries of the world he first absorbed in the holy ground of Mercenary City began to hop violently as if drawn to some sort of mysterious source.

Unable to stop himself from closing his eyes, Jian Chen felt his spirit suddenly bring these fragments into the material world from his body. “Forgot about me?” It seemed to ask from the chaotic space in front of him. Just barely, Jian Chen could feel his spirit reach an extremely vague connection with the blank scrolls in front of him. It almost felt as if these scrolls were harmonizing with his spirit to become one with his body.

At the same time, the blank white scrolls in Jian Chen’s hand began to glow a faint golden light. Suddenly detaching itself from Jian Chen’s hand and floating in midair, it began to turn. Golden runes began to float into the air as well before forming some sort of strange and mysterious runic formation. As soon as these runes materialized, the entire space around it began to twist and distort at its touch as if it were being attracted by the surrounding space.

And.

A strange energy suddenly materialized into the place before converging in the middle of the room to float there.

This blank white canvas now had a strange power to it. It was awakened by the fragments of the mysteries of the world from Jian Chen's mind. And these fragments were seemingly undergoing some sort of strange evolution.

Shutting his eyes tight, Jian Chen felt the connection between his spirit and the scroll grow even stronger, and the evolved mysteries of the world from the scroll began to grow extremely distinct to his senses.

Completely letting go of his body, Jian Chen forgot himself for a brief moment as he entered a state of enlightenment. In this one moment, he could feel his spirit harmonizing with the world itself. The two were completely indistinguishable from one another, and every aspect of the world and its mysteries began to appear in his mind in a vague manner rather than clear.

From another room Bi Hai was taking residence in, the cultivating Bi Hai suddenly found his eyelids opening up. There was a flicker to his body before he disappeared from the bed to reappear outside his room. Both of his lively-bright eyes were now looking off into the direction where Jian Chen was.

“My grandson is comprehending the mysteries of the world, he's

about to breakthrough!” He muttered to himself with an ecstatic glee. As a Saint Ruler, he was deeply in tune with the mysteries of the world and its energy. And with the distance he was away from Jian Chen, he could tell that it was him that was undergoing this period of enlightenment.

Bi Hai stared at the direction of Jian Chen’s room for a moment longer before the smile on his face quickly receded from it. “But it seems he’s still lacking the control. My grand son hasn’t yet grasped the deepest concepts of controlling the energy of the world. That is a step hard for any Heaven Saint Master wishing to become a Saint Ruler.”

The faint golden light that was illuminating off the scroll next to Jian Chen’s head continued to evolve the mysteries of the world. And in Jian Chen’s mind, he was slowly being fed this evolved form to experience a new strange world.

With the help of this scroll, Jian Chen was growing a deeper and deeper level of comprehension of the mysteries of the world. These mysteries were becoming more and more clear to Jian Chen, and he could feel himself growing one step closer to becoming a Saint Ruler.

Under this process of understanding the mysteries of the world, Jian Chen felt himself lost to the passage of time. He had no idea just how much time was going past, but soon came a point where Jian Chen felt so close to becoming a Saint Ruler that he was practically touching it. But it was at this one moment that he felt this small membrane of a gap become a mountain gate that was extremely difficult to climb. No matter how much he tried, he

could not step past this gate.

These scrolls could only evolve a small portion of the mysteries of the world. For the Sixth Cycle Heaven Saint Master, they'd be able to take a shortcut to become a Saint Ruler, but it would not help them make the breakthrough completely. One would still have to depend on their own understanding of the world to continue on.

And Jian Chen had a very lacking basis of the understandings of the world. As a Heaven Saint Master, he was lacking in complete comprehension of the energy of the world and how to harness it. Thus, even when he absorbed the fragments of the mysteries of the world, he was unable to take the opportunity to become a Saint Ruler. These fragments of the mysteries of the world were not enough for a recently broken through Heaven Saint Master to become a Saint Ruler.

Slowly, the golden light that was emanating from the scroll started to grow dim. And the light golden runic words that came from the mysteries of the world too started to fade without the assistance of the white scrolls. And so, Jian Chen began to feel himself slowly being pulled away from this state of comprehension.

Sensing the change, Jian Chen felt extremely unwilling in his heart. He was just lacking this one final step! If he could do it, he'd be able to go from a Heaven Saint Master to a Saint Ruler. This was the realm that he was constantly yearning for!

“Am I really going to fail just like that?” Jian Chen howled to

himself in extreme unwillingness to stop right there.

Chapter 675: Breakthrough Into The Saint Ruler Realm (Three)

The evolved mysteries of the world slowly started to recede from the blank scroll, and the worldly energy that had filled the entire room too started to fade away. As it appeared, the chance for a Heaven Saint Master to become a Saint Ruler was nearing an end.

By now, countless of people were converged right in front of Jian Chen's room. Of these people, they included the lord of the clan and his four wives. Even Changyang Hu, who normally preferred peace and quiet, was wheeled to the front of his room as well. Besides them, there were also the doyens of the clan.

Right by Bi Hai's side was an eye-catching purple-robed middle-aged man. This man was the king of the Gesun Kingdom.

Two days had elapsed since the beginning of this event; just enough time for news of patriarch Bi's return to be sent by Bi Yuntian all the way to the imperial palace for Bi Hai to hear. As soon as he heard both the patriarch and his beloved nephew had returned, Bi Dao had sprung to his feet and immediately asked of the king to return to Lore City.

As expected, the king himself had long since heard of the rumors regarding Jian Chen. He knew that his future son-in-law was an existence as strong as a Saint Ruler, so when Bi Dao told him that Jian Chen had returned home, the king immediately started the preparations for them to travel to Lore City.

“It’s been two days already, has my beloved son-in-law managed to breakthrough to become a Saint Ruler yet?” The king’s eyes would occasionally glance at Jian Chen’s room as he spoke of the others. Ever since he came to the Changyang Manor, he and the others had stood right in front of Jian Chen’s room for practically the entire day and night.

“It’s unfortunate that we don’t know what’s going on. We wouldn’t dare bother Xiang’er for no reason during such an important event like this. If not for grandfather’s knowledge to tell us Xiang’er was attempting to make the breakthrough, we would’ve never known what exactly Xiang’er was going through. All we can do is hope for his success to become a Saint Ruler.” Changyang Ba’s eyes flickered here and there to look around the enormous manor in an apparent sign of anxiety. This moment of ascension was playing heavily at Changyang Ba’s nerves.

“Xiang’er is extremely talented beyond all else. I know that he’ll succeed.” Jian Chen’s second aunt Yu Fengyan spoke with a quavering voice. She had been one of the few to hear from Bi Hai’s lips that Jian Chen was currently trying to become a Saint Ruler.

By her side was Bi Yuntian, whose entire body was shaking nervously. Her two hands were clasped together in prayer, and anxiety filled up her entire body. She did not get any sleep at all for an entire day and night.

“Ai! Only a few years have passed, and Xiangtian is already showing so much promise. He’s already outgrown we of the previous generation and reached a height we can only look up to

and yearn for. How unexpected. For we of the Bi to have such an outstanding descendant, it makes my heart feel as if there is nothing to fear.” The stern-looking man right next to the king exclaimed. This stern-looking man was Jian Chen’s uncle, Bi Dao.

Right behind them all were the high ranking members of the Changyang clan who were hoping for Jian Chen’s success. His parents weren’t the only ones desperately hoping for Jian Chen’s success, the doyens of the clan were too.

In a remarkably well-decorated room, Bi Hai sat on his bed with his eyes closed shut. He hadn’t bothered to be checking up on Jian Chen like the others were outside since with his ability, he could clearly see what the situation was looking like for Jian Chen straight away.

Suddenly, his eyes flew wide open and a look of regret appeared on his face. “Alas, it seems he could not do it.” He sighed, “My grandson is lacking in the fundamentals. An extremely rare opportunity was placed right in front of him, but he couldn’t grasp it.”

In Jian Chen’s room, the evolved mysteries of the world were slowly fading away, inversely bringing Jian Chen out from his enlightened state of being. He was unable to cross that threshold to become a Saint Ruler, and now the distance to becoming one was growing farther and farther away.

“Ai!” Jian Chen let out a sigh of disappointment. He had tried his best, but becoming a Saint Ruler was by no means an easy task. Despite the fragments of the mysteries of the world assimilating

with him and that scroll to help him evolve the fragments, he still couldn't make up for the difference. As a result, he failed to make the climb up.

But then, a sudden but unmistakeable white glow began to emanate from his Space Ring. Inconceivably quick as it appeared, the three beast furs of mysterious origins somehow managed to fly out from his Space Ring without Jian Chen's doing. At the current moment, these three beast furs were still rather mediocre looking, but there was a faint white glow that seemed to form an incomplete map as if following some sort of rule. The aura that was spilling out from the beast fur now felt as if it contained some aspect of the world in it.

"This....this aura...." Not too far away from Jian Chen, Bi Hai could immediately sense the familiar aura of the three beast furs. He had once used one of the beast furs to successfully breakthrough to become a Saint Ruler, so its aura was deeply ingrained in his memories.

"This--this has to be the aura from the beast furs! After slumbering for so many years, it has awakened once again! Excellent! This is far too excellent! With that beast fur, my grandson will definitely have a better chance of becoming a Saint Ruler!" The regretful look on Bi Hai's face was wiped away to reform a look of glee. Shortly afterwards, Bi Hai stepped down from his bed to exit his room so that he could personally see the divine show that would take place.

Half the day passed by in this manner, turning the day into late

afternoon. The skies were without a cloud, and the sun was bright and sunny as it rose up towards the west. But the light it illuminated from itself was still extremely bright.

A group of people stood in front of the Changyang Manor. For the entire day and night, none of them left the area. Not even their legs moved from the spot. But none of them felt tired even despite not having food or water.

Just at that moment, a multicolored light suddenly burst into view of everyone there. At first, this light was so faint that practically no one felt it at first. But as time went on, the light began to grow even stronger, and soon enough, not a single person could disregard this light.

“Strange, why has the sky turned into this?”

“Everyone, look! The sky has suddenly turned into a spectrum of color!”

Straight away, many of the people in attendance began to let out curious cries of confusion.

“Dear heavens, everyone, look up at the skies!” Suddenly, someone let out a startled cry.

Unable to stop themselves, everyone tilted their heads to look up at the sky only to see the multicolored clouds beginning to gather.

“Wha--what’s going on?”

“What in the world is happening?”

“Why are there these rainbow clouds in the sky?”

“They’re rainbow-colored! These are the so-called rainbow clouds! Legends have it that when they appear, an auspicious event is about to happen!”

The previously quiet Changyang Manor was immediately brought into an uproar. Many of the guards stationed in the manor and the doyens there all stared up at the rainbow clouds in curiosity.

When Bi Hai saw the rainbow clouds in the skies, his face could hardly contain his excitement. “He’s done it! He’s broken through!”

From behind Changyang Ba, the white-robed Chang Wuji was awestruck from the sight of the rainbow. His eyes looked wondrous for a moment, but when a sudden thought hit him, he let out a shocked but happy cry, “I remember now! When rainbow clouds appear in the sky, that means a Saint Ruler is born! It’s the fourth master! He’s finally managed to become a Saint Ruler!”

“Ah, is that true? That’s great then!”

Everyone had immediately started to smile with excitement at

that information. The time they were waiting for had finally come at last.

As the rainbow clouds in the sky grew thicker and thicker, the colors became more and more pronounced. The clouds were now surrounding the skies for ten of thousands of kilometers so that the entire world looked as if it was under a strange aurora like in a dream.

This miraculous sight had captivated the eyes of everyone within radius. Each one of them looked up towards the sky in shock, but none of them could understand just what in the world was going on.

Chapter 676: Rainbow Clouds

With the rainbow clouds covering the skies, the intense sun that was shining above was completely obscured from the ground below. The skies above the Gesun Kingdom was completely blocked from the sun, but the resplendent light from the rainbow clouds was filled with a holy luster almost; a holy symbol of things to come. As it filled the world, the entire area was no longer the same color as what it were if the sun were to shine on it. Instead, it was filled with the bright multicolored light that made the world seem as if it belonged to a fantasy world.

Down on the ground, the citizens of the kingdom were stunned. In no time at all, everyone began to talk to one another about the clouds above with great intensity. Everyone simply didn't understand what in the world was going on, and soon enough, the entire kingdom was abuzz with discussion about the rainbow clouds.

One said that the rainbow clouds were an auspicious sign and a sign that peace and fortune would be coming in the future.

Another said that the rainbow clouds were a message to the entire world that an absolutely precious treasure was about to appear.

Some said that the rainbow clouds were a sign that another powerful existence was born onto the world.

One person had even said that this was a warning sign that the

entire continent would be washed into a storm of terror and carnage.

But whatever the rainbow clouds were a sign of, everyone could at least agree without a doubt that something huge was about to happen, and everyone that saw it would be affected by it. News like that would surely spread out from the kingdom with lightning quick speed.

From Mt Hushan in the Gesun Kingdom, the three Heaven Saint Masters of the Huayun Sect all stared out at the rainbow clouds with stern faces and silent mouths.

“Grand elders, what in the world is going on? Why has these clouds suddenly appeared over our heads? What does this mean?” The recently broken through Heaven Saint Master Saiya asked in confusion. He was extremely confused about why these rainbow clouds were suddenly appearing.

The two grand elders Saiya spoke to stared at the rainbow clouds for an even longer time without a response. Soon enough, the two of them sighed with a look of undisguised jealousy and admiration on their faces.

“Someone has broken through. And it’s someone close by too. It seems that the Tian Yuan Continent has yet another Saint Ruler on it now.” One of the grand elders sighed.

Saiya grew awestruck. A Saint Ruler was an existence that Saiya himself had no hopes of ever becoming. He could understand that

as it were, he had no means of reaching such a realm since he was already late in his years when he became a Saint Ruler. Becoming a Saint Ruler was infinitely harder than becoming a Heaven Saint Master, making the task impossible for him.

The other grand elder continued to stare off into the distance from where the rainbow clouds were spreading from. Perplexed, he spoke, “The rainbow clouds aren’t too far away from us. This Saint Ruler has to be within the kingdom then.”

“I agree. From the looks of the clouds, we should be within ten thousand kilometers of it. That’s a very close distance. According to our knowledge, there aren’t any Sixth Cycle Heaven Saint Masters here, so who is this individual?”

“I’ve heard that the freak from the Changyang clan has become a Saint Ruler already. While I couldn’t verify the truth of this matter, the rumors are very fierce. Even if that freak hasn’t become a Saint Ruler, he can’t possibly be too far away from it. If he was just half a leg into the Saint Ruler realm before, do you think think the one who became a Saint Ruler now is him? It’s a little far-fetched, but his talent isn’t of the ordinary ilk. Furthermore, the heart of the rainbow clouds are right above the Changyang Manor.”

“What! Grand elder, are you saying the one who became a Saint Ruler was Changyang Xiangtian?!” Saiya’s face froze up in shock as he stared at the grand elder. Subconsciously, his left hand clutched at the empty robes to his right hand

The loss of his right arm was an unforgettable memory to Saiya.

When he lost it to Jian Chen those years ago, he had been oppressed by Jian Chen and thus became half a cripple. It was a pain that he could never wash away and never forget about.

The two grand elders continued to look up at the skies for a while. “I cannot be certain if it truly is that freak from the Changyang Manor. Saiya, go to the base of the mountains and dispatch some disciples to Lore City with haste.”

“By your wish!” Saiya responded affirmatively before flying to the base of the mountains as fast as he could to send someone to the Changyan Manor.

In the area of the Heavenly Eagle Kingdom the Flame Mercenaries occupied, Nubis, Jiede Tai and Huang Tianba stood side by side on the top of the imperial palace to look off into the faraway horizon.

They were far away from the Gesun Kingdom, so the rainbow clouds couldn't be seen here along with its multicolored light. But with their strengths, they could sense the happenings of the faraway places.

“Someone has made the breakthrough. Who could it be?” Jiede Tai asked questioningly. The birth of a Saint Ruler was no small matter as it would affect even these three.

“That direction is the direction of Jian Chen's family. It would be a good fit to say that Jian Chen was the one to make the breakthrough.” Nubis conjectured.

“Are you saying brother Jian Chen has become a Saint Ruler?” Huang Tianba was astounded. Both Jiede Tai and Huang Tianba stared incredulously at Nubis; his words were a little too much for either of the two to accept.

But then Huang Tianba looked relieved. Laughing, he spoke, “That would make sense then. It’s a little hard to believe, but brother Jian Chen’s talent is practically unprecedented. No one in the past has ever had a talent like his! He had already the strength of a Saint Ruler, so breaking through is only the next reasonable step!”

.....

The rainbow clouds persisted to stay in the skies for six hours before finally receding away from the world. By now, the sun was already falling down beneath the horizon to show only half of its face. As such, the world was now a natural crimson hue rather than the multicolored one from before.

In the Changyang Manor, Changyang Ba and the other elderly figures could still be seen standing from where they were hours before. The only difference was in their expression. Before, they were worried, but now, they were filled with excitement since they knew that the fourth master of the Changyang Clan had finally beaten the obstacle and made the breakthrough to become a Saint Ruler. To truly have a Saint Ruler in their clan was an achievement that everyone felt extremely prideful of.

Everyone knew that as long as there was a Saint Ruler presiding over them, the future implications would be tremendous!

“Creaaaak!” Suddenly, the previously closed doors began to open. In the next second, the white robes of Jian Chen made it into view of everyone.

There was a nice smile on Jian Chen’s face. His expression was calm and serene--nothing too different from before. But if one were to look at him with not their eyes, but their hearts, they could see that the aura that Jian Chen carried with him was drastically different than before. In the past, his aura was sharp and open, making him feel like an unsheathed blade ready to strike. But now, that sharpness was hidden away from them to become rather calm. It was almost as if he had regressed into becoming an ordinary person.

If a person of an even higher realm were to look at him, they would feel as if they were looking at an illusion. An illusion where Jian Chen had become one with the world almost inseparably. From a rise of his hand or the fall of his foot, the mysteries of the world would follow with it.

Chapter 677: Celebrating With The Kingdom

In the moment Jian Chen stepped out from his room, his entire body seemed as if it was radiating some sort of invisible light that shined across the entire world. In front of him, the entire world looked as if it had lost its color.

In Jian Chen's eyes, the world around him was completely different than before. This was all in thanks to his ability to discern the mysteries of the world. He could sense that his own body was one with space. As long as he wished for it, he could use the Spatial Force to instantly travel to another place. In fact, he could even use the space around him to a certain degree as if it were his own domain.

In the world, there was a faint but exceedingly strong energy that floated about. It was intangible and practically invisible to the human eye. But he could sense its existence. This was World Force, a force even stronger than Saint Force.

When the entire group outside of Jian Chen's room saw him, they all grew quiet so that not a single person said a word. They only stared at Jian Chen as if he were some sort of valuable treasure to behold. In this passing moment, they were no longer looking at the fourth master of the Changyang Clan. They were looking at one of the rarest individuals of the Tian Yuan Continent.

They were looking at a Saint Ruler.

“Hahaha, excellent! You are more than worthy of being a descendant of my Bi family! Grandson, your talent is exceedingly shocking! The fact that I’ve a descendant like you makes me feel completely at ease!” A loud roar of laughter boomed from behind to break the silence of the area. Following the laughter, Bi Hai came striding into the area with a look of pride and joy.

The group of elders had turned their heads to look at Bi Hai when he entered. But still, not a single one spoke. Instead, they moved to the side so as to give him a direct passageway to Jian Chen.

There was joy on Jian Chen’s face too. The fact that he’d be able to breakthrough from being a Heaven Saint Master to becoming a Saint Ruler was completely unexpected to him too. When he first found the scroll from Situ Qing’s Space Ring, he had only intended on giving it a look-see to see just what in the world this shortcut was. Never did he think that this shortcut to understanding the mysteries of the world would allow him to suddenly gain enlightenment and breakthrough. It had awakened the fragments of the mysteries of the world in him and brought him to an elevated realm of thought. In the end, the three pieces of beast fur had given him another boost so that he could fully detach himself from the Heaven Saint Master realm to become a Saint Ruler.

“Xiang’er. You’ve become a genuine Saint Ruler?” Bi Yuntian’s voice quavered with excitement as she asked him. Though she knew the answer, she desperately wished to hear the answer from her own son’s lips.

Jian Chen’s eyes landed upon the figure of his mother. Smiling, he replied, “Mother, your son has not failed you. I’ve managed to

breakthrough!”

“Hahaha! Well done! Well done indeed! The son of I, Changyang Ba, has become a Saint Ruler! What an outstanding son I have! Time has not made me weak it seems.” Changyang Ba boomed with a prideful laughter. His voice was joyful and filled the entire manor with his echoes so that even plenty of people outside of the manor could hear the absolute joy in his voice.

The king of the Gesun Kingdom himself was excited. To have a Saint Ruler in his kingdom was an extremely fortuitous event. But the most important thing was the fact that this Saint Ruler was engaged to his daughter.

Having a Saint Ruler as his son-in-law was something that he never would’ve dreamed of having. Even one of the Eight Great Powers would be envious to have such a chance.

“Ai! My dear nephew truly is far too terrifying! He is a genius to become a Saint Ruler! Am I perhaps dreaming of this?” Bi Dao muttered from the side of the king. When he last saw Jian Chen years ago, he had only just materialized his Saint Weapon before being chased out by the Huayun Sect as a Saint. It had been a relatively short time since then, but now this little Saint had suddenly leapt upwards to become a Saint Ruler! This was what Bi Dao felt completely stunned about.

.....

News of the fourth master of the Changyang clan becoming a

Saint Ruler quickly spread throughout the kingdom. Like a squall, this information passed by the ears and mouth of the citizens of the kingdom, leaving everyone speechless. Magical beasts capable of carrying information faster than humans flooded the skies in droves so as to send this information out of the kingdom as fast as they could. Soon enough, everyone in the Gesun Kingdom and beyond were stunned by the news.

Not too long afterwards, the king of the Gesun Kingdom let out another proclamation proclaiming that today would be a national event to celebrate and be recorded in history to commemorate Jian Chen's ascension.

The fact that the rainbow clouds meant that Jian Chen became a Saint Ruler spread rapidly throughout the area. The surrounding kingdoms near the Gesun Kingdom heard of it, and each and every king that heard it was shocked as a result. One by one, they began to send out an envoy with a plentiful amount of gifts. These envoys were Heaven Saint Masters and could therefore reach the Gesun Kingdom even faster. Even the greater sects and clans within the surrounding area sent their most valuable representative with plenty of gifts to give.

On this brisk day, everybody that was a somebody within the Gesun Kingdom was gathered in Changyang Manor. Even the two grand elders of the Huayun Sect had arrived with gifts to celebrate this momentous occasion in Lore City.

Today, the Changyang Manor was completely cleaned and decorated with Chang Wuji personally receiving the guests. The most anticipated person of the day; Jian Chen, was not yet there to

make an appearance in front of everyone.

Then when the entire manor was at its liveliest with guests, Jian Chen, Bi Yuntian, Changyang Ba, and the king of the Gesun Kingdom gathered together.

“My dear relatives, my Yue’er and son-in-law aren’t by any means young anymore, and the engagement between them has gone on for some time already. In my opinion, we should find a good day to conduct the marriage ceremony.” The king smiled as he spoke. Now that Jian Chen was a Saint Ruler, the king himself wanted nothing more but to have Jian Chen hold a great wedding with his daughter.

Changyang Ba and Bi Yuntian nodded as well with a smile since they too shared similar thoughts. Although they knew that their son was extremely superior, the two of them were very fond of princess You Yue. If it were her to be married to their son, the two parents found no objections to it.

“Xiang’er, you and Yue’er are adults now. Don’t you think it’s time....” Bi Yuntian prodded the question. She was extremely hopeful that Jian Chen would agree since she was very fond of the idea of having You Yue and Jian Chen married.

“Xiang’er, you’re already a Saint Ruler, and the Flame Mercenaries you’re leading is already the dominant force in the area. Now that the ground beneath your feet is settled, you and Yue’er should get married. Don’t you think it’s time to tie the knot?” Changyang Ba smiled kindly.

Inwardly, Jian Chen let out a small grumble. With a slight sigh, he spoke, “Father, mother, and your Majesty. With my eldest brother not yet having his limbs healed and the whereabouts of my second sister unknown, now would not be a good time to conduct the marriage ceremony.” Jian Chen knew that this marriage was already something he couldn’t change, but he didn’t wish to settle down just yet. He wanted to prolong it for some time still.

When the king heard Jian Chen’s answer, he let out a helpless sigh. He knew that from this response, the marriage between his daughter and Jian Chen would be stalled indefinitely. Jian Chen’s response made sense. His eldest brother was without his limbs, and his second sister was completely lost to them. Without the entire family being there, a marriage would be unwise to have.

And so talks of marriage had been stopped there. Jian Chen continued to talk with the king of the Gesun Kingdom and his parents for some time before Jian Chen returned to his own room and closed himself off for the time being.

Now that he was alone in his room, Jian Chen sat on top of his bed and took out the blank scrolls and the three pieces of beast fur to study. Ever since he became a Saint Ruler, the mysteries of the world were no longer a mystery now that he could use the power as he wished. With this elevation in power, the mystery that was hidden within the scroll could now be faintly sensed.

“It’s no wonder this scroll could evolve the mysteries of the world. The mysteries of the world that were branded in here was done by a divinely being almost. I can sense that the power in here

is extremely faint though. Could it be that after it's used once, the seal that keeps the mysterious power in here loses its effect until all of it is gone? Then using this scroll once would turn it back into a regular scroll. But these three beast furs still remain a mystery.” Jian Chen muttered.

He understood the nature of the scrolls now, but the three beast furs were still a complete enigma to him. Despite him being a Saint Ruler, the three beast furs still felt the same as any other magical beast fur. Even the fact that the mysteries of the world was hidden within the beast furs would go unnoticed if he didn't know about it beforehand.

“These three beast furs are complicated in nature, there's a definite secret hidden in here. But what exactly is that secret? Even as a Saint Ruler, I cannot tell.” Jian Chen asked himself with great curiosity.

Chapter 678: Healing Attempt

Jian Chen spent a long time examining the three pieces of beast fur in his hand, but he did not discover anything. Currently, the three beast furs seemed just as ordinary as they were before to him. Other than the special material it was made of, these was nothing that was interesting to them.

“Looks like I can’t observe the mysteries within it with my current level of cultivation. Whatever, I’ll just leave it there for now. Perhaps I’ll get the chance to learn the secret hidden within some day.” Jian Chen sighed softly with disappointment, before putting the three pieces of beast fur away in his Space Ring.

Putting away the three pieces of beast fur away, Jian Chen lowered his head and muttered to himself, “Now that I’m a Saint Ruler, I wonder if I’ve become a Class 7 Radiant Saint Master. I’ll go find brother and give it a try.”

Currently, a grand banquet was being held in the Changyang Manor. The entire manor was in jubilation, creating an extremely lively atmosphere. As soon as Jian Chen walked into the building, his ears were flooded by the hubbub from the front yard.

Jian Chen was uninterested in the activity of the front courtyard, so he took a detour through the back courtyard straight to where Changyang Hu was.

“We greet the fourth young master!”

Wherever Jian Chen passed by, all the guards and servants would bow to him. They were even more respectful than before.

When Jian Chen entered Changyang Hu's room, Changyang Hu was currently laying on the bed with his eyes closed in repose. He disliked the noise, so he did not participate in the banquet and instead spent the time resting in his room, all by himself.

Perhaps he heard the sounds of stops, Changyang Hu slowly opened his eyes. When he saw Jian Chen who stood before the window, a radiant smile immediately appeared on his face. He said, "Brother, why aren't you accompanying the guests and have come to where your big brother is?"

"Big brother, I've successfully broken through. Today, I specially today to see if I can help you recover your limbs." Jian Chen said.

Hearing that, Changyang Hu did not seem to become very excited. He looked at Jian Chen with a smile and said, "Brother, perhaps you've already become a Class 7 Radiant Saint Master?"

Jian Chen shook his head gently, "I'm not sure. It's impossible to feel the levels of a Radiant Saint Master yourself, and can only be determined from the strength of Radiant Saint Force I can use. Big brother, just stay there, let me try and see if I can heal you." Jian Chen slowly closed his eyes. His mind fused with the world, and used his will to quickly gather the Radiant Saint Force towards him.

The speed that Jian Chen gathered Radiant Saint Force was very

quick. With just a few seconds, the amount of Radiant Saint Force gathered around his hands had already reached a limit. The soft, white light was as bright as the sun, illuminating the entire room.

As Jian Chen slowly lowered his two hands, the dense Radiant Saint Force slowly covered Changyang Hu's body, enveloping him.

Chapter 679: Secrets of Class 7 Radiant Saint Masters

The quiet little room was filled with soft, milky-white light. Although the light was bright, it was extremely soft and not dazzling at all. Also, the milky-white glow of light had a distinct sensation of divinity to it—an aura of holy power in fact.

A clear barrier had already appeared silently in the surroundings at a certain time, causing some fluctuations in the space around the room. The interior of the barrier also became blurry and the milky-white light in the room was completely locked inside by the barrier. None of it could escape to the outside, so naturally, there were no one who realised it was there.

Doing something like that was akin to Jian Chen's instinct. Perhaps he was already used to concealing his identity as a Radiant Saint Master, so even though he was now a Saint Ruler and possessed a rather powerful strength, he still did not want his identity to be exposed.

The guards outside the building stared at the barrier which enveloped the building in admiration. They naturally knew that this was done by the genius fourth young master, so they were not alerted at all and nor did they worry about Changyang Hu's safety.

Within the Changyang Manor, Bi Yunhai was currently accompanying a few esteemed guests with Changyang Ba. She stared deeply in Changyang Hu's direction. As a Radiant Saint Master herself, she could clearly feel that there was a powerful Radiant Saint Master in that direction.

“Looks like Xiang’er is itching to have Ah’Hu recover, to actually hurry so much to heal him. Just don’t know whether he’s reached Class 7 or not.” Bi Yuntian thought. She already knew that her son was a Radiant Saint Master. Although Jian Chen had never told anyone, Bi Yuntian had already discovered it when he used Radiant Saint Force in the manor before.

Within the building, it had already become a snow-white world. Other than white, there was nothing else that could be seen. It was as if a layer of fog concealed everything, so white that if one extended his hand, they would not be able to see the tips of it.

Jian Chen was giving it his all in controlling the Radiant Saint Force!

The Radiant Saint Force was brimming with vigor and vitality. Bathing in such dense Radiant Saint Force, Changyang Hu felt a great but indescribable feeling. He felt entirely free from worry, as if he was walking on air.

The situation lasted for a while, before the Radiant Saint Force finally began to grow dim, slowly disappearing in the end. As a result, the room returned to how it was before.

Jian Chen stopped controlling the Radiant Saint Force. He stared blankly at Changyang Hu who lay on the bed with his eyes closed and an expression of enjoyment on his face. His two hands above Changyang Hu also fell powerlessly.

He only saw that his brother's limbs remained non-existent. Nothing grew from the stumps, not even by a little. Jian Chen had given his all to use the Radiant Saint Force on Changyang Hu's body, yet there was actually no effect at all.

“Why would it be like this? Perhaps I haven't become a Class 7 Radiant Saint Master yet?” Jian Chen was greatly despaired. Before, his abilities as a Radiant Saint Master had improved almost at the same rate as his strength. Originally, he thought that after becoming a Saint Ruler and comprehending the mysteries of the world, he would also become a Class 7 Radiant Saint Master. Only now did he learn that it was untrue.

Changyang Hu opened his eyes. He saw how he remained limbless, but there were no changes in his expression. His gaze landed on Jian Chen and laughed uncaringly. He said, “Brother, you don't need to worry about me. Actually, it's pretty good like this.”

“I'm actually still stuck at Class 6 and haven't reached Class 7? Why is it like this? Perhaps becoming a Class 7 Radiant Saint Master isn't like how I imagined?” Jian Chen mumbled in slight despair.

“Brother, don't worry. You might not be a Class 7 Radiant Saint Master right now, but with your talent, your brother I believe that you'll be able to overcome this one day. You just need some time.” Changyang Hu comforted him with a smile.

Jian Chen recovered from his despair very soon. His gaze became resolute again and he said, “Looks like there's something else to

becoming a Class 7 Radiant Saint Master. I need to find the method as soon as possible. Brother, I'll go ask grandfather right now and see if he has any clues. Please endure this for a few more days."

Jian Chen departed from Changyang Hu's room and directly went to Bi Hai's resting room. There, Bi Hai was the eldest, so he knew more things than ordinary people would.

"Grandson, perhaps you've remembered that grandfather is here? I'd even thought that you've forgotten about grandfather. You've finally come to see grandfather. Come, sit, sit." Bi Hai smiled brightly as he looked at Jian Chen affectionately. He took pride in Jian Chen.

"Grandfather, are you used to living here?" Jian Chen asked with a smile as he walked over to a seat and sat down obediently.

Bi Hai sat in front of Jian Chen and looked at him with affection. He nodded, "I'm fine, I'm fine. Your grandfather's even lived in a dark cave for several decades. The circumstances are much better here, so how can I dislike it?"

Bi Hai paused before continuing, "Grandson, your grandfather's been a Saint Ruler for some time already, so I definitely know more about Saint Rulers than you. Now that you've also become a Saint Ruler, if you meet any problems that you don't understand, you can come and look for grandfather whenever."

"Grandfather, grandson just happens to have something to ask you for. Does grandfather know things about Class 7 Radiant Saint

Master?” Jian Chen stared at Bi Hai.

Hearing that, Bi Hai furrowed his eyebrows slightly. He stayed silent for a while before speaking, “Your grandfather once travelled the continent, so I do happen to know a little about Class 7 Radiant Saint Masters. They’re extremely rare on the Tian Yuan Continent, and even if you count all them on the Tian Yuan Continent, they’re extremely scarce. Grandson, why’ve you suddenly found interest in Class 7 Radiant Saint Master?” Bi Hai looked at Jian Chen in doubt.

Jian Chen muttered to himself for some time, before slowly raising his hand. A milky-white ball of light quickly gathered in his hand. Jian Chen did not choose to conceal his identity to his own grandfather because he knew that he could perhaps obtain even more information by revealing it.

Seeing the ball of milky-white light in Jian Chen’s hand, Bi Hai became tongue-tied. An expression of disbelief appeared on his face and he stared at Jian Chen in shock. He stuttered, “This... this... this is actually Radiant Saint Force. Grandson... you... you... you...”

“Grandfather, grandson is not just a fighter but also a Radiant Saint Master.” Looking at Bi Hai’s stupefaction, Jian Chen revealed an extremely-rare sliver of confidence.

Bi Hai took in a deep breath and looked at Jian Chen like he was looking at a monster. He said, “For all of history, Radiant Saint Master could not cultivate Saint Force and fighters who cultivated Saint Force could not cultivate Radiant Saint Force. It’s impossible

for the two to coexist within a person. Who would've thought that not only is my grandson a Saint Ruler who's comprehended the mysteries of the world, he can also control Radiant Saint Force. This is just too unbelievable. If I didn't witness it first-hand, I would not believe that a person could be a fighter as well as a Radiant Saint Master no matter what. Looks like I've really learnt something today."

"Grandpa, grandson's already a Class 6 Radiant Saint Master but doesn't know how to reach Class 7. Since grandpa is experienced and knowledgeable, does grandfather know any ideas?" Jian Chen asked.

Hearing that, Bi Hai looked at Jian Chen in shock once again. He sighed emotionally, "Class 6 Radiant Saint Master. That's an existence which can basically stand on level ground with Saint Rulers. Who would've thought that not only is my grandson a Radiant Saint Master, he's also reached Class 6. Unbelievable. But if grandson wants to reach Class 7, it's not easy, because only the Holy Empire holds the power to allow Class 6 Radiant Saint Masters to reach Class 7."

"Holy Empire? Why there?" Jian Chen was doubtful and remained puzzled even after thinking over it.

"Radiant Saint Masters occur with birth and it's impossible for people to become one after birth. But if you just want to rely on yourself, you won't be able to become a Class 7 Radiant Saint Master no matter how talented you are. If Radiant Saint Masters want to reach Class 7, they must rely on the help from a special saint artifact. Only with the help of the saint artifact can a Radiant

Saint Master successfully reach Class 7. As for the saint artifact, it's a unique item on the Tian Yuan Continent with only one in existence. And the Holy Empire just happens to possess it." Bi Hai said.

"Does that mean if I want to reach Class 7, I must go to the Holy Empire and then borrow the saint artifact?" Jian Chen said.

"Correct. However, the artifact in the Holy Empire is not just lent to anyone, as there's a great price to be paid every time it's activated. Also, it can't let every Class 6 Radiant Saint Master reach Class 7. Whether they can break through will rely on their talent." Bi Hai stared deeply at Jian Chen. He said sincerely, "Grandson, you should just give up on this idea. You're not from the Holy Empire, much less a central member of the Radiant Saint Master Union in the Holy Empire. It's impossible that they'll give you an opportunity. The artifact can't be used whenever either. It's like the holy grounds of Mercenary City; it can only be used after a certain period of time, and every time it's used, there's a great price to be paid."

Jian Chen remained silent. He now knew that becoming a Class 7 Radiant Saint Master was much more difficult than he had initially thought.

Chapter 680: Upfront Apology

Noticing Jian Chen's silence, Bi Hai pondered a little before speaking, "Grandson, I know that you're hurrying to reach Class 7 to heal your big brother's severed limbs, but you can just choose a different method. You can just pay a price and invite a Class 7 Radiant Saint Master from the Holy Empire to heal your brother. Although there are extremely few Class 7 Radiant Saint Masters on the continent, the Holy Empire's where Radiant Saint Master gather as well as the birthplace for Class 7 Radiant Saint Master. With your current status, you have the right to see those revered Class 7 Radiant Saint Masters."

"Also, aren't you familiar with the grand elder of Mercenary City? The grand elder is someone who is like a sovereign on the Tian Yuan Continent. No one dares to ignore what he wants. Even if you fail to invite one, you can just get the grand elder to help out. If he's willing to help, inviting a Class 7 Radiant Saint Master is as easy as cake. Perhaps, there are even Class 7 Radiant Saint Masters who are guest elders in Mercenary City."

Jian Chen shook his head gently, "No grandfather, since I'm a Radiant Saint Master and that I've already reached Class 6, I must think of an idea to reach Class 7. I must try until I've done all that I'm able to do."

Bi Hai nodded in admiration and said, "Grandson, your mindset is very great. People need to have a fighting spirit, to strive to a certain goal, no matter how difficult the path is. They mustn't give up."

Bi Hai paused and poured some tea for himself. He continued, “Although you’re not one of the famed figures of the Holy Empire, no matter where you go, you’ll be valued for your terrifying talent. Also, the grand elder of Mercenary City is supporting you from behind. With just that, I believe the Radiant Saint Master Union in the Holy Empire will make an exception and give you the chance to become a Class 7 Radiant Saint Master.

Hearing that, Jian Chen revealed an expression of joy. He said, “If it’s like that, then things will be easier.”

Afterwards, Jian Chen asked Bi Hai for guidance for a few aspects regarding Saint Rulers before leaving, returning to his own residence, an extravagant building that was similar to a palace.

In the quiet and cozy room, Jian Chen sat on his bed cross-legged with a heavy expression. He flipped his hand, and a medal appeared in his hand. In his mind, he could not help but think back to the situation when he obtained the medal.

“Youngster, if you can one day make it to the Holy Empire, then you can find me using this medal.”

Jian Chen stared at the medal blankly and said in surprise, “Who would’ve thought that this medal actually contains a strand of obscure World Force. If I weren’t a Saint Ruler, I wouldn’t have felt it at all. Just who was that old man who gave me this medal?”

Jian Chen’s heart was flooded with curiosity. He mumbled to himself, “Looks like it’s time to go to the Holy Empire.”

“Reporting to the fourth young master, the third young master wishes to see you!” Just at this moment, the voice of a servant girl echoed from outside.

Jian Chen was slightly surprised, “It’s actually third brother. Why has he come looking for me?” After mumbling to himself for a while, Jian Chen put the purple medal away and said, “Let him in.”

“Yes, young master!” The servant girl replied respectfully, before slowly backing off.

Afterwards, Jian Chen got off his bed and walked directly to the guest room to wait for his brother.

Jian Chen really did not have any good feelings for his third brother who was related by blood. Ever since young, his brother would create all types of troubles for him, making it difficult for him in every aspects. He would always attempt to bully Jian Chen, only to be put into rather awkward positions himself. Not only did he fail with his bullying schemes, he, the elder one, was instead bullied various times by his younger brother, the one who was publicly renowned as trash back then.

Jian Chen sat at a table, drinking tea leisurely. Very soon, a graceful and refined youth in long, white robes walked in while being accompanied by a girl.

The youth was elegant, handsome and graceful, carrying an air

akin to a scholar. He lacked some determination, so he seemed to be rather delicate.

Jian Chen looked at the youth indifferently. It had already been some time since he last saw his third brother. Compared to a few years ago, his third brother had undergone some great changes. No matter in appearance or manner, he was greatly different from before.

Being stared at by Jian Chen, Changyang Ke's emotions immediately became rather awkward and also felt rather nervous. At the current moment, the youth who seemed just as old as him was not just simply his younger brother, but a Saint Ruler who stood on the apex, a person who possessed the power of destruction with the wave of a hand.

“Reporting to the fourth young master, the third young master is here.” The female servant looked at Jian Chen in admiration and bowed slightly.

Jian Chen waved his hand, gesturing the female servant to leave. Afterwards, he continued to stare at Changyang Ke with his indifferent gaze, without any change for the better.

“Fourth brother... fourth brother...” Being stared at by Jian Chen, Changyang Ke felt even more awkward, as well as extremely anxious. He could vividly remember the times when he made things difficult for Jian Chen. However, Jian Chen was now a Saint Ruler. It made Changyang Ke feel rather scared, scared that Jian Chen would bring up the things from the past to make things difficult for him.

Seeing his third brother's anxious appearance, Jian Chen could not help but smile. He took the initiative to break off the awkwardness his brother was suffering, "Third brother, what brings you here today? It's quite rare for you to come to where I am. Come sit, you can't always stand." As Jian Chen spoke, he poured a cup of tea for his third brother.

Changyang Ke immediately became slightly relieved, extending a hand to wipe away the cold sweat on his forehead. Afterwards, he sat down in front of Jian Chen rather awkwardly. He hesitated for a while before finally raising the courage to speak out, "Brother, actually, third brother has come here today to apologise."

"Apologise? Apologise for what?" Jian Chen stared at Changyang Ke doubtfully. He was rather puzzled.

Changyang Ke wiped the cold sweat on his forehead again. He seemed to avoid direct eye contact with Jian Chen as he stuttered, "Fourth brother, before... before... before third brother did a lot of excessive things to you that I can't make up for. I hope you can forgive your third brother. Your third brother knows he's wrong. He also feels extremely regretful over what he did before."

Jian Chen broke into a laughter and shrugged without minding too much, "So you're speaking about those things? Third brother, let's not mention what happened during our childhood, I've forgotten all of it long ago." They came from the same origins, so why did they have to torment each other? Although Jian Chen felt unhappy with what his third brother had done in the past, they were all part of one family. They were brothers by blood. Jian

Chen would not really fall out with with third brother over those puny matters of the past. After all, his third brother did not really do anything that could not be forgiven. Also, he had come personally to apologise upfront this time, so it was sincere enough. If Jian Chen continued to bicker over the small betters, he would just seem petty.

Hearing that, a great burden was finally lifted from Changyang Ke's mind. He could not help but reveal a smile of joy and said, "With fourth brother putting it like that, third brother I will be free from anxiety. Before, it was your third brother who was too selfish, being mean to fourth brother. But fourth brother doesn't need to worry. In the future, I'll follow fourth brother and abide to all that fourth brother says."

Chapter 681: The Qinhuang Kingdom In Shock

Today, Changyang Ke took the initiative to seek out Jian Chen and apologize to him. It was in his hope that he could erase the unpleasantness that once happened between them before, but Jian Chen felt rather relieved to hear this apology nonetheless.

Afterwards, Jian Chen spent the next three days in Changyang Manor. The only times he had stepped out from the manor was when he went to visit Kendall's wife and son, Sans. The plight Sans was in had motivated Jian Chen's desire to become a Class 7 Radiant Saint Master as soon as possible.

This was because he came to learn of a way to help Sans cultivate again after his Saint Weapon was destroyed. All he had to do was to become a Class 7 Radiant Saint Master since only they could help a cripple regain the ability to cultivate.

Class 7 Radiant Saint Masters held an extraordinary powerful ability in their ability to heal. It was said that they could revive even the dead, and as long as the Class 7 Radiant Saint Master was strong enough. Therefore, treating a person who had their Saint Weapon destroyed was therefore no problem at all.

After the third day, a large group of people could be seen standing around in the main courtyards of Changyang Manor; even the king was there. One by one, they surrounded Jian Chen with eyes of reluctance. Today was the day that Jian Chen would be leaving, but everyone was unwilling to bid farewell to him just yet.

"Xiang'er, you've worked so hard recently; when you finish all that you need to do, you must come back home and stay even longer next time." Bi Yuntian urged her son with a great deal of reluctance.

"Xiang'er, you could let your subordinates deal with the smaller matters; there's no need to work so hard yourself." Changyang Ba spoke.

"Xiangtian..."

The elders of the Changyang clan and the king of the Gesun Kingdom began to give their own well-meaning opinions and advice to him. As it were, it seemed as if they were extremely concerned for Jian Chen as well.

While Jian Chen was a Saint Ruler, he did not grow arrogant because of it. He still treated his seniors with respect and listened dutifully to their words with a nod of his head whenever they said something.

It was at this moment Yu Fengyan came forward to grab at Jian Chen's hands. Pleading with him, she spoke, "Xiang'er, there hasn't been any news or correspondence with your second sister up to now. We know nothing about her whereabouts; with your strength, Xiang'er, your second aunt hopes that you'll be able to spend some time looking for her. She's the only daughter your second aunt has."

Jian Chen's face grew grim. Looking to his second aunt, he promised, "Second aunt, you can rest assured. I'll do my best to find the whereabouts of second sister."

Jian Chen felt very worried when it came to the disappearance of his second sister. When he was young, the only other person that cared for him besides his mother was Changyang Mingyue. Her concern for him had even exceeded his own father.

"Xiang'er, I can feel at ease now. I can only hope that my silly Mingyue will come back home safe and sound by my side." Yu Fengyan spoke. Her complexion was rather unwell due to the pain she felt in her heart. She was already prepared for the worst to happen, the only thing she needed now was the evidence.

After bidding farewell to the people in the Changyang Manor, he left together with his grandfather Bi Hai. After all, he had only returned this time to confirm his grandfather's identity. There were still many things that needed to be dealt with for the Flame Mercenaries, so Jian Chen really could not stay for too long.

Jian Chen originally wanted Bi Hai to stay in the Changyang Manor. However, Bi Hai had already gotten used to spending his time peacefully in the past few years, so he really was not used to the noisy environment of Changyang Manor. This was why he went with Jian Chen to the Flame Mercenaries. Also, there were a few other Saint Rulers there, so if he ever became bored, at least he still had some people to talk to.

Jian Chen and Bi Hai travelled together, using Spatial Force to soar through the high sky. They travelled quickly towards where

the Flame Mercenaries were.

In the royal palace of the Qinhuang Kingdom, the king currently sat casually on the throne; before him stood a young man clad in silver armor.

“Wujian, didn’t you stay in Gesun Kingdom? Why did you come back? Looking at how exhausted you are, it should be travel fatigue. Perhaps something major happened in Gesun Kingdom?” The king of Qinhuang Kingdom said amiably and with a smile.

“Your Majesty, Wujian really does have something extremely important to report to this time. A few days ago, Imperial Protector Jian Chen has already successfully broken through to Saint Ruler from a Heaven Saint Master.” On the tired face of the young man, there was a slight smile. It was obvious that he was filled with joy.

“What, Jian Chen has already successfully become a Saint Ruler!” The king suddenly stood up, and stared at the young man in disbelief.

“Yes Your Majesty, Imperial Protector has really become a Saint Ruler. He was also accompanied by rainbow clouds which blot out the sky within a fifty thousand kilometer radius. He’s caused a great shock wave in that area.” Speaking up to there, the young man paused slightly before continuing, “In addition, the Imperial Protector’s grandfather has suddenly appeared, who is also a powerful Saint Ruler.”

The king did not really care about the sudden appearance of Jian Chen's grandfather. At this moment, he was deeply shocked by the news of Jian Chen becoming a Saint Ruler.

“How is this possible! Jian Chen has actually already become a Saint Ruler. Unbelievable. Just look at how old he is right now.” The king mumbled with a distracted expression. Although he seemed calm, great waves currently rippled through his heart.

Before, the news that Jian Chen was already a Heaven Saint Master before the age of fifty had already caused him enough shock. Now, only after a few years, he had already improved from a Heaven Saint Master to a Saint Ruler. With such an improvement speed, it really would cause people to be terrified.

“I'll immediately go report it to the four honorable Imperial Protectors.” The king did not dare to delay this in the slightest and immediately left, hurrying towards the Qin Heaven Palace.

Not long after the king had left, another burly middle-aged man in golden armor walked in from outside.

“Hmm? So it's the head of the royal palace guards, Audro. Perhaps there is something that needs to be reported to the king for you to come here?” Seeing the middle-aged man, Qin Wujian revealed a smile of familiarity.

“Qin Wujian, so it's you. Didn't you go to the Gesum Kingdom with the Imperial Protector? Perhaps you three have all come back from there?” Audro and Qin Wujian clearly had a good

relationship. He spoke with some surprise.

Qin Wujian shook his head and said, “That’s not true. I returned this time because I have some important news to report to His Majesty. I won’t be staying too long in the imperial palace. What about you, Audro? Perhaps you have important news to report? If I recall correctly, the position as the head of the imperial palace guards is a very simple and easy job, since it’s already been several centuries since something last happened in the palace.”

Audro’s expression slowly grew more solemn and said, “Correct. For the past centuries in the imperial palace, it indeed has been safe. But it’s different now. Recently, I have constantly received reports from my subordinates that there are actually people who go missing for no reason in our imperial palace, such as palace maids, eunuchs, and even several dozen guards who work under me, including a captain with the strength of a Earth Saint Master. They disappeared as if they were water evaporating away. With my strength, no matter how I investigate, I can’t find their whereabouts. Don’t you think this is weird?”

“What, there’s actually been something this weird happening?” Qin Wujian muttered to himself with his eyebrows slightly raised out of shock. Afterwards, he said, “It’s not hard to explain why things like this have been occurring, that is if they occurred in smaller kingdoms. But for it to actually occur in the heavily-guarded imperial palace of our Qinhuang Kingdom, it’s rather astounding. After all, there are the four Imperial Protectors overseeing the imperial palace. Even the slightest movements would not escape from the four of them.”

“Yeah, I also feel it’s weird. I’ve looked into this matter for several days already, but I haven’t found anything. This is why I can only report it to His Majesty.”

“Unfortunately, you came a little late. His Majesty has just proceeded towards the Qin Heaven Palace. Audro, you’ll have to wait a little.”

...

In the grand Qin Heaven Palace of the royal palace, the four, most-respected Imperial Protectors gathered together. They sat around a large square table, and not far away, the king stood obediently. He did not carry the imposing awe he normally possessed, and maintained a respectful expression.

“Are you serious, has Jian Chen really broken through to a Saint Ruler?” An Imperial Protector opened his mouth to ask. His expression was solemn, and he clearly cared about this very much.

The king replied respectfully, “Replying to Imperial Protector, this is the news brought back by Qin Wujian who has been stationed to Gesun Kingdom. He is completely certain that Jian Chen is already a Saint Ruler. Also, at that time, rainbow clouds had even appeared, blotting the skies of a fifty thousand kilometer radius.”

“Since the rainbow clouds have appeared, a Saint Ruler has definitely been born. Looks like Jian Chen really has become a Saint Ruler.” An Imperial Protector said.

“But just how old is he right now? Just a few years ago, he participated in the Gathering of the Mercenaries in Mercenary City, so just how did he become a Saint Ruler so quickly? This is just insane.”

“He’s not even fifty. Actually climbing to the realm of Saint Rulers with such a young age. This indeed is unbelievable. Now that Jian Chen has already become a Saint Ruler, do you think we should tell him this? With his support, our Qinhuang Kingdom should increase quite a lot in strength.”

“Last time Jian Chen returned, there also seemed to be another powerful Saint Ruler and a Class 7 magical beast who followed him. This is a strength that we must value. In my opinion, we indeed should tell this to Jian Chen. Perhaps, we will gain three extra Saint Rulers today because of this.”

Chapter 682: Wiping Out The Hongfu Clan (One)

“Yes. If we have three Saint Rulers join us, our power will increase a lot. We just don’t know what relationship Jian Chen exactly has with the two, and whether he can pull them towards our Qinhuang Kingdom. Perhaps they are unwilling to interfere in this matter.”

Listening to the conversation between the four Imperial Protectors, the king hesitated slightly. He then spoke carefully, “Four Imperial Protectors, I have heard that Jian Chen has connections with the higher levels of authority in Mercenary City. Perhaps we should speak with Jian Chen, and see if we can borrow his connection with them to get Mercenary City to help us. As soon as they stand to our side, I believe the problem that we are about to face will cease to exist, and those above us will also view us with a new light.”

The four Imperial Protectors shook their head simultaneously and turned down the king’s suggestion without any second thought. One of the Imperial Protectors said, “I don't really understand Mercenary City. The connection that Jian Chen has with the authority of Mercenary City is just a rumor and does not seem to be true. Also, even if Jian Chen really does have a connection with them, Mercenary City will definitely not help us.”

“Yes. In the eyes of normal mercenaries, perhaps it is just a city, just a place where mercenaries gather. However, in reality, Mercenary City plays a role of guarding the Tian Yuan Continent that not many people know of. They definitely won’t intervene in

any battles on the Tian Yuan Continent, much less help anyone rise in power. They will only formally intervene if a large-scale battle erupts on the continent, so our idea of requesting help from them definitely won't work. It's all the same, whether Jian Chen has any connections at all with Mercenary City." An Imperial Protector said.

"Junior understands, and thanks the Imperial Protectors' teachings." The king said with great respect and his hand clasped.

"Enough. Our conversation about Jian Chen will stop here for now. After you go back, immediately order people to send a message to Jian Chen, and ask him to come visit the Qinhuang Empire some time. We can talk about this with him at that time." An Imperial Protector said.

"Yes, as soon as Junior goes back, Junior will order people to contact Imperial Protector Jian Chen. Junior will first excuse himself." The king slowly withdrew.

"Sigh, who would have thought that Jian Chen has already become a Saint Ruler. If he continues with his unbelievable speed, perhaps he'll only need a few centuries to reaching an even higher realm at most, becoming a Saint King. "After the king had left, an Imperial Protector could not help but give off a sigh of surprise again.

"His talent really is unprecedented. Jian Chen's future accomplishments will be so great that even we will not be able to imagine it. Perhaps, he will directly catch up to the unrivalled Mo Tianyun. I even suspect Jian Chen might be a reincarnation of Mo

Tianyun.

“If he matures successfully, he will definitely become a venerated Saint Emperor. It’s already been such a long time since the Tian Yuan Continent has produced a Saint Emperor. It’s about time for one to appear.”

“If Jian Chen becomes a Saint Emperor, our Qinhuang Kingdom will also be benefited greatly. We can directly become an existence equal to the Three Great Empires, or even surpass the Three Great Empires.”

“We four need to properly foster our relationship with Jian Chen. If we don’t start now, perhaps it will be too late...”

...

In the imperial city of Qinhuang Kingdom, in an inn less than ten kilometers away from the imperial palace, a burly middle-aged man currently laid on a bed with his chest bare and eyes tightly closed.

Suddenly, the middle-aged man snapped open his eyes. As soon as he opened his eyes, two rays of visible light shot out from his eyes. They pierced two finger-sized holes in the wooden ceiling.

The middle-aged man sat up without any prior warning and could not help but reveal a smile on his fierce-looking face. However, the smile was sinister.

“Jian Chen, I finally know where you’ve gone. So it turns out you’ve been hiding in a place called Gesun Kingdom, which was why it’s been so difficult to find news about you.” The middle-aged man’s slowly blurred, and in the blink of an eye, he disappeared from the tightly-shut room.

Somewhere else in the imperial city, the bare-chested, middle-aged man walked into a rather large store. He threw a bag full of glittering purple coins onto the counter and said expressionlessly, “Immediately give me the most detailed map of Tian Yuan Continent. Remember, I want the largest, the most detailed map.”

Seeing so many purple coins, the shopkeeper’s eyes became green with greed. He hurriedly collected the bag full of purple coins and said, “Okay, okay. Customer, please wait. I will go and get the best map for you right now.” Before he had even finished speaking, the shopkeeper turned to leave. Very quickly, he returned with a scroll as long as a man, and said with an enchanting smile, “Customer, this is our store’s largest, clearest and most detailed map. It records the geography of half of the Tian Yuan Continent.

The man opened the long scroll as soon as he received it. The scroll was very large, and when completely unravelled, it was five metres long. On it were mountains and rivers, all very detailed.

The man scanned across the map swiftly and forcefully with his gaze. After a while, he revealed a cold smile, before collecting the map and leaving.

...

After several hours of travel, Jian Chen and Bi Hai finally returned to the Flame Mercenaries. Just when they approached the royal palace, Jubis, Jiede Tai, Huang Tianba and the other three sensed them, and were already floating high up in the air to welcome them.

“Hahahaha, Jian Chen, so the activity a few days ago was indeed caused by you. Who would have thought that after a few days of not seeing each other, you’ve already become a Saint Ruler. Back then when you were still a Heaven Saint Master, it was already very hard for me to suppress you. Now that you’ve broken through, perhaps even I, the great Nubis, cannot be your opponent.” Nubis found out that Jian Chen had already become a Saint Ruler with a glance, and immediately became happy for Jian Chen.

Jiede Tai, who stood beside Nubis, looked at Jian Chen with a complicated expression. He was very shocked. Although he had already predicted that Jian Chen had already become a Saint Ruler, he still felt great shock when he really thought about it.

He was someone who knew very well that only a few years ago, Jian Chen was still a weak Earth Saint Master. Only so much time had passed from then, and Jian Chen had actually overcome the difficulties along the way from an Earth Saint Master, breaking through to a Saint Ruler with devastating speed. It was just too unbelievable.

“Hahaha, who would have thought that little brother Jian Chen

has indeed become a Saint Ruler. Congratulations! I believe not too long in the future, little brother Jian Chen will become a Saint Emperor that even I can only dream of.” Huang Tianba laughed aloud. He was extremely happy.

Chapter 683: Wiping Out The Hongfu Clan (Two)

Jian Chen said a few words to Huang Tianba, Nubis and Jiede Tai before introducing Bi Hai to everyone. He did not try to cover up the fact that Bi Hai was his grandfather to the three.

Huang Tianba and the other two already knew that Jian Chen had a connection to Bi Hai a few days ago, so when they heard the truth, they were not too surprised. They only constantly sighed, sighing how there just was nothing too strange in such a large world. Who would have thought that a few days ago, the two who were still enemies actually had such a close relationship.

“Hahaha, it’ll be great now. In the future, everyone will be one of our own. Now that brother Jian Chen’s group is becoming more and more powerful, normal hermit clans will no longer pose a threat to the Flame Mercenaries.” Huang Tianba laughed aloud, and seemed extremely happy.

Hearing that, Jian Chen also revealed a smile on his face. With the current strength of the Flame Mercenaries, he clearly was also very happy.

“Let’s talk after we go down.” Jian Chen called out the the group, before landing on the ground at the same time.

In a magnificently decorated room, Jian Chen, Bi Hai, Nubis, Jiede Tai, Huang Tianba, Ming Dong, Huang Luan and others currently gathered there in a big group. The news of Jian Chen

becoming a Saint Ruler had also been announced by Huang Tianba, so all of Jian Chen's friends knew about it.

“Brother, have you really become a Saint Ruler?” Ming Dong was the first one who could not hold it back, so he asked. He was moved.

Jian Chen did not deny it, and confirmed with a smile and a nod.

After receiving confirmation, the crowd was first stunned, before falling into a great uproar.

“Woah, fantastic! Brother, you are now a powerful hermit. You are just too awesome.” Bi Lian's ecstatic face was flushed red. Beside her, the two girls, Huang Luan and You Yue were also excited, and looked at Jian Chen gently.

“This is just too unbelievable. It has only been so long since the previous Gathering of Mercenaries has finished, yet the current King of Mercenaries is already a powerful Saint Ruler. It's unimaginable.” Wang Yufeng carried a young Steelwing Bird in his bosom; he could not help but sigh with surprise.

“Jian Chen, my gap with you is getting bigger and bigger. It looks like it'll be very difficult from me to catch up with you in this lifetime.” Tie Ta looked at Jian Chen with a complicated expression and said with a pained smile. Thinking back when they were still in Kargath Academy, although his strength was not as great as Jian Chen, it was almost the same. However, only after a few years, Jian Chen had already become a Saint Ruler, reaching a

great level where he had no hope of catching up. This also caused the simple and honest Tie Ta to be filled with disbelief.

Jian Chen brought his hands together and said, “Enough. Everyone please quiet for a moment. I have something very important to announce. The person next to me is my grandfather, who is also a powerful Saint Ruler.”

These people were all Jian Chen’s most trusted people, so to them, Jian Chen did not conceal the identity of Bi Hai. Instead, he made it known to everyone that there was an additional Saint Ruler on their side, which could instead increase morale.

Hearing this, the people who did not have a great understanding of Jian Chen’s background actually did not react too greatly, and only felt excited because of an additional Saint Ruler. However, You Yue knew Jian Chen’s background and was instead filled with doubt. Excluding Jian Chen, she was the only person in the crowd that had a relative understanding to the people in the Changyang Manor. She felt astonished by the fact that a Saint Ruler grandfather had suddenly appeared by Jian Chen’s side.

Suddenly, You Yue seemed to remember something. Her expression was full of surprise, and looked at Bi Hai with shock. She asked, “Perhaps this senior is the lost-lost ancestor of the Changyang clan?”

Jian Chen shook his head. Staring at You Yue, he said, “Yue’er, I’ll explain this to you later. Lian’er, come with me, brother and grandfather have some things that we want to say to you in private.”

“Yes!” Bi Lian nodded her head obediently. At first, she glanced suspiciously at Bi Hai who was in long, blue robes. Afterwards, under everyone’s curious gaze, she followed behind Jian Chen into another room. Under Jian Chen’s indication, Bi Hai also went with him.

After the three entered the room, Jian Chen swung his hand, and a breeze closed the door. Afterwards, he turned around to look at Bi Hai and said, “Grandfather, this is my younger sister, Bi Lian. She is also a person of the Bi family, with the blood of our Bi family running in her veins. Currently, she is one of the few remaining members.” After saying that, he turned around to speak to Bi Lian, “Lian’er, this is the patriarch of our Bi family. Why don’t you quickly call him grandfather!”

“Grandfather!” Bi Lian called out obediently. Meanwhile, her clear gaze which was full of complicated emotions examined Bi Hai. As for this grandfather, she had heard about the situation in detail from Bi Yuntian long ago, and already knew that he had been missing for several years. She just never thought it would actually be his older brother who would find him again.

Bi Hai had a kind smile on his face, and Bi Lian’s gaze became soft. He had once spent thirty odd years in a dark cave, passing the days all by himself. As a result, he now showed great concern and care for all his grandsons and granddaughters.

“Good, good, good. Who would have thought that I, Bi Hai, would have another great-granddaughter, who also happens to possess a great talent for cultivation that is even rarely seen in a

thousand years. Not bad at all, looks like the heavens is helping my Bi family to flourish. Without much time, my Bi family can regain its former glory.” Bi Hai smiled without restraint. He was extremely excited.

“Great-granddaughter, your brother has already become a Saint Ruler, so he doesn’t need your grandfather’s guidance anymore at all. As for you, you should follow your grandfather in the future. Your grandfather will personally guide you through your cultivation, and you will be able to avoid many long-winding bends in the path of cultivation, which will save you from wasting your great talent.” Bi Hai said to Bi Lian gently.

However, what surprised Bi Hai was that Bi Lian actually denied his good intentions and said, “Grandfather, Lian’er wants to stay here to help brother do somethings, to help brother bear the burden of the pressure. Lian’er does not want to leave.”

“Lian’er, you don’t need to worry about the matters of the Flame Mercenaries too much. You mustn’t let these miscellaneous things interfere with your cultivation. Only cultivation is the most important, because on the Tian Yuan Continent, only strength can represent everything. You should give the responsibilities to other people. You don’t need to toil about yourself.” Jian Chen persuaded.

Bi Lian resolutely shook her head, and looked at Jian Chen imploringly. She said, “Brother, Lian’er extremely likes to do these things. You should just let Lian’er do it. Please don’t turn away Lian’er. Lian’er and sister You Yue will manage the Flame Mercenaries very well together. Also, Lian’er will ensure you that

it definitely will not interfere with cultivation.”

Seeing Bi Lian’s pleadings, Jian Chen temporarily did not know just what to choose. He just loved his sister too much, and really did not want to force her to do something she was unwilling to do. He could only secretly sigh.

“Whatever, since great-granddaughter is so determined, grandfather will not force you. In the future, grandfather will just stay here and will guide great-granddaughter when she has the time.” Bi Hai did not force Bi Lian in the end.

The situation was now different from before. Before, he had several grandchildren under him, and did not need to purposely care for anybody. However now, he currently only had four grandchildren, so he needed to increase his care, completely changing his unconcerned nature from before.

After the three had finished speaking, they left the room. Afterwards, he chatted a little with the people outside. As he conversed with them, Huang Tianba walked to Jian Chen and said, “Brother Jian Chen, I have some things that I wish you can help me with.”

Jian Chen chuckled and said, “Senior Huang does not need to be polite. If senior has anything that requires Jian Chen, feel free to mention it. Jian Chen will definitely provide assistance.”

Huang Tianba’s smile had already completely disappeared. He looked at Jian Chen solemnly and said, “I wonder if brother Jian

Chen still remembers about the Hongfu clan I mentioned before.”

Jian Chen felt a tug of interest, and could vaguely guess what Huang Tianba was suggesting. He said, “Of course. The Hongfu clan is the nemesis clan of the Huang Family, with the enmity reaching a level that can no longer be resolved. If Jian Chen guesses correctly, Senior Huang should be wanting to move against the Hongfu clan.”

Huang Tianba did not deny it and said, “Correct. Our Huang Family and the Hongfu clan have always caused trouble to one another, and have always wanted to end each other. However, the strength of our two groups have always been extremely close, with neither of us able to suppress the other. Even if we fought it out, the outcome would be both sides suffering defeats, with us ourselves suffering the most losses in the end. As a result, the hatred between the two groups has always continued up to now, unable to be resolved. However, this time, I wish that brother Jian Chen can work with me and obliterate the Hongfu clan. That would save troubles from undue delays, just in case any unforeseen changes happen”

Jian Chen could not help but remember the Ruler Armament wielded by the Saint Ruler of the Hongfu clan from before. He could not help but reveal a smile, and he said, “Senior Huang’s business is also my business. Also, the Hongfu clan played a part in regards to what happened with the tungsten alloy mine, so speaking of which, they are also enemies of me. Senior Huang, you do not need to worry, Jian Chen will definitely help you end the Hongfu clan.”

“If it’s like that, it’ll be fabulous. With brother Jian Chen’s help, the Hongfu clan will no longer possess the power to fight against our Huang Family.” Huang Tianba laughed aloud.

Jian Chen hesitated slightly and then said, “Senior Huang, it’s just that junior has a bold request. junior wishes for senior to permit it.”

“Haha, brother Jian Chen, you don’t need to worry at all. Go ahead and say it.” Huang Tianba said straightforwardly.

“I recall that the Hongfu clan has two Ruler Armaments, with one of them being a sword. I am interested in this sword, so junior wishes that after what we do, senior Huang can give the Ruler Armament to me.” Jian Chen said.

“No problem, no problem at all. As long as the two Saint Rulers of the Hongfu clan fall, I wouldn’t want any of the two Ruler Armaments. They can all go to brother Jian Chen.” Huang Tianba said extremely generously. Although Ruler Armaments were very valuable, having many was not necessarily good. This was because for every Ruler Armament, an additional amount of power was needed to guard it. One was already enough for the Huang Family.

Chapter 684: Wiping Out The Hongfu Clan (Three)

“Senior, I’ll entirely listen to you as to how we handle the Hongfu clan. I just wonder when we will move against the Hongfu clan?” Jian Chen said.

Huang Tianba paused for a little while before saying, “Every day the Hongfu clan exists is another day where my Huang family will be not be at ease. Brother Jian Chen, in my opinion, it’s better if we handle it sooner. I just worry that if we drag it out for too long, unexpected changes might happen.”

“Since it’s like that, we should just act now. With our current strength, handling the Hongfu clan is a piece of cake, and it won’t take up much time at all.” Jian Chen said. He seemed to be even more anxious than Huang Tianba.

Huang Tianba revealed an overjoyed expression, and nodded several times, “It’s best like that. We should get going.”

Jian Chen turned around and look at the crowd. He called out, “Nubis, Jiede Tai, come over here.”

Jiede Tai and Nubis glanced at Jian Chen suspiciously, and then walked over doubtfully.

“How many times have I told you, call me the great Nubis. Just why don’t you listen. Whatever, who told you to have such

abnormal talent. I, the great Nubis, am magnanimous, so I won't bicker over these small things with a brat like you. Speak, just what have you called the great Nubis over for?" Arriving before Jian Chen, Nubis curled his lip and said unhappily.

After hearing what Nubis had said, Jian Chen and Huang Tianba could not help but laugh out involuntarily. Nubis just regarded the word 'great' with too great of an importance.

"Nubis, weren't you unhappy that you could not enjoy yourself to the fullest with the fight a few days ago? Come with us in a while, there'll soon be another battle to fight." Jian Chen said.

Nubis was a magical beast. Even though he was in human form and that he seemed completely just like a human, his love for battle that flowed in his veins could not be changed no matter what. The moment he heard there would be another fight, he could not control himself and immediately became overjoyed. He said excitedly, "Your human world is just too marvelous. I once stayed in the Cross Mountains, and would only meet an opponent after hundreds of years. Ever since I followed you into the human world, there's been fights practically everyday. Only now have I, the great Nubis, realised how smart of a choice it was to follow you into the world of humans." Speaking up to there, Nubis seemed to have realised something. His expression changed slightly, and said to Jian Chen, "Jian Chen you youngster, I, the great Nubis, must warn you beforehand that you definitely cannot find those abnormally powerful opponents for me. I can forcefully handle Saint Rulers of the Sixth Heavenly Layer. If the opponent's strength is in the Seventh Heavenly Layer or has exceeded that, you can't blame me for ditching you and running off all by myself. Fighting against such strong opponents is just suicide. There's no

chance in winning. Even with a Ruler Armament, it's impossible." Speaking to the end, Nubis glanced at Huang Tianba, intentionally or otherwise.

Huang Tianba chuckled, "Nubis... the great Nubis, your worry is completely unnecessary. This time, our opponents will not be too strong. The two will only have strength of the Third Heavenly Layer. It's just that we need to pay attention to the fact that they have two Ruler Armaments."

"What? The two both have Ruler Armaments?" Nubis stared blankly slightly, and then unwarily spat out, "Are they be the two old men who escaped a few days ago?"

"Correct, it's the two of them!" Huang Tianba said.

Nubis revealed a soft smile and said, "Then no problem. With their strength, I can even handle three at once. However, they have Ruler Armaments. The strength of those things cannot be ignored and cannot be casually hit by one of them. I'll be responsible for keeping one busy. You two can handle the other one."

"Great! If we want to kill the other one, it'll be extremely easy if brother Jian Chen and I work together." Huang Tianba seemed very happy. The unresolved hatred of the Huang family for the Hongfu clan was finally going to disappear. Not only could the Huang family lead lives of no worry in the future, it would also relieve a great burden from the old man who held the highest status in the Huang family.

“Nubis, you come with Senior Huang and me this time. Jiede Tai, you can stay here to keep watch.” Jian Chen quickly allocated the positions of his subordinates. He did not get Jiede Tai to go along because it was completely unnecessary. Also, against an opponent with a Ruler Armement, if Jiede Tai fought, he would just be more of a hindrance than help, unable to use his strength to the fullest.

Afterwards, Jian Chan bid farewell to the group of people, and left together with Huang Tianba and Nubis. They directly headed towards the Hongfu clan.

Several thousand kilometres away from the Flame Mercenaries, there was a magical beast forest that took up an area of several thousand square kilometers. Even though the magical beast forest was on the Tian Yuan Continent, it was a medium-sized magical beast forest, not only because there were many magical beasts, but also because there were many Class 5 magical beasts. According to rumors, in the deepest parts of the magical forest, there were even Class 6 magical beasts, akin to human Saint Heaven Masters.

There were many countries of different sizes surrounding the forest. Every day, there would be large numbers of mercenaries who would enter the outskirts of the forest to kill some low class magical beasts to support their families. Of course, there were also some Earth Saint Master who brag about their strength and enter the depths of the forest in attempt to hunt a Class 5 magical beast. However, without any exception whatsoever, all the Earth Saint Masters would enter unharmed and leave heavily injured. There was actually no one who had succeeded in killing a Class 5 magical beast.

As for powerful Heaven Saint Masters, there were some people who had once worked together in attempt to hunt a Class 6 magical beast. However, they all returned not long after. After that, no one ever entered the deeper parts of the magical beast forest, nor would they ever mention what was inside.

This was because in the deepest parts of the magical beast forest concealed a secret, mysterious clan. The strength of this mysterious clan had once caused all the Heaven Saint Masters heading into the deepest parts of the magical beast forest to pale, because the clan possessed a strength so great that it could completely, and easily, wipe out several of the surrounding countries, even though it had so few people.

In the deepest parts of the magical beast forest, there was a manor completely built out of white marble. At this moment, three people gathered together in a completely-sealed, secret room of the manor.

“In-law, this time, our Hongfu clan has met an unprecedented feeling of danger. You must help our Hongfu clan survive through this threat. After it, I am willing to give the Dragon Slaying Sword to your Yan family.” An elderly man in long, white robes requested while he sat before a middle-aged man.

Chapter 685: The Yan Family Patriarch

After hearing what the white-robed old man had said, a sliver of interest flashed across the middle-aged man's eyes. However, he quickly concealed it and said helplessly, "Jin Tian, Jin Feng, this time, I can only apologise. Jian Chen actually has the grand elder of Mercenary City supporting him from behind and even the two ancient clans aren't his opponents, let alone my small Yan family. Please forgive me for being incapable of action."

The middle-aged man was the patriarch of the Yan family, as well as the only Saint Ruler of the Yan family. His strength had already reached the peak of the Fourth Heavenly Layer, and was stronger than either one of the Saint Rulers from the Hongfu clan.

"In-law, regarding Jian Chen, you do not need to worry at all. Although I don't know what relationship Jian Chen has with Huang Tianba, but other than offending Jian Chen because of the tungsten alloy mine, we have no other animosity. I believe that just by this, it is not enough for Jian Chen to antagonise my Hongfu clan enmity. As long as the two of us personally visit him and apologise some time, it should be able to clear off any enmity created a few days ago, transforming our hostility into friendship. What really makes my Hongfu clan worried is Huang Tianba. The hatred between the Huang family and my Hongfu clan was formed by people of the previous generation. Although we two groups have not had any large-scale clashes in the recent years, we still have constant small conflicts in secret. Both sides have suffered losses, so as a result, the hatred between us has become very deep, which cannot be resolved peacefully at all. This time, if in-law helps me wipe out the Huang family, I will gift my Dragon Slaying Sword to you." The Saint Ruler of the Hongfu clan, Jin Tian, said. As soon as he finished speaking, a metre-long sword with a width

of two fingers appeared in his hand. The entire sword was covered in a layer of hazy, glimmering light, and a blurry image of the sword could be vaguely seen through the layer. The entire sword was veined, and if it was looked at closely, the veins actually hegemonic, flying black dragon.

The Yan family patriarch's interest was indeed piqued. He hesitated for a while, but still declined in the end. He said, "Perhaps the matter is not as easy as you have thought. According to my investigations, a girl from the Huang family was originally engaged to the Huanggu clan, but afterwards, it was because of the appearance of Jian Chen that the Huang family personally cancelled it. As a result, I feel that Jian Chen and the Huang family's relationship is more complicated than you have imagined. My Yan family definitely cannot intervene in this. There is the grand elder of Mercenary City supporting Jian Chen from behind, and he seems to also have some connections with the ancient Tianmu clan. Also, considering how terrifying his talent is, he is someone my Yan family cannot afford to offend."

"In-law..." The two Saint Rulers of the Hongfu clan became worried. Just as Jin Feng attempted to persuade him, he was cut off by the patriarch of the Yan family.

"Jin Tian, Jin Feng, you should stop persuading me anymore. I know very well as to how much my Yan family can do. The relationship between Jian Chen and the Huang family is complicated, and they may even have treated you as a common enemy. My Yan family definitely cannot intervene. Today, I have come personally to visit because I have something very important to tell the two of you. The engagement between our two families is cancelled. From today onwards, our two families will go their

separate way. Matters regarding your Hongfu clan have nothing to do with my Yan family anymore.” The patriarch said.

The expressions of the two Hongfu clan Saint Rulers simultaneously became extremely ugly. They did not that that not only did they fail to pull the Yan family in to face an enemy, they had instead cut off their relationship with the Yan family. This was extremely unfavorable for the Hongfu clan.

“Yan Zhengnan, you came today to cancel the engagement?” Jin Tian’s expression was unpleasant.

The Yan family patriarch sighed. He had an expression of helplessness and said quietly, “I wish you can understand, my Yan family still needs to survive.”

“Jin Tian, Jin Feng, why don’t the two of you come out quickly. Today, the enmity between my Huang family and your Hongfu clan will reach an utter conclusion.” Suddenly, a loud and clear voice pierced through various obstacles to clearly resound in the room. The sound wave was so strong that it had caused the entire secret room to slightly tremble.

“It’s Huang Tianba that old bastard’s voice. He actually came knocking on our door personally.” The expression of the two Saint Rulers became extremely unpleasant. The Hongfu clan and the Huang family had been locked in a stalemate for countless years, and during that time, neither of them dared to allow any large-scale conflicts to erupt. This was because the strength of the two groups were very similar, and once they began fighting, no one had confidence in absolute victory. However today, Huang Tianba

actually showed up on his own accord. Even without thinking, they knew he definitely brought foreign aid and was extremely confident.

“Looks like my visit today really was untimely.” The Yan family patriarch said with some remorse, before immediately leaving the secret room.

Outside the Hongfu clan manor, the originally-peaceful manor immediately became bustling with noise after Huang Tianba’s loud declaration. Over a thousand Hongfu clan members gathered outside, with each one raising their head to look at the three people who floated high up in the air. They all talked about it, and many of them were filled with terror.

“They’re people of the Huang family. They’ve come for revenge.”

“The people of the Huang family have actually come, and called out the names of the two great elders. They must be powerful Saint Rulers.

“Quick, go report it to the patriarch...”

“The ancestor of the Huang family has come himself. What use is there reporting it to the patriarch? Hurry up and get the two great elders.”

“Hurry up and give the orders, make the entire clan take guard. The Huang family wants to battle with our Hongfu clan. They

definitely brought a lot of people.”

The comments made by the members of the Hongfu clan mixed with the commands several higher-ranking people, which caused the entire manor to fall into a hubub. The groups of people in the manor moved about, with all the powerful members heading off in all directions, to prevent the invasion of a large number of troops.

Closely afterwards, three people flew out from the back of the Hongfu clan manor. Their speed was extremely quick, so with only a flash, they had traversed several kilometers and appeared high up in the sky, opposite of Jian Chen, Nubis and Huang Tianba.

The three people were the two Saint Rulers of the Hongfu clan and the Yan family patriarch. However, when the two Saint Rulers from the Hongfu clan saw Jian Chen and the gold-clothed Nubis standing by Huang Tianba, their expressions became extremely ugly.

“Looks like my guess is correct. Jian Chen and the Huang family’s relationship really isn’t simple, and has basically reached a level where they hold treat the Hongfu clan as a common enemy.” The Yan family mumbled inwardly. The simultaneous arrival of Jian Chen and Nubis with Huang Tianba had his guess.

Huang Tianba swept his gaze coldly across the people before him, and said with a cold smile, “Jin Tian, Jin Feng, you were right a few days ago. The grievances between our two families has gone on for too long, and it is about time to resolve it.” Huang Tianba’s gaze landed on the Yan family patriarch, “Patriarch of the Yan family, do you plan on fighting alongside with the Hongfu clan?”

Hearing what was said, the patriarch's expression changed slightly. He hurriedly moved away from the two Saint Rulers from the Hongfu clan, and smiled apologetically, "Today, I purposely came to dissolve the engagement with the Hongfu clan, and do not want to battle alongside with the Hongfu clan. Huang Tianba, you must not misunderstand this. From today onwards, matters of the Hongfu clan no longer have anything to do with my Yan family." The patriarch already knew that the Hongfu clan was beyond salvation, so he put it harshly, directly severing his connection to the Hongfu clan.

"Brother Jian Chen, a few days ago, I have offended you very much. I am aware of my mistake, and wish that brother Jian Chen can be the bigger person, and forgive the stupid things I have done in my ignorance. I will definitely bring generous gifts and personally visit to apologise in the future." The patriarch's tone was euphemistic and extremely sincere, completely forgoing his identity as the patriarch of a family. This was because in his heart, if he could erase Jian Chen's discontent for the Yan family, he could even give up his position as the patriarch of the family. Afterall, Jian Chen was someone he definitely could not offend.

Seeing how sincere the patriarch of the Yan family was, Jian Chen did not act pettily and said straightforwardly, "As long as the patriarch of the Yan family does not interfere with the matters today, as well as guarantee that you will not treat us with hostility in the future, the small matters from a few days ago can be wiped off the slate."

Hearing what Jian Chen had said, the patriarch Yan family became overjoyed at the unexpected, good outcome. He laughed

aloud, “Good, for brother Jian Chen to be so frank, I feel admiration. I’m definitely making you a friend of mine. Brother Jian Chen, my Yan family is situated on Mount Xuxi several tens of thousand kilometres away. If there is anything in the future that our Yan family can help with, feel free to ask. As long as my Yan family has the power, we will definitely not shy away from it, and help you with all of our ability.

Chapter 686: Chasing To Kill

The patriarch of the Yan family knew exactly how powerful Jian Chen was, as well as the fact that his talent was currently unprecedented on the Tian Yuan Continent and his future prospects would be inconceivable. As a result, as soon as the chance appeared, he would immediately attempt to ingratiate himself with Jian Chen, unwilling to miss any chances of developing a good relationship with Jian Chen.

“The patriarch of the Yan family is too polite. In the future, if Jian Chen has any areas that would require help, then I would have to trouble the Yan family.” Jian Chen looked at the patriarch of the Yan family with a smile and his hands clasped. He did not turn down the patriarch’s attempt to curry favor, as after all, the Yan family was a hermit family that possessed a powerful Saint Ruler and could not be so easily ignored. If he maintained a relationship with those types of families, no matter if it was for him, the Changyang clan or the Flame Mercenaries, it was definitely a good thing.

“Hahaha, it’s not troublesome, it’s not troublesome at all. My Yan family is extremely willing to help brother Jian Chen handle matters within our ability.” The Yan family laughed without restraint, seeming to be extremely happy.

“Brother Jian Chen, I will not be delaying you any further. The Yan family just happens to have some small matters that require me to resolve, so I will be leaving first. In the future, if brother Jian Chen has the time, brother Jian Chen is welcome to come visit my Yan family as a guest.” The patriarch of the Yan family did not stay for long, and left as soon as he said his farewells to Jian

Chen.

The two Saint Rulers of the Hongfu clan watched the patriarch of the Yan family leave with gloomy expressions. When the patriarch of the Yan family severed his relationship with them at this crucial moment, it caused the two of them to be extremely mad, but they felt completely helpless.

“Jin Tian, Jin Feng, our two families have already been locked in constant strife for several thousand years. It should completely end today.” Huang Tianba looked at the two Saint Rulers of the Hongfu clan with a cold smile, while in his hand, a golden longbow had already appeared. It was a Ruler Armament, the Solunar Bow.

However, Jin Tian and Jin Feng did not pay any attention to Huang Tianba. One of them looked at Jian Chen, “Jian Chen, regarding what had happened a few days ago with the tungsten alloy mine, the two of us indeed have gone overboard. We will sincerely apologise to you right here, so we wish that you will not interfere between matters of our Hongfu clan and the Huang family. As long as you and this dear friend stand down, the two of us will gift you a Ruler Armament. How you feel about this, Jian Chen?”

Hearing what was said, the corner of Jian Chen’s lips curled into a scornful cold smile. However, he did not say anything.

Seeing how Jian Chen did not reply, a Saint Ruler of the Hongfu clan continued, “Jian Chen, if you feel unsatisfied about the offer, we can add an additional condition: in the future, my Hongfu clan will help you do three things under any conditions, as long as they

fall under our ability. Does this satisfy you?”

“Hahahaha, Jin Tian, Jian Feng, what you’ve done just now really has broadened my, horizons. Who would have thought you would actually have thoughts like this. However, I’d persuade you to give up on this. How can brother Jian Chen be roped into your side with just these cheap bargains?” Huang Tianba laughed. He looked at the two Saint Rulers, his gaze full of ridicule.

“Senior Huang has put it well. The two of you should give up on this.” Jian Chen conformed to what Huang Tianba had said.

The expressions of the two Saint Rulers changed,, “What if we gift two Ruler Armaments to you? We only need you, Jian Chen, and that brother to stand down and not interfere with what’s happening between our Hongfu clan and the Huang family.” This time, the two Saint Rulers did not hold back at all. They understood very well that if Jian Chen and Nubis worked together with Huang Tianba, they had no chance of victory even with the Ruler Armaments.

“Jin Tian, Jin Feng, quit rambling. When we kill the two of you, won’t the two Ruler Armaments you possess end up in our hands anyway? Take this.” Huang Tianba said with a cold smile, before directly drawing the longbow. A golden energy arrow quickly formed, before turning into a ray of golden light, shooting towards one of them like a bolt of lightning.

The two Saint Rulers already knew that the arrows shot by the Solunar Bow could not be dodged. Their reactions were not slow, drawing their Ruler Armaments at the same time. The two Ruler

Armaments radiated with a dazzling light, and the ripple from the great energy that flowed out from the Ruler Armaments caused the surrounding space to greatly distort. Closely afterwards, the two swung their Ruler Armaments simultaneously, shooting out two great streams of energy to block the incoming golden energy arrow.

“Bang!”

The golden energy arrow and the energy from the two Ruler Armaments clashed mid-air, giving off a great, deafening bang. The aftereffects from gathering the great amounts of energy wreaked havoc everywhere. It were as if a violent gust of wind suddenly began to blow in the air and between the two groups, the space had been shattered, creating a fist-sized black hole. However, it returned to as it was before with the blink of an eye.

With every clashing of the powerful Saint Rulers, it contained the power capable of moving and destroying the earth. Every time they clashed, the powerful ripples created from the great energy would affect the manor below. The ground which the manor stood on immediately began to crack and fissure, with several buildings collapsing one after another. With the blink of an eye, the originally-untouched manor had become a mess.

“Your distinguished self, the great Nubis, their power is around the same, so keep any one of them busy. Brother Jian Chen, we should work together to kill one.” Huang Tianba’s tone seemed to carry some excitement. The thousand-year old enmity that always weighed on the Huang family’s chest was about to be put to an end, so it moved him very much inside.

“Leave that person on the right for me to handle.” Nubis clenched his fist, and in the next moment, there was only a flash of golden light. He disappeared from where he originally was, directly rushing at Jin Feng who wielded a long spear.

“Senior Huang, use the Ruler Armament to keep him busy. I’ll go over and handle him.” Jian Chen said to Huang Tianba, before rushing towards Jin Tian who wielded a sword. Before, when he still had not become a Saint Ruler, he had the ability to match up with a Saint Ruler of the Fourth Heavenly Layer. Now that he had already become a Saint Ruler, Jian Chen urgently wanted to try out his current strength.

“Brother Jian Chen, be careful of the Ruler Armament in his hands. You must not take it head-on.” Huang Tianba was unable to stop him even if he wanted to, so he could only warn him.

The two Saint Rulers of the Hongfu clan became extremely solemn. Glancing at the manor that had already fallen into an utter mess below, the two immediately seem to had a tacit understanding. Turning into a flash, the two of them borrowed the Spatial Force to quickly flee far away.

“Want to run? Not that easy!” Nubis sneered, and followed closely, using Spatial Force to chase Jin Feng.

Jian Chen did not hesitate, and also used Spatial Force to closely chase after Jin Tian. However, Jin Tian had reached a greater level of comprehension, which meant that his level of understanding for

the Spatial Force far exceeded Jian Chen's. As a result, he pulled ahead by several kilometres just in the blink of an eye.

Huang Tianba stood where he was before, slowly drawing the longbow in a calm and composed fashion. He directly shot out an invisible energy arrow. The energy arrow was formed from the World Energy. It was invisible and formless, completely undetectable to the naked eye.

The arrow formed from World Force tightly locked onto Jin Tian's presence. It seemed to even possess the power to teleport through space. It chased after Jin Tian with an even greater speed, immediately traversing several dozen kilometers, arriving behind Jin Tian.

Chapter 687: Punch

Feeling how he was about to be hit by the invisible arrow, Jin Tian did not run any further. He immediately stopped and the Saint Force within him surged violently like a wild river, flowing into his Ruler Armament. It caused the sword-shaped Ruler Armament in his hand to glow with dazzling light, even causing the scorching sun in the sky to seem dim. The great, vast energy caused the world to tremble, and the surrounding space seemed to almost shatter in attempt to contain the powerful energy.

“Ha!” Jin Tian suddenly yelled aloud and the Ruler Armament in his hand turned into a ray of silver light. It flashed like lightning as he swung it, cutting open a three meter long, black crack in the space in front of him.

Bang! The Ruler Armament and the invisible arrow formed from World Force rammed into each other, and a sound greater than before erupted forth. The violent energy ripples flooded the area, causing the space within a radius of several hundred meters to become heavily distorted.

After the strike, Jin Tian’s complexion immediately began to pale somewhat. A quiet, muffled grunt came out through his throat with difficulty as he flew backwards uncontrollably. Jin Tian already received some internal injuries.

Although he and Huang Tianba both had Ruler Armaments, it was not enough to bridge the huge gap between their power. The arrow shot out by Huang Tianba was also created from World Force, a power that could not be compared to Saint Force. As a

result, just from the first time they had clashed, Jin Tian already received a few light injuries.

Jin Tian shot through the sky like a shooting star, flying backwards for a whole several kilometers before slowly stabilizing himself. He looked at Huang Tianba who was currently chasing behind him with an ugly expression. The light in his eyes flickered, and he muttered inwardly, "The two of us definitely are not opponents to Huang Tianba and the other two. If we continue, there is only death. Whatever, there's always hope when there's life. Staying alive is most important. As long as I am still alive, even if the Hongfu Clan falls, I can just rebuild it in the future." Jin Tian already lost all intention to battle and thoughts of retreat bloomed.

However, just when Jin Tian made up his mind to flee with all his strength without any more regardless for other things, the space before him began to fluctuate. He only saw that Jian Chen, who had also used Spatial Force, had already caught up, with a fist directly heading towards his head.

Jian Chen's punch was extremely ordinary. It did not contain the presence of any force, and seemed just like a powerless fist. However, it was exactly such an ordinary-looking punch that had caused Jin Tian to become solemn, unwilling to underestimate it even in the slightest. This was because he could clearly feel that the surrounding space in which Jian Chen's fist had passed through seemed to be squeezed by a great power.

Jin Tian did not dare to be careless. Saint Force coalesced in his hand like a great surging river and he swung it at Jian Chen. He

did not hold back at all with the strike, directly using his full power.

When the punches met each other, a muffled sound erupted, similar to muffled thunder. The violent energy ripple exploded where their fists had met, rushing wildly in all directions. It seemed to even be able to create a gust of violent wind in a land beyond the nine heavens.

Crack! The bones of Jin Tian's entire left arm became fractured, and his arm drooped down powerlessly.

"This... how is this possible? Just what is this force, actually so strong?" Jin Tian stared at Jian Chen out of shock, and his face was engulfed by disbelief. He could clearly feel that in Jian Chen's fist, there was actually an extremely strong and unknown, mysterious power hidden. The power was far stronger than the Saint Force he used. The moment the two came in contact, the Saint Force that covered his entire left arm was scattered by the mysterious but powerful power.

Jian Chen curled the corner of his lips into a cold smile and said, "For someone who is about to die, there is no harm in telling you. At least it can let you die with content. This type of power is called Chaotic Force!"

"Chaotic Force?" Jin Tian mumbled quietly. His face was shrouded with doubt. It was very obvious that he had never heard of Chaotic Force.

However, Jian Chen did not give him any time to react. Chaotic Force surged into every corner of his body, which caused the insane defence of Chaotic Force to be raised to the limit. Afterwards, he swung at Jin Tian again.

Jin Tian returned to his senses very quickly, immediately retreating abruptly. The Ruler Armament in his right hand radiated brightly, becoming similar to the scorching sun radiating its dazzling light into the world. Afterwards, he chopped at Jian Chen's punch like lightning.

Chapter 688: Acquiring The Ruler Armament

“Brother Jian Chen, be careful of the Ruler Armament in his hands. You mustn’t take it head-on.” Huang Tianba’s warning flashed through Jian Chen’s mind. However, facing the Ruler Armament that was currently rushing at him, Jian Chen did not intend to dodge in the slightest. Only a sliver of madness flashed through his eyes while a great amount of Chaotic Force poured out of his chaotic neidan, coalescing in his right fist. He directly swung the fist at the incoming Ruler Armament.

This time, Jian Chen wanted to forcefully fend off the powerful Ruler Armament with his own flesh. This was because he was extremely confident in the defence of his Chaotic Body. Also, even with Jin Tian’s strength in the Third Heavenly Layer paired with the Ruler Armament, it was still around the Fourth Heavenly Layer, similar to the Sect of Dragon and Tiger’s Situ Qing. It was definitely not as strong as the Fifth Heavenly Layer, so even though such an attack could injure Jian Chen, it definitely could not heavily injure him.

“Jian Chen, you’re looking to die yourself!” Seeing how Jian Chen actually wanted to use his body to forcefully blocked the Ruler Armament, Jin Tian’s mouth curled into a sneer. This was because the power of the Ruler Armament was so strong that even someone in the Sixth Heavenly Layer would not dare to receive it head-on, let alone Jian Chen whose strength was far from that.

Bang! Jian Chen’s punch collided firmly with the edge of the Ruler Armament and actually gave off a sound of metal striking

rock. Jian Chen's fist did not even seem like a body part, but some type of extremely tough metal.

The fist and Ruler Armament separated as soon as they collided, actually rebounding from the great energy. As for the two people, they also shot backwards from the strong rebound energy, finally stabilizing themselves after travelling over a hundred meters.

All that could be seen was the a horrifying injury on Jian Chen's right fist. It was bone-deep, and had travelled half way through his fingers. Fresh blood dyed his entire hand red.

Over a hundred meters away, Jin Tian stared at Jian Chen's hand with his eyes full of surprise. He exclaimed in disbelief, "This... how is this possible! What... what... just what is your hand made of?! The body of humans can never be this strong! I had even used a Ruler Armament, and it didn't even chop off your arm! This, this is impossible."

Looking at Jin Tian in shock, Jian Chen could not help my reveal a sneer. He glanced at his bloody hand and with a slight thought, the Chaotic Force spewed out from the chaotic neidan in his dantian. Afterwards, it quickly flowed into his right hand.

At that moment, the destructive Chaotic Force seemed to turn into an extremely regenerative life force, actually healing the injury on Jian Chen's hand with a speed that had even exceeded Radiant Saint Force.

Jian Chen's Chaotic Body possessed very great regeneration

abilities, but after using Chaotic Force for a period of time, Jian Chen had already discovered that it had other, wondrous uses. If Chaotic Force was gathered around an injury, it would make the injury regenerate even faster.

The injury on Jian Chen's right hand actually healed at a visible rate. Whether it was his skin or his finger bones that were almost broken, they all completely healed. The fresh blood on his hand even seemed to come alive, slowly withdrawing itself into the wound on the hand.

Jin Tian's eyes had already become the size of bells, staring directly at Jian Chen's palm. He had lived so long, yet this was the first time he had ever seen such an unimaginable sight.

After a few breaths, Jian Chen's right hand completely recovered and seemed no different from usual. There were not even any marks left by the blood.

"This... this... this is impossible... this is impossible, this is definitely impossible." Shock erupted in Jin Tian's heart as he mumbled at a loss. Even though he was a Saint Ruler, he was still deeply astonished by the extremely weird sight he had just seen.

Just when Jin Tian was at a loss, a small ripple in space suddenly appeared in front of him. An arrow completely composed of the energy of the world had already arrived before him without any sign, directly piercing through Jin Tian's chest.

Tzk! A finger sized hole appeared on Jin Tian's chest and quickly

expanded. In the blink of an eye, it had expanded to the size of a fist, passing through his chest. Bright red blood immediately spurted out of Jin Tian's body like a geyser, quickly dyeing his clothes red.

A grunt of pain echoed from Jin Tian's mouth and his complexion immediately began to pale. He also swayed mid-air, almost falling out of the sky. Being hit by an arrow completely formed from World Force definitely was not good. Just a single arrow actually caused a proper Saint Ruler to be heavily injured.

A light of interest flashed across Jian Chen's eyes. He knew that this was a good chance to kill Jin Tian. With a flash, he utilised Spatial Force to traverse the hundred metres to arrive in front of Jin Tian. Using his just-recovered right hand, he filled it with a tremendous surge of Chaotic Force and swung it at Jin Tian's head.

Jin Tian was heavily injured, so all his powers had been greatly decreased. Jian Chen's fist seemed to fuse with the space, firmly landing it on Jin Tian's head like a lightning bolt.

Bang! With a muffled sound, Jin Tian's head had been struck, which caused his entire body to fly backwards faraway. His skull was broken, and blood sprayed into the air like a lovely flower blooming mid-air.

Jian Chen knew that without wiping out the soul of a powerful Saint Ruler, it was impossible to kill one, even if their heads had caved in. He did not hesitate in the slightest, and with a flash, he chased Jin Tian who was knocked flying like a lightning bolt through the use of Spatial Force. He threw another violent punch

towards Jin Tian's head.

Smack! This time, Jin Tian's entire head fell apart from Jian Chen's punch, with white brains mixed with blood flying in all directions. With that, Jin Tian had lost his ability to fly, falling out of the sky.

Seeing how Jin Tin's head fall apart, Jian Chen finally let out a breath. It really was not simple to kill a Saint Ruler. If Jin Tian had not been heavily injured by the arrow from Huang Tianba, Jian Chen would not have been able to kill a powerful Saint Ruler so easily.

Jian Chen's gaze landed on the Ruler Armament that was still tightly grasped by Jin Tian's corpse. He grabbed at it, and the sword-shaped Ruler Armament immediately left Jin Tian's hand, flying to him.

Grasping the thin sword that was around the same size as the Light Wind Sword, Jian Chen immediately felt like he had returned to the days of travelling only with a sword. With a sword in hand, there is only me.

Jian Chen could not help but reveal a happy smile. He had finally found a suitable weapon, which had made him unable to suppress his excitement.

Just at this moment, Jian Chen was slightly startled. He looked away from the Ruler Armament he had just obtained and stared downwards with interest. He only saw that from the broken skull,

a white ball of feeble light suddenly drifted out. As soon as the ball of light had appeared, it began to flee into the distance like a bolt of lightning.

Swish!

Just when the ball of light had travelled several hundred meters, a silver arrow chased up to it from behind, directly piercing through it.

“Ah!” A desolate cry resounded from the ball of light and the light began to disperse shortly afterwards. After a while, it had completely disappeared.

“Brother Jian Chen, Saint Rulers have already refined their origin soul. Only by wiping out the origin soul can you truly kill a powerful Saint Ruler. That ball of light earlier was Jin Tian’s origin soul.” Huang Tianba said to Jian Chen with a smile as he hurried over from behind at his own pace.

Chapter 689: The Dragon Slaying Sword

“Is that so? I thought Saint Rulers were the same as Heaven Saint Masters; as long as their heads were smashed, their soul would also be extinguished.” Jian Chen spoke with surprise. However, he also felt some doubt. Why did he not feel the origin soul Huang Tianba was talking about inside him?

“Perhaps it’s because the sword spirits have combined with my presence, causing my soul to mutate, which is why I haven’t refined an origin soul?” Jian Chen questioned himself secretly.

Huang Tianba chuckled, “The origin souls of Saint Rulers are extremely hard to deal with. They’re not as weak as Heaven Saint Masters. If only the head is destroyed, it’s not enough to wipe out the origin soul and would require additional work. This time if we let Jin Tian’s origin soul escape, he would return to how he was before without much time.”

Hearing that, a sliver of surprise flashed across Jian Chen’s eyes, “Are Saint Rulers able to rebuild their bodies with just the origin soul?”

“That’s not necessarily true. Although Saint Rulers are powerful, they don’t have such a terrifying power.” Huang Tianba shook his head and explained, “It’s because the origin souls of Saint Rulers have the ability to possess, to forcefully take over other people’s bodies and survive in another form.”

“Possess? I never thought that Saint Rulers would actually have

such an ability.” Hearing what Huang Tianba had said, Jian Chen gained a better understanding of the powers of Saint Rulers.

Huang Tianba looked at the Ruler Armament in Jian Chen’s hands, “This is one of the two Ruler Armaments of the Hongfu Clan, the Dragon Slaying Sword. The legends say that the original owner of the Saint Weapon had killed a peak Class 7 Black Dragon, dyeing it with the blood of the Black Dragon. As a result, the sword was called the Dragon Slaying Sword by the first owner. Brother Jian Chen, do you feel that the sword is suitable?”

Jian Chen’s gaze immediately landed on the Ruler Armament he had just obtained. Perhaps it was because of the loss of Saint Force, the light given off by the Dragon Slaying Sword was not as blinding as before. It was just that the sword was covered by a hazy layer of glittering light, so it seemed very out of the ordinary.

Looking through the hazy layer, Jian Chen could vaguely see that the Dragon Slaying Sword was two fingers wide and there was an image of a seemingly-living dragon on it. He did not know how it appeared on it.

Grasping the Dragon Slaying Sword, Jian Chen could not help but reveal a deep sense of happiness. It immediately caused his bearing to change, from that of an ordinary-looking person to something similar to a drawn, treasured sword, showing off its abilities.

In that moment, Jian Chen completely changed. It was as if he had turned into a divine sword, a peerless Deity Sword planted between the heavens and the earth.

Huang Tianba's gaze turned solemn. He could feel the soaring Sword Qi from Jian Chen's aura. The Sword Qi was so abrupt that it had even caused him to feel fearful.

Hum! Suddenly, Jian Chen's arm shook. The Dragon Slaying Sword in his hand immediately gave off a low resonance, sounding just like a Black Dragon roaring in anguish and lament. Afterwards, Jian Chen swung his hand at great speed, striking out at an unbelievable speed. The Dragon Slaying Sword turned into several afterimages, enveloping all the space in front of him. The afterimages were so clustered that it was hard to tell what was real or fake.

“What a fast strike. I've never seen such an exquisite swordplay. Brother Jian Chen really does hide his abilities. Who would've thought his swordplay is actually so great.” Huang Tianba could not help but sigh.

Only after using it to his heart's content did Jian Chen slowly stop. He looked at the sword with joy. At that moment, the excitement inside him had already reached the maximum. Not only did the Ruler Armament make up for his awkwardness of being unarmed, it actually could also withstand Chaotic Force. This finally allowed him to be able to use his excelling areas in an exceptional way.

Although Chaotic Force, together with the Chaotic Body, gave him great fighting strength, he was still a swordsman, a powerful sword-user. Only with a sword could he feel at ease.

Just at this moment, a series of loud sounds echoed from over five kilometers away. They only saw that in the distance, several mountain peaks had collapsed simultaneously and a large amount of loose rock shot into the sky. Also, a powerful energy rippled turned into a violent whirlwind, which wreaked havoc everywhere it travelled. It had even caused Jian Chen and Huang Tianba's clothes to flutter about wildly, even though it originated from five kilometers away.

“Brother Jian Chen, you rest for a while. I'll go help Nubis to kill Jin Feng.” Huang Tianba called out to Jian Chen and then flew over with his longbow.

In the distance, Nubis and Jin Feng were still stuck in an intense battle. Although they were at a similar level in cultivation, Nubis was an ancient magical beast. His battle ability could be compared to a powerful Saint Ruler of the Sixth Heavenly Layer. Even with a Ruler Armament, Jin Feng definitely was not Nubis's opponent, so it was an uphill battle for him. Also, he had already been poisoned by the venom of the Silver Striped Golden Snake. It was currently spreading in his body, so at this very moment, Jin Feng's complexion had already turned to a bluish-black.

“Old man, even if you have a Ruler Armament, in front of me, the great Nubis, it's useless. Prepare to die.” Nubis laughed aloud. He completely looked down on Jin Feng.

“The great Nubis, I, Huang Tianba, have come to help you.” Huang Tianba hurried to him from behind.

Chapter 690: King Of The Sword

Seeing Huang Tianba flying over quickly from the distance, Nubis laughed aloud, “I don’t need your help. I can finish him off myself.” Nubis suddenly radiated with a dazzling golden light. Countless strands of golden threads shot out from his body, flying towards Jin Tian abruptly. A portion of the golden threads tightly wounded around Jin Feng’s Ruler Armament, while the other portion wrapped around Jin Feng. It enveloped his body like a cocoon, completely immobilising him.

“Argh!” Jin Feng yelled angrily upwards. The Saint Force within him surged out like water from a broken dam, attempting to forcefully break the golden threads.

However, the golden threads were not everyday objects. Not only were they abnormally tough, they were extremely pliable. No matter how hard Jin Feng tried, he was unable to break through the binding.

“Old man, unless you have the power of the Fourth Heavenly Layer, don’t even think of escaping from the binding of my golden threads I have created. In front of me, the great Nubis, you won’t even have the ability to run away.” Looking at Jin Feng who was currently trying to break out with all of his might, Nubis could not help but sneer at him. Afterwards, he used Spatial Force to arrive in front of Jin Feng in a flash. He used his right hand as a claw, directly passing through the golden threads and stabbing Jin Feng in the chest. He dug out the bloody heart from Jin Feng’s body.

Sniffing the heavy, bloody smell that permeated into the air, his

eyes became vaguely bloodshot. The sharp smell of blood had already began to slowly excite the bloodthirsty nature of his bloodline.

Nubis stared ruthlessly at Jin Feng who was currently wrapped in golden thread and in great pain. Tightening his grip, he immediately crushed the heart in his hand. He smiled coldly, “Isn’t it very painful? I’ve already forgotten how many people I, the great Nubis, have killed. As the first human Saint Ruler to die by my hands in the past few years, you should feel very honored. Now, allow me to end your life.” A golden ball of light suddenly appeared out of Nubis’s right hand. Most of the power from the golden thread had already gathered around his hand, but just when he wanted to crush Jin Feng’s head and wipe out the origin soul, a soaring Sword Qi suddenly rush over from far away. The swiftness and ferocity of the Sword Qi was rarely seen in the world. It was like a terrifying gas that filled the surrounding space with great killing intent.

In the next moment, a loud and clear voice accompanied the soaring Sword Qi from the distance, “Nubis, let me finish him off.”

The bloodshot redness in Nubis’s eyes slowly receded. Along with it, the bloodthirsty nature that had just been excited also slowly receded. As a Class 7 magical beast, although Nubis was unable to change the innate nature of magical beasts, he was still able to control his emotions at will.

Nubis returned to normal very quickly. He turned around and looked at Jian Chen who was currently approaching him. He could not help but feel shocked and mumbled, “Isn’t it just a Ruler

Armament? Why do I feel that Jian Chen has completely changed? That bearing actually even made me feel fearful. Since you want to finish off that old man, I, the great Nubis, will let you do it. I'll also get to see how powerful you are with the presence you are giving off."

The golden threads binding Jin Feng returned to Nubis and Jin Feng also regained his mobility. Afterwards, he did not hesitate in the slightest, immediately giving it his all to flee for his life.

A sneer appeared on Huang Tianba's face, "In front of my Solunar Bow, there has not been a Saint Ruler that has successfully escaped." Huang Tianba grabbed the bow on his back, and a golden energy arrow formed from Saint Force quickly appeared.

However, just when Huang Tianba was about to shoot the arrow, a Sword Qi rushed over from the distance. He only saw that several kilometers away, Jian Chen had swung his sword and a powerful, meter-long Sword Qi radiating with a dark, beautiful glow approached Jin Feng with an unbelievable speed. The Sword Qi was made entirely of Chaotic Force and contained extremely terrifying power. Wherever the Sword Qi had passed over, it would cause the space to crack.

The Sword Qi was so quick that it seemed to be able to teleport, completely exceeding Jin Feng's escape speed. Just after fleeing for a few kilometres, Jin Feng was caught up by the Sword Qi. Afterwards, it passed through him like a hot knife through butter.

"Argh!" Jin Feng immediately gave off a shrill cry. Chaotic Force was extremely powerful. When the Sword Qi formed from Chaotic

Force had passed through his body, a small amount of the force was deposited into his body. At this moment, the tiny amount of Chaotic Force was wreaking violent havoc in his body, quickly obliterating his inner organs. His powerful Saint Force was actually unable to do anything about the tiny amount of Chaotic Force. No matter how he tried, he was unable to extinguish the Chaotic Force.

“Just... just what is this power?!” Jin Tian’s heart was filled with dread. The residue power in his body was the first time he had ever seen such a powerful energy. Before, he had not ever seen or heard such a power, because the strength of it had exceeded his understanding to the various forces of Tian Yuan Continent.

“What a great energy! That strike actually is completely equal to one from a Fifth Heavenly Layer Saint Ruler. Brother Jian Chen, just... just... just how did he become so strong? Even if he had obtained a Ruler Armament, his strength definitely could not have increased so greatly.” Huang Tianba sighed in surprise secretly. The power of Jian Chen’s strike had shocked him, because he knew very well that Jian Chen had just become a Saint Ruler.

However, when Huang Tianba thought about it again, he remembered how Jian Chen was outstanding in every aspect and could not be judged on a normal standard. As a result, he was relieved of the previous thought. He only stared at Jian Chen with a complicated expression, and used a voice only he could hear to mumble, “Looks like the publicly recognized number one expert of Tian Yun Continent will appear again soon. Brother Jian Chen has such unbelievable accomplishments even though he is still in his twenties. Other than the city lord of Mercenary City, Mo Tianyun, perhaps there is no one else in the Tian Yun Continent that can be

compared to him.

Nubis was also completely stounded. He stared at Jian Chen flabbergasted and was extremely uncalm in his heart. He had naturally felt the strike Jian Chen had struck out. Even though he possessed the body of an ancient beast, he definitely could not withstand the blow.

As a magical beast, he possessed a heaven-sent advantage and was stronger than humans in various aspects. However, Nubis could clearly feel that the Sword Qi struck out by Jian Chen actually possessed an extremely terrifying power. Not only was the power extremely overbearing, it was filled with destruction. With his innate and terrifying instincts as a magical beast, Nubis had even felt that there was nothing in the world that could stop the destruction of the terrifying power.

“That terrifying power isn’t recorded in my inherited memories. Does this mean that it’s never appeared on the Tian Yun Continent before? Perhaps it’s just because no Silver Striped Golden Snake has come across it before.”

“I really wonder whether Jian Chen is a reincarnation of Mo Tianyun now. Other than Mo Tian Yun, who else on the Tian Yun Continent has such terrifying talent and battle capability? Also, the force used by Mo Tianyun was just as terrifying.” Nubis glanced at Jian Chen with an extremely complicated expression. At this moment, Jian Chen’s status in his heart had already undergone some minor changes.

With the fusion of man with sword, Jian Chen had become a

sword. His entire body had suddenly turned into something similar to a sharp sword and charged at Jin Feng. Although his speed was not as fast as travelling with the use of Spatial Force, it was not much slower.

In the blink of an eye, Jian Chen had arrived in front of Jin Feng. He poured the Chaotic Force from his body into the Ruler Armament and the glittering glow of the Ruler Armament was immediately suppressed, giving off a dark, beautiful glow.

Jian Chen quickly swung his hand. The Dragon Slaying Sword immediately turned into densely-packed sword which enveloped Jin Feng. With every blow Jian Chen struck out, there were profound principles behind them. The swordplay was extremely exquisite, as if it was heaven-made. It was so perfect and so flawless.

“Argh!” Being enveloped by the swords, Jin Feng gave out a shrill cry. Fresh blood constantly splashed everywhere and in a short two breaths, Jin Feng had already turned into a blood-washed man. Horrifying wounds covered on his body and he had no inch untouched.

In such a short moment, Jian Chen had caused over a thousand wounds on Jin Feng’s body.

Nubis and Huang Tianba who were spectating from afar gasped together. They looked at Jian Chen in astonishment. At this very moment, a thought appeared in their heads simultaneously: What a fast sword!

“Who would have thought brother Jian Chen is actually so terrifying with a sword. Before, I definitely underestimated him. Perhaps this is brother Jian Chen’s true strength. Such a fast speed in striking is just too scary. If it’s speed, who can be his opponent?” Huang Tianba said in his heart.

Whoosh! At this moment, the Dragon Slaying Sword flashed, turning into a blur which slid across Jin Feng’s throat. Jin Feng’s head and body immediately separated, with his head thrown high up into the air.

Jian Chen’s expression was cold and shot a swift but forceful glance at Jin Feng’s head. Afterwards, he immediately chased after it. The Dragon Slaying Sword in his hands gave out a deep hum. It was the sound created from the great drag between the high-speed sword and the air. Afterwards, he directly thrust out in the simple fashion, piercing Jin Feng’s head in between the brows and travelling to the other side of the skull. Jian Chen did not wait for Jin Feng’s origin soul to escape and the Chaotic Force contained within the Dragon Slaying Sword immediately erupted, blowing up Jin Feng’s head and directly wiping out the origin soul hidden inside altogether.

Chapter 691: Arrival Of A Gilligan Clan King

Jin Feng's body fell out of the air powerlessly, landing firmly on a mountain peak below. A Saint Ruler had just fallen like that.

Jian Chen put his sword away and remained where he was. The shocking aura of his slowly receded and in the blink of an eye, he went from a divine sword showing off its abilities to as ordinary as he was before. The special traits of Saint Rulers appeared on him again. Although he just seemed to stand there casually, his body actually seemed to completely merge with the space around him, as if he was one with the world.

The Chaotic Force injected in the Dragon Slaying Sword was completely withdrawn by Jian Chen, so the dark, beautiful glow on the sword had already disappeared. Now, the hazy, glittering light originally suppressed by the Chaotic Force reappeared, covering up the Dragon Slaying Sword's appearance.

Jian Chen floated in the sky, looking at Jin Feng's corpse with a complicated expression. Today, the two Saint Rulers of the Hongfu Clan had died, but only Jin Feng could really be considered as being killed Jian Chen's hands. This was because Jin Feng's origin soul was wiped out by he himself, unlike how Jin Tian's origin soul was wiped out by Huang Tianba.

After personally killing a Saint Ruler, Jian Chen was also slightly moved. This was because powerful people like this were not common on the Tian Yun Continent. Not only were they small in numbers, every one of them held a great position, an existence that truly stood on the apex of the Tian Yun Continent.

“Brother Jian Chen’s performance really has broadened my horizons. Who would have thought brother Jian Chen’s attainments in the sword are actually so great, actually so terrifying when using the sword. That speed in striking is probably unparalleled on the Tian Yun Continent.” Huang Tianba appeared in front of Jian Chen at a certain time and praised with a face full of shock. What he had said completely originated from his heart, not honeyed, made-up words to curry favor from Jian Chen.

Nubis also flew over from afar. He gazed at Jian Chen with an extremely complicated gaze, “Before, that sword you struck out was not any weaker than a Saint Ruler of the Fifth Heavenly Layer. Who would have thought that after becoming a Saint Ruler, your strength would have such a great change from just a Ruler Armament.”

Hearing the two of them talk, Jian Chen was not physically moved at all and remained calm. He gazed at the Dragon Slaying Sword in front of him in a trance, “All of this comes from the sword. If I did not have this sword, I definitely would not be able to kill a Saint Ruler so easily, even if he or she was already heavily injured. As long as the sword in my hands, I can perform better than normal.”

“Looks like this Ruler Armament just happens to be suitable with brother Jian Chen. Only when such a valuable Ruler Armament is a great swordsman's hands, like brother Jian Chen, will not be insulting to it. Before, when this Ruler Armament was in Jin Feng’s hands, the radiance it deserved was completely covered up.” Huang Tianba could not help but praise some more. Afterwards, he looked down and with a casual flick of his hand, a three-meter long

long spear flew up from below. It had a thickness of a wrist, and gave off a hazy glow.

Huang Tianba examined the long spear for a while before passing it to Jian Chen. He smiled, “Brother Jian Chen, this Ruler Armament’s original name is the All-Devastating Divine Spear. It’s a very bold name. It’s one of the treasures of the Hongfu Clan along with the Dragon Slaying Sword. They’re passed down with each generation. Now that Jin Feng and Jin Tian, this All-Devastating Spear belongs to brother Jian Chen.

Jian Chen tore his eyes from the Dragon Slaying Sword to observe the All-Devastating Divine Spear. The name of it was very bold, but there was nothing special about the appearance of the spear. It was no different from an ordinary spear, except for the fact that it had the additional presence of a Ruler Armament.

“Senior Huang, this sword is enough for me. You should keep the Ruler Armament. With two Ruler Armaments, the strength of your Huang Family should increase quite a lot.” Jian Chen declined.

Huang Tianba chuckled, “My Huang Family is not an ancient clan, unable to possess multiple Ruler Armaments. The more Ruler Armaments there are, the worse it is for our Huang Family. They’re like hot potatoes, as with every one of them, more power is needed to protect them. Although my Huang Family is now without any grievances, just one Ruler Armament is enough. Also, there’s no one in my Huang Family who uses the spear, so even if I take it, the All-Devastating Divine Spear is useless to my Huang Family. It’s better if brother Jian Chen keeps it.”

Jian Chen hesitated for a while, but still extended his hand to take the All-Devastating Divine Spear in the end. He said, “Since it’s like that, I’ll temporarily hold onto the spear.”

“Hahaha, brother Jian Chen does not need to be polite. Without your help, I definitely would not have been able to kill Jin Feng and Jin Tian so easily. This is something brother Jian Chen deserves.” Huang Tianba paused and clasped his hands at Jian Chen, “Brother Jian Chen, the two Saint Rulers of the Hongfu Clan are dead, but there are still remaining forces deeply hidden. I must hurry back to Huang Family to make arrangements, to properly uproot them to prevent future problems. I’ll be leaving first.”

After bidding farewell to Jian Chen, Huang Tianba immediately hurried towards the Huang Family. It left Jian Chen and Nubis floating lonesomely mid-air.

Jian Chen glanced at the spear in his hand and then passed it to Nubis. He smiled, “Nubis, your performance today is good. I have no use for this spear, so you should just take it.”

Seeing Jian Chen actually give a Ruler Armament which was treasured by Saint Rulers in such a magnanimous fashion, Nubis was deeply moved. He smiled, “I’m not used to using this thing. Also, I am a Silver Striped Golden Snake, a beast of antiquity. My strength in battle itself is already extremely powerful, so I don’t need to use anything else. You should keep that thing. Don’t forget that there’s a huge group of people under you. When the time is right, giving it to them is pretty good too. It’ll strengthen your Flame Mercenaries.”

“Looks like I can’t even give this Ruler Armament away.” Jian Chen took back the All-Devastating Divine Spear with a bitter smile and then threw it into his Space Ring.

“Nubis, let’s go back.”

“It’s the great Nubis!”

Jian Chen collected Jin Feng and Jin Tian’s Space Rings before leaving, returning to where the Flame Mercenaries were.

In that period of time, the Flame Mercenaries became more and more well-known. They had three powerful Saint Rulers, which made them a peak level force without a doubt. They became the strongest known existence in a radius of one hundred thousand kilometers, with only the hermit clans and families hidden in the wilderness able to resist against them.

However, within the hermit clans and families, the captain of the Flame Mercenaries, Jian Chen, had also become a well-known figure. Last time, when several hermit clans and two ancient clans fought over the tungsten alloy mine, Jian Chen had invited the grand elder of Mercenary City. The news of the grand elder heavily injuring a Saint King of the Aoyun Clan with just a glance had already spread. It caused a hubbub in the hermit forces, which made the hermit clans and schools unwilling to provoke the Flame Mercenaries.

As a result, it was extremely peaceful for the Flame Mercenaries in that period of time. Also, the mining of the tungsten alloy began

on a large-scale without concealing anything. Not only did they pay a high price for a large amount of locals to come and mine, they had even recruited people from the surrounding kingdoms on a large scale, allowing the Flame Mercenaries to mine a large amount of tungsten alloy everyday.

Two days later, in the conference hall of the Flame Mercenaries, the higher-ranking members and a few important people gathered together. As for Jian Chen, he currently sat at the end with a small, white tiger sleeping comfortably in his hands. He carried the bearing of a leader.

“Brother, this is a draft drawn up by the higher-ranking members, sister You Yue and me. Right now, we have an inexhaustible supply of tungsten alloy, so we plan to use the allow to build a city wall, a city wall completely composed of tungsten alloy. I wonder if brother has any other ideas.”

“Brother, your sister’s idea is good. Using tungsten alloy to build a city wall is something that has never happened on the Tian Yun Continent. If we really succeed in building this city wall, I swear that it’ll definitely be the sturdiest, strongest and most expensive city wall on the Tian Yun Continent. Even the seven capitals will pale in comparison to it.” Ming Dong said excitedly.

Jian Chen glanced over the images drawn on the paper and nodded with a smile, “Lian’er, Yue’er, let’s do it like you planned. You think through things very thoroughly and do things in a way that doesn’t cause me worry. If it’s possible, let’s just go with your idea, using tungsten alloy to build the sturdiest city on Tian Yun Continent.”

“Yes brother!” Bi Lian was excited. It was her who had thought of this idea, so as soon as she thought about the fact that the sturdiest city on Tian Yun Continent would be designed by her, she was filled with a great amount of pride.

Bang!

Suddenly, there was a loud sound. The closely-shut doors of the conference hall were kicked open forcefully by someone. The sturdy doors made from ironwood directly transformed into flying pieces of wood, surprising everyone who was currently in the hall.

Sitting in the hall, Jian Chen, Nubis and Jiede Tai immediately became serious. They stared outside the hall out of surprise, because with their strength, they did not feel who was responsible for what had happened at all. This cause the three of them to be shrouded in disbelief.

Under the gaze of the three, a large, middle-aged man in simple clothing walked in from outside. The man was over two meters and a half in height with a tough and stocky body. He seemed to be tall and sturdy, with a fierce and tough-looking face.

Chapter 692: Calamity

Everyone in the conference hall was surprised by the sudden scene. They all stared at the middle-aged man, completely at a loss. After all, this was the centre of the Flame Mercenaries. The security was so strict that there was basically three layers of guards both inside and outside. Even a fly would not have been able to fly in. As for just how the man got in and smashed the door of the conference hall, it completely mystified everyone.

After all, with the Flame Mercenary's current name and strength, no one in a radius of several hundred kilometers dared to come provoke them!

Jian Chen, Nubis and Jiede Tai's gazes all gathered on the man who had suddenly broke in. However, when Nubis saw the appearance of the man properly, his expression changed greatly. His face was filled with disbelief and could not help but call out, "It's actually you, wh-... wh-... why... why have you... come."

Jian Chen glanced at Nubis who was beside him and also felt a wave of doubt. Nubis's behaviour clearly indicated he knew who this man was. Jian Chen just did not understand what had made Nubis lose his composure so much.

The man stared at Jian Chen with his forceful gaze and sneered, "Who would have thought you little snake would choose to serve a human, willing to become a lackey of a human. That's really surprising. Doesn't an ancient Silver Striped Gold Snake view its dignity with more importance than its life? You little snake really are some exception."

Hearing the man's challenging words and tone, Nubis immediately became unhappy. Silver Striped Golden Snakes indeed would put their dignity above everything else and what the man said had already crossed Nubis's bottom line. Without even considering what status the man held, he sneered, "What I, the great Nubis, does is none of your concern. Not just you, even the great king has no right to it."

The man continued to sneer, "You only dare to say that in front of me. If the great king was here, would you really dare to say it?"

Nubis was overcome by mixed emotions. He grinded his teeth as he stared at the man, but he did not say anything more, because the man was right. Even though Nubis was so prideful, in front of the great king, he could only hold back his proud nature.

The man did not continue to bicker with Nubis. His gaze landed on the small white tiger that was sleeping in Jian Chen's hands, displaying complicated and happy emotions.

"You must be Jian Chen. Relax, I won't be troubling you. Just hand the small tiger to me and nothing will happen." The man said with an extremely cold tone as he stared at Jian Chen expressionlessly.

Hearing that the man actually wanted the small white tiger in his hands, Jian Chen's heart immediately froze. He stared at the man with a gaze of shock and doubt and asked with a soft voice, "Who are you?"

The man smiled coldly. He glanced at the gold-clothed Nubis, “He knows who I am.”

Jian Chen immediately looked at Nubis. Actually, he already vaguely knew the identity of the man. He just needed verification.

“Jian Chen, he’s one of the two great kings of the Gilligan clan, the tiger king Anderken.” With an ugly expression, Nubis replied in a low voice.

“What, he’s a king from the Gilligan clan? Is it that Gilligan clan from the depths of the Cross Mountains?” Jiede Tai could not help but exclaim from surprise. As a peak-level expert who had become a Saint Ruler many years ago, he was familiar with the Gilligan clan. It was an extremely powerful clan. Not only were the two kings powerful Saint Kings, they had a total of a dozen or so Saint Rulers of various species. Even the ancient clans did not dare to provoke the Gilligan clan. Also, the depths of the Cross Mountains was a forbidden regions to all humans, so even human Saint Rulers did not dare to intrude the region.

Jian Chen’s expression immediately became extremely ugly. Although he already knew that a king from the Gilligan clan would come looking him sooner or later, he did not think it would actually be so soon. After all, it was only so long since he had met the little white tiger and the Tian Yun Continent was so big. To be able to find him in the sea of people was as hard as fishing a needle from an ocean.

Noticing Jian Chen's change in expressions, the man smiled coldly, "Jian Chen, you don't need to be scared. As long as you give me that cub, I'll leave immediately. I won't cause you any trouble."

Jian Chen stared at the man and said softly, "You've actually left the depths of the Cross Mountains and entered the world of us humans. Have you forgotten the agreement set by our human experts and your Cross Mountains before? The consequences to breaking the agreement are not light."

This time, it was the man's turn to experience a change in expression. He stared at Jian Chen coldly, "Now that I'm here, I only need the twitch of a finger to kill you all. Jian Chen, you're a smart person. You should make the correct decision. I believe you won't do something stupid. Now obediently the tiger to me. Don't make me do it."

"Tiger king, you've already stepped onto the Tian Yun Continent. If you dare to start a massacre on the Tian Yun Continent, the human experts definitely will not let you go. Even if you return to the Gilligan clan, you won't be able to escape from the human experts." Nubis said softly, "Also, something I forgot to tell you, the grand elder of Mercenary City is supporting Jian Chen from behind."

"What, he knows the grand elder of Mercenary City?" The man was immediately surprised. There was restraining fear in the depths of his eyes.

"The grand elder of Mercenary City is my uncle. Sir, I don't care who you are, if you dare to harm my brother, I'll immediately

invite my uncle. My uncle may be still in Mercenary City, but if he wants to come over, he only needs the blink of an eye.” Ming Dong opened his mouth. Although he was still extremely unsure about the entire situation, he already knew from Nubis’s introduction that the man in front of him was a king from a powerful clan capable of terrifying Nubis and Jiede Tai.

The man stood there with mixed emotions. Afterwards, all the worry in his gaze was replaced by mockery. Staring them, he smiled coldly, “You should save it. You really think I’m as easy to trick as a three year old kid? Jian Chen, I’ll say it one last time. Immediately give me the tiger, otherwise, don’t blame me for being impolite.”

“I don’t care who you are, but if you want me to give you the Winged Tiger God, it won’t happen.” Jian Chen replied without any additional thought. Afterwards, he sandwiched the Winged Tiger God in his left armpit and drew the Dragon Slaying Sword from his Space Ring with his right hand.

With the sword in hand, Jian Chen’s entire presence underwent a complete change. He immediately became a treasured sword displaying its abilities. The aura from his body seemed to directly rush into the heavens, and similar to a divine sword, he gave off an overwhelming presence.

“Looks like I have to do it.” The man revealed a cruel smile and advanced with each step.

Swish! Suddenly, Jian Chen left the ground, directly punching a hole in the roof of the conference hall. Only when he was outside

could he use his full strength without any worry, such as injuring other people from the ripples of battle.

“Jian Chen, hurry up and call for the grand elder of Mercenary City. Only he can deal with this.” Just when Jian Chen rushed through the roof, he heard Nubis’s voice.

Hearing that, Jian Chen felt pained. In the fight last time over the tungsten alloy mine when Tian Jian suddenly appeared, it was because he had once given a piece of jade to Huang Tianba to contact him. However, the jade had been shattered and there was not another one. Even if he wanted to get Tian Jian to help him, he did not have the ability.

“Hmph, you actually dare to fight against me. What arrogance and conceitedness. Perhaps you actually think that your puny strength is enough to fight against me?” The king from the Gilligan clan sneered as he watched Jian Chen soar into the sky. Afterwards, he followed him without hurrying. With his strength, he was not worried about Jian Chen running away at all.

In the blink of an eye, Jian Chen and the king from the Gilligan clan disappeared from the conference hall, leaving behind a group of people wide-eyed and lost as to what they should do.

“Oh my god, two seniors, what are you staring there for? Hurry up and go help my brother. Fight him together.” When Bi Lian Finally returned to her senses, she immediately looked at Nubis and Jiede Tai with a pleading gaze. Currently in the hall, they were the two who possessed the strongest strength.

“Alas!” Jiede Tai gave a long sigh. He was overwhelmed with helplessness.

Nubis shrugged and said innocently, “Little sister, it’s not that we’re not helping Jian Chen, it’s that this matter is already beyond our capabilities. You probably don’t know the strength of the king from the Gilligan clan. It’s not something we can deal with at all. Even if we go, we’ll just be looking to die.”

“What, just what is going on?” An old voice originated from afar. As soon as the voice disappeared, an elderly man in long, blue robes had already appeared in the conference hall. He was the patriarch of the Bi clan, Bi Hai, who had been alerted by Jian Chen’s change in presence.

Seeing the patriarch, Bi Lian immediately grabbed the patriarch's hand like grabbing a life-saving branch. She said hurriedly, “Fantastic, fantastic, grandfather you’ve finally come. Brother is fighting a powerful opponent. Grandpa you need to quickly go help him.”

Hearing that, Bi Hai became serious. He immediately turned to Nubis and Jiede Tai, “Just what is going on.”

Nubis sighed lightly, “The person is a king from the Gilligan clan. He’s a tiger that’s already reached Class 8. Even if we work together, we are not his opponent, so if we go, we’re going for nothing. We can only call for the grand elder of Mercenary City.”

“What?! That person’s a magical beast that has already reached the strength of a Saint King. Oh no, it’ll be troublesome now. All the items uncle Tian has left behind to contact him have been used up. I can’t contact uncle Tian.” Ming Dong’s expression changed greatly. He was extremely worried.

Chapter 693: The Juncture Of Danger

“What, you can’t contact the grand elder?” Hearing what Ming Dong had said, Nubis’s expression changed greatly.

Ming Dong was very anxious, “The reason why uncle Tian could arrive on time last time was because he gave a piece of jade that could contact him to Huang Tianba. Now that the jade has been used up, the objects uncle Tian originally left for me to contact him have also been used up so I can’t contact him anymore. It’ll be troublesome this time. The opponent is a powerful Saint King, so how can Jian Chen be his opponent?”

Bi Hai inferred some of the details from the conversation between the two and also became extremely anxious. He said, “Just how did my great-grandson provoke an expert like that? And he’s even a king from the Gilligan clan! No, he is the only hope for my Bi clan. I definitely can’t let him die so young like this. No matter how strong the enemy is, I must save him even if I lose my old life.” Saying that, Bi Hai was prepared to fly out through the hole in the roof created by Jian Chen. However, just when he was about to move, he was stopped by Nubis.

“You old senile fool, you don’t even know how strong a Saint King is. With your strength as a Saint Ruler of the Fifth Heavenly Layer, you can’t even change anything. If a Saint King wants to kill you, it’s only a matter of the twitch of a finger. Even if you go, you’ll just die for nothing.” Nubis scolded.

“I don’t know if my grandfather can save Jian Chen, but I’ll immediately call for grandfather.” Little Fatty understood that

Jian Chen was in danger. After mentioning this, he immediately bit a finger on his left hand, dripping the blood onto the Space Ring on his right hand.

Nubis became rather agitated. Hearing what Little Fatty had said, he immediately began snapped, “Who do you think your grandfather is? Even if he comes, he’s useless. He’s gotta be the grand elder of Mercenary City or some peerless expert from some ancient clan. The opponent’s a king from the Gilligan clan, okay? A bloody Class 8 tiger. There’s so few people that can fight against him, it’s countable.”

“You’re not allowed to speak ill of my grandfather. My grandfather’s really powerful.” Seeing how Nubis belittled his grandfather, it made Little Fatty extremely unhappy. He yelled at Nubis angrily.

“You little kiddo, I, the great Nubis, am not bored enough to bicker with you. Right now, everyone should just quickly think of ideas, best to contact the grand elder. Otherwise, if Jian Chen doesn’t hand over the Winged Tiger God, perhaps he really will be in danger.”

...

Jian Chen sandwiched the cub tightly in his armpit. He wielded the Dragon Slaying Sword tightly in his right hand and the soaring presence he gave off radiated into the distance. He seemed to completely fuse with the surrounding space, becoming one with it. He flew into the distance silently. His speed was very fast, so fast that only a blurry afterimage could be seen.

Behind him, the member of the Gilligan clan maintained a sneer. He followed behind him unhurriedly. With his strength as a Saint King, he did not worry about Jian Chen escaping, as he was only a Saint Ruler of the First Heavenly Layer escaping.

After a mere few breaths, Jian Chen had already appeared over several dozen kilometers away, far away from the base of the Flame Mercenaries. The prosperous and lively city below him had also disappeared, replaced by a desolate grassland.

“Jian Chen, it’s peaceful enough here. There’s no need to worry about slaughtering innocent people and suffering Celestial Decay. Let’s handle our business here.” At this moment, Jian Chen suddenly heard the voice of the Gilligan clan member. When he had finished speaking, Jian Chen saw that the Gilligan clan member who was supposed to be behind him had suddenly appeared in front of him, blocking his path.

Jian Chen’s reaction was very fast, coming to a screeching stop. He shot a swift but forceful glance at the middle-aged man and his expression was extremely solemn. The chaotic neidan in his dantian began to spit out large amounts of Chaotic Force soon after. The vast Chaotic Force quickly surged about in Jian Chen’s body, reaching every corner in his body and increasing the defence of the Chaotic Body to the limit. Another strand of Chaotic Force directly surged into his right arm before being poured into the Dragon Slaying Sword.

The blurry, glittering glow of the Dragon Slaying Sword was suppressed and replaced by a dark, beautiful glow. At the same

time, a presence of destruction began to radiate from the Dragon Slaying Sword, causing the surrounding space to greatly warp.

At that moment, Jian Chen had already adjusted his body to the peak condition, completely ready to use all of his strength. He did not dare to hold back at all, as he knew that this battle perhaps would be his toughest and most hopeless battle in his life.

The Gilligan clan member ridiculed as he stared at Jian Chen, “Interesting. Who would have thought that a First Heavenly Layer Saint Ruler like you would be giving off a presence comparable to a Fifth Heavenly Layer Saint Ruler. You really are the cream of the crop for the humans. No wonder Rum Guinness would give her own cub to you to look after.”

“However, do you think that you can resist against me with just that little power? Such arrogance.” The magical beast’s tone was filled with disdain.

Jian Chen said nothing. He stared fixedly at the member of the Gilligan clan, before suddenly giving out a great roar. Even more Chaotic Force flowed from his body into the Dragon Slaying Sword. The dark glow of the Dragon Slaying Sword immediately began to increase and the presence of destruction suddenly increased multiple times on end. Afterwards, he swung out.

A Sword Qi completely composed of Chaotic Force shot out from the Dragon Slaying Sword, cutting through space. It shot towards the magical beast like nothing short of a thunderbolt. Jian Chen had put everything into the strike. It was his greatest attack with the strength he currently possessed.

The member of the Gilligan clan revealed a sneer. He clenched his hand softly, and the space in front immediately began to solidify. The terrifying Sword Qi from Jian Chen was forcefully frozen in the space, unable to move at all. Shortly afterwards, the frozen space directly shattered and with it, the Sword Qi completely dispersed.

Jian Chen had poured all his strength into the strike, yet it was actually unable to even approach the magical beast from the Gilligan clan. He only needed to move slightly to completely nullify Jian Chen's attack without using much strength at all.

Seeing what had happened, Jian Chen immediately became overwhelmed by despair. Shortly afterwards, he did not hesitate and immediately turned around to escape. He became one with the surrounding space, using Spatial Force to escape into the distance, akin to a lightning bolt.

"You want to escape in my presence? Hmph, you have no right." The Gilligan clan member stared at Jian Chen in disdain before swinging his hand to cut open the space in front of him, creating a Space Gate. In the blink of an eye, he appeared in front of Jian Chen, blocking his way once again.

"Jian Chen, I've already given you an opportunity. It was you who failed to appreciate my kindness. Since it's like that, don't blame me for being impolite." The Gilligan clan member spoke expressionlessly, before directly throwing a punch at Jian Chen who was several hundred meters away.

The simple-looking punch actually carried much of the mysteries of the world. As he struck out the blow, time seemed to suffer a short pause.

A shapeless energy directly pierced through space, striking Jian Chen like a lightning bolt. It landed square on his chest.

Retch! Jian Chen was unable to defend against it at all and violently vomited a mouthful of blood. It transformed into a mist in the air. The Chaotic Body he relied most upon was already shattered, with a cavity appearing on his chest. Through the hole, the scenery behind Jian Chen could actually be seen.

The powerful force directly caused Jian Chen to smash into the ground, creating a great crater below. He sank deeply into the ground.

The Gilligan clan member slowly floated down. He observed Jian Chen who was imbedded deeply in the crater with a cold gaze and mumbled, "This kid is not normal. Not only does the power he control is powerful and weird, even his body is abnormal. Since a grievance has already been formed between us today, I can't leave you alive. Otherwise, when you become strong, you'll look for me for revenge. Whatever, since I've already stepped into the Tian Yuan Continent, I might as well just eliminate you and prevent some future trouble. Having you mature would be bad." The Gilligan clan member gently waved his hand, and the still-sleeping tiger cub immediately floated out from the crater. It immediately flew towards the magical beast. At the same time, a great power had already coalesced in his right hand, ready to end what he started and properly kill off Jian Chen.

However, just when the tiger cub began approached the Gilligan clan member, a shadow appeared in the originally brightly-lit sky.

Chapter 694: Houston

The blazing sun in the sky disappeared at that moment and the originally-bright sky was suddenly shrouded by darkness. The darkness was stifling, as if an apocalypse had occurred. Also, the moving air from before froze at that moment. It seemed as if time had been frozen.

The tiger cub that was originally floating towards the magical beast from the Gilligan clan immediately stopped, before being guided to the nearby grass by an invisible force.

The expression of the magical beast became extremely ugly. There was unconcealed shock in his gaze, because his body was currently tightly bound by an unimaginably great power. No matter how he tried, he was unable to move or break free of it.

“Bastard, what are the chances for me to meet experts of the human world in such a desolate place!” The member of the Gilligan clan was enraged. The strength of the hidden person who moved against him caused him to be terrified. He had not even appeared, yet he already completely immobilised him. Just what kind of strength did he possess?

“Member of the Gilligan clan, you have broken our original agreement by entering the world of humans. According to the agreement, I have the right to kill you.” An old, mighty voice originated from the sky. The cold tone was filled with awe and shortly afterwards, a hundred-meter-long spatial crack suddenly appeared in the sky. An extremely ordinary-looking hoe, still caked in mud, transformed into a black ray, striking the magical beast

from the Gilligan clan like a lightning bolt.

The Gilligan Clan member was trapped, unable to move at all. As a result, he could only watch helplessly as the hoe struck him in the chest.

Bang! With a muffled sound, a head-sized hole appeared in the chest of the Gilligan clan member. His body of a Class 8 Magical Beast seemed to become tofu in front of the hoe, easily having a hole punched through it by the hoe that seemed to be completely made of ordinary metal.

The Gilligan clan member spat out a mouthful of blood. His body was still trapped by the invisible force, unable to move at all.

“Who... who... just who are you? Are you the grand elder of Mercenary City or from the ten great guardian clans?” The Gilligan clan member roared at the sky as he stared in shock. With his current strength, he was actually completely suppressed by the opponent. Humans who possessed such strength could be counted with fingers. Other than the grand elder of Mercenary City, only the ten guardian clans possessed such peerless experts.

The magical beast did not receive a reply. The hoe radiated with a dark light. Powerful dark-attributed Saint Force actually melded together with World Force miraculously and it was actually much more powerful than any other force. Shortly afterwards, the hoe was swung towards the magical beast's head, as if it was plowing the ground.

“Roar!” A great tiger roar originated from the Gilligan clan member’s mouth, before he was shrouded by golden light. In that moment, he became a huge, golden tiger a dozen meters long, with his fur radiating with dazzling gold light. It was extremely blinding and shortly afterwards, the body of the giant tiger shook, actually breaking free from the invisible restraints. He regained his mobility, before immediately dodging to the side.

The hoe dug into the giant tiger's tail, causing the several meter thick tail to be chopped into two parts. It caused the member of the Gilligan clan to cry out in pain.

After the strike, the hoe did not pause. It continued to radiate with dark light, swinging towards the head of the giant tiger. At the same time, the surrounding space quickly froze as if it was a block of ice, restraining the giant tiger again.

“You want to kill me? It’s not that easy.” The golden tiger spoke in human language, before giving out a long roar at the sky. His body was enveloped by a bright, blood-red light and with a red flash, the giant tiger disappeared. He had used a secret technique to escape.

“That’s a high-level secret technique for escape from the beast clan. Hmph, who would have thought he would use such a self-cannibalising secret technique to escape. Even if you escape this time, your strength will fall from the Second Heavenly Layer to the First Heavenly Layer as a Saint King.” The old voice resounded gently in the sky. Afterwards, the hoe stopped mid-air before transforming into a black blur, disappearing into the huge crack in the sky. At the same time, the darkness quickly receded, allowing

the world to recover its original brightness.

Jian Chen floated slowly out of the crater and landed gently on the ground. However at this moment, he was unconscious, unaware of what was happening around him.

“What a weird power and strong body, to be actually rejuvenating from such a heavy injury. Looks like he’ll fully recover in no time.” The old voice resounded in the empty space again. The origins of it were unknown, without any trace at all.

Shortly afterwards, the old voice resounded again, “Tian Jian, you’ve been hiding for so long. Isn’t it about time for you to come out?”

As soon as he finished speaking, a Space Gate formed swiftly. Tian Jian floated out of the Space Gate in white clothes. He stared calmly at the opposite crack in space and said, “Houston, we haven’t met in over a thousand years. Who would have thought that we would meet again under such circumstances. You really surprised me with protecting Jian Chen secretly.”

The space crack quickly formed into a Space Gate and an old man in extremely simple clothes walked out. He was bare-footed and his feet were covered in mud. The hoe which he had used to injure the Gilligan clan was currently lugged casually over his shoulder. He seemed just like an old farmer.

“Jian Chen is friends with my grandson, as well as someone I regard as important, so I naturally will protect him and not let him

die. Tian Jian, why do you protect Jian Chen? With your strength, you should know the secret of the Winged Tiger God. Perhaps your Mercenary City wants to steal the Winged Tiger God when it's still young and raise it yourself? Once the Winged Tiger God is fully grown, it's extremely powerful." Houston said calmly.

"Back then, the city lord left behind a law in the grand elder's laws, that Mercenary City must never treat the Winged Tiger Gods as an enemy, and when a Winged Tiger God did appear, we have to help it mature with all of our ability. I'm only carrying out the city lord's orders." Speaking up to there, Tian Jian paused. He looked at the unconscious Jian Chen on the ground and continued, "Also, Jian Chen's talent is unprecedented on the Tian Yuan Continent. He will definitely surpass us in the future, so I naturally have to protect him. When he truly steps into the peak, it will be a fortune for us humans. Perhaps, he will become an important figure in resisting against the Beast God Continent in the future."

Tian Jian paused, before continuing, "Houston, looks like you've discovered the identity of the Winged Tiger God before me. A few days ago, your Bloodsword sect has appeared again and again along the sea. They should be monitoring the Beast God Continent."

Houston nodded slightly, "Correct. I believe the peace of our Tian Yuan Continent will be shattered in the not-so distant future.

Chapter 695: Conversation

Houston nodded slightly, “Correct. I believe the peace of our Tian Yuan Continent will be shattered in the not-so distant future.

“Looks like you’ve also guessed that the matter of the Gilligan clan against the Winged Tiger God is much more complicated. That’s true, peace will be broken soon and the silent guardian clans will all appear once again. Houston, I know you’ve already retired from the Tian Yuan Continent for a thousand years, but you are still a human expert who stands on the peak. When the Beast God Continent invades, I hope that your Bloodsword sect will be able to support our Tian Yuan Continent, to make a contribution to the human race.” Tian Jian said solemnly to Houston.

Houston nodded calmly, “You don’t have to worry. Although I, Houston, have once sworn that I would never interfere with the matters of the Tian Yuan Continent again a thousand years ago, this regards the safety of the human race. I definitely will not stand down.”

“That’ll be good. With your Bloodsword sect helping, our power in resisting the Beast God Continent will increase quite a lot. Although we know that the Beast God Continent is coming for the Winged Tiger God, we definitely can’t let them obtain it. I think that the king of the Beast God Continent wants to seize the growing Winged Tiger God and forcefully possess its body.”

“Looks like you’ve thought into this more than me. Originally, I thought that king of Beast God Continent wanted to kill the young

Winged Tiger God to maintain his position in power. Looks like it's much more complicated than I imagined." Houston sighed.

"It indeed is much more complicated than you have imagined." Tian Jian looked deeply into Houston. He hesitated slightly before continuing, "Houston, perhaps you don't know, but the previous Winged Tiger God had once left a shrine on the Beast God Continent in the ancient times and he left his legacy in the shrine. However, other than Winged Tiger Gods, no other magical beast is able to enter it, unless their strength surpasses the one that created it, in which they can just forcefully break through the shrine's barrier. As for the king of Beast God Continent, once it possesses the body of the Winged Tiger God, he can successfully inherit the legacy, very possibly reaching the strength that the ancient Winged Tiger God had reached. At that time, we humans will no longer possess the power to resist at all."

Houston's expression became extremely serious. Floating mid-air, he said nothing and only after a long time did he give a deep sigh at the sky, "Looks like we definitely have to use all our strength to protect this Winged Tiger God. We mustn't let the Beast God Continent obtain it. Now that we humans no longer have an expert like Mo Tianyun, once the king of Beast God Continent possesses the body of the Winged Tiger God, even the path lord of carnal desires wouldn't be his opponent."

Hearing the name, Tian Jian furrowed his brows. Pausing for a moment, he said, "Don't rely on the path lord of carnal desires. That renegade was expelled from the Pure Heart Pavilion and walks a path of desire, indulging in the seven emotions and six desires. If he knows about the Winged Tiger God, perhaps he'll immediately go and try take it for himself."

“The behaviour of the lord may be despicable, but he really is a great genius. At least, he is the only person of the Tian Yuan Continent who can resist against the king of Beast God Continent. Perhaps in the future when the Beast God Continent invades, we’ll need to rely on the path lord to fend him off.” Houston muttered to himself.

“Ai.” Tian Jian sighed softly and waved his hands, “Houston, our conversation today ends here. In the future when the Beast God Continent displays signs of movement, we can discuss about it with the people from the ten guardian clans. Anyway, the better kept the secret of the Winged Tiger God, the better it is for the Tian Yuan Continent. As for the current moment, we should pour all our power into the growth of the Winged Tiger God. Right now, it’s just too weak.”

“These years, your Mercenary City should have amassed a lot of heavenly material treasures, so giving your Mercenary City the task of helping the Winged Tiger God grow is most suitable. Also, you should stay behind and handle the rest of the stuff that happened here. You’re more suitable than me.” Finishing his sentence, Houston turned around and disappeared through the Space Gate. As for Tian Jian, he just stood there.

Tian Jian looked at the unconscious Jian Chen on the ground with a complicated gaze. Afterwards, he sighed lightly and with the wave of his hand, Jian Chen and the Winged Tiger God immediately began to float, passing through a Space Gate behind Tian Jian.

Amidst the Flame Mercenaries, Ming Dong's group currently remained gathered together in the hall, anxious to find a way to save Jian Chen. Even though they had several Saint Rulers around, they were weak like ants in front of a Saint King. Even if they worked together, they definitely were not a Saint King's opponent.

Just at this moment, the space in the hall suddenly began to warp without any prior warnings. Before anyone could react, a Space Gate quickly formed and Tian Jian gently floated out of it. Beside his side, the unconscious Jian Chen was entrusted to an invisible power, slowly lowered to the ground.

“Uncle Tian!” Seeing the middle-aged man, Ming Dong was greatly excited and immediately began to call out aloud. Shortly afterwards, he rushed and grabbed Tian Jian's arm affectionately. He glanced over at the heavily-injured and unconscious Jian Chen, “Uncle Tian, you've finally come. I just know you were going to appear. How is Jian Chen? Is he okay?”

Facing Ming Dong, Tian Jian struggled to maintain his indifferent expression and could not help but reveal a warm smile. He looked at Ming Dong lovingly, “Child, you don't need to worry. Jian Chen is fine.” Towards Ming Dong, Tian Jian showed extra affection.

“I pay respects to the grand elder!” Jiede Tai and Nubis both recognised Tian Jian. Without any more delays, they immediately bowed. Their expressions were filled with respect.

“Junior Bi Hai pays respects to grand elder. I thank the grand elder very much for saving my great-grandson.” Bi Hai did not hesitate at all and bowed respectfully to Tian Jian. With what had

happened last time in the sky about the tungsten alloy mine, he had seen the grand elder personally, so he was not unfamiliar as to who he was.

Chapter 696: Warning

Tian Jian stared at Bi Hai with a rather astonished gaze. He was obviously extremely surprised by the fact that Bi Hai was Jian Chen's grandfather, but he did not continue that topic. He gently waved his hand and said, "Everyone should disperse and find a place for Jian Chen to rest quietly. I know what happened here before. You mustn't tell others about this. Keep that in mind!"

"Junior understands and definitely will not let any part of it leak out. "Nubis, Jiede Tai and the others all said respectfully with their hands clasped.

Afterwards, Ming Dong personally carried Jian Chen into his bedroom, while Tian Jian, Huang Luan, You Yue, Bi Liang, Little Fatty and the others followed behind.

Looking at him lying on the bed, unconscious and smeared with blood, Huang Luan, You Yue and Bi Lian all began crying painfully. They were some of the people who cared the most for Jian Chen, so Jian Chen's miserable appearance caused the three girls to be deeply pained and heart-broken.

Afterwards, Huang Luan immediately removed several Class 6 Radiant Spirit Pills from her Space Ring to feed to Jian Chen, hoping that his injuries would quickly recover.

"Don't feed it to him. Jian Chen's body is extremely peculiar and possesses very great regeneration abilities. His injuries are currently healing very quickly and he should completely recover

without much time.” Tian Jian stopped what Huang Luan was doing and explained indifferently.

Huang Luan paused for a moment, before finally putting the Radiant Spirit Pills away.

“Uncle Tian, I just knew you would come. This time, we were fortunate to have you, otherwise Jian Chen really would have been in grave danger.” Ming Dong looked at Tian Jian with gratitude. However, there was still lingering fear. He struggled to imagine just what would happen to Jian Chen if Tian Jian did not appear on time.

Tian Jian smiled, “Jian Chen is a great genius of our Tian Yuan Continent. His talent is unprecedented and his future achievements have no limit. If such a genius really dies when he is young, our Tian Yuan Continent would suffer a great loss. Don’t worry, your uncle Tian will not just let Jian Chen be harmed without doing anything.”

“Uncle Tian, so you’ve always been secretly protecting Jian Chen.” Ming Dong was delighted. With this, did it not mean that Jian Chen would not meet anymore life-threatening dangers on the Tian Yuan Continent?

Tian Jian smiled, but he did not make any confirming gestures. Actually, ever since he discovered Jian Chen could see and communicate with the barrier spirit of Mercenary City, he had already began to view Jian Chen with great importance and left an extremely obscure imprint on Jian Chen. When Jian Chen’s life really was in danger, he would appear and help out.

Learning that the grand elder of Mercenary City was secretly protecting Jian Chen, Bi Lian, You Yue and Huang Luan were secretly delighted. They were extremely happy, because they knew that with the grand elder of Mercenary City behind him, it would become Jian Chen's greatest safeguard in the future.

Just at this moment, Jian Chen's finger twitched slightly. Shortly afterwards, his eyes slowly opened and he looked around in confusion. When he saw Tian Jian, he immediately understood what had happened. With a weak voice, he said hurriedly, "Thank you senior for saving me."

"Jian Chen, you're finally awake."

"Ah... brother, you're awake."

With Jian Chen waking up, it was a pleasant surprise to everyone. They all gathered by Jian Chen's bed to ask about how he felt. They cared for him very much.

Jian Chen sat up on the bed with some difficulty. The concern that everyone showed for him, filled his heart with warmth. He said, "Everyone doesn't need to worry, I'm fine." With that, Jian Chen suddenly remembered something. He glanced around frantically and only relaxed slightly after seeing the tiger sleeping by his side. He lifted up the white tiger softly and muttered, "Luckily Xiao Bai wasn't been taken away by that king from the Gilligan clan. Otherwise, it would've been a disaster."

“Jian Chen, just what identity does Xiao Bai possess? How did it attract a king from the Gilligan clan to come and take him?” Ming Dong stared at the white tiger and asked curiously.

Hearing that, Jian Chen hesitated. It was not because he did not want to tell Ming Dong, but rather, he really could not let any more people know about the identity of the white tiger.

Seeing how Jian Chen was stuck between a rock and a hard place, Tian Jian intervened in time, “Child, you don’t need to know about this. You all should forget about what happened before. Don’t talk about it in the future. Okay, everyone should get out, I have some things I need to discuss personally with Jian Chen.”

“Yes, uncle Tian!” Ming Dong replied obediently, before leaving with his curiosity and everyone else. However, after what had happened, everyone already knew that the identity of the white tiger was a secret and definitely was not as simple as it seemed.

When Ming Dong and the others had left, a clear barrier suddenly appeared, enveloping the entire room. The barrier was created personally by Tian Jian, isolating the entire room. Even Saint Kings would not be able to overhear what was being discussed inside.

“Senior, what do you want to discuss with junior?” Seeing how careful Tian Jian was, Jian Chen’s expression also became serious.

Tian Jian stared at the tiger in Jian Chen’s arms with a complicated gaze. Only after some time did he give a soft sigh,

“Jian Chen, there’s not much time left. You must let the Winged Tiger God grow up quickly. Otherwise, your time with it will not last much longer.”

Jian Chen expression changed slightly. He asked, “Senior, has it got to do with the Gilligan clan?”

“This matter is not as simple as you have imagined it. Threats to the Winged Tiger God come from all directions and they’re not necessarily threats you can handle.” Tian Jian paused for a little before continuing, “Looks like there’s some things I should explain to you, Jian Chen. The Gilligan clan actually is just a chess piece left on the Tian Yuan Continent by the Beast God Continent, and the Gilligan clan trying to obtain the Winged Tiger God is probably just due to the command of the ruler of the Beast God Continent. As a result, although the Gilligan clan has been repelled this time, experts from the Beast God Continent will come to our Tian Yuan Continent very soon.”

“Although the threat from the Beast God Continent will be handled by the guardian clans of the Tian Yuan Continent, the matter concerning the Winged Tiger God is extremely important. If it’s leaked out and the guardian clans learn about it, they will definitely be interested in the Winged Tiger God after they successfully repel the forces of the Beast God Continent. At that time, if you don’t have enough power, you’ll just become a fish, being carved up by anybody. Even my Mercenary City will not be able to help you.” Tian Jian’s tone was very serious.

Chapter 697: Arrival Of Qin Wujian

“Although the threat from the Beast God Continent will be handled by the guardian clans of the Tian Yuan Continent, the matter concerning the Winged Tiger God is extremely important. If it’s leaked out and the guardian clans learn about it, they will definitely be interested in the Winged Tiger God after they successfully repel the forces of the Beast God Continent. At that time, if you don’t have enough power, you’ll just become a fish, being carved up by anybody. Even my Mercenary City will not be able to help you.” Tian Jian’s tone was very serious.

What Tian Jian had said was similar to dumping a bucket of cold water on Jian Chen’s head. It caused his heart to feel extremely cold. Although Jian Chen did not know much about the ten guardian clans, he still understood that the strength of the ten guardian clans were so great that they had become the guarding force for Tian Yuan Continent at the very least. If such a powerful force actually moved against him, he would be as weak as an ant and unable to resist at all, even though he was a Saint Ruler.

Jian Chen’s expression became extremely solemn. The splendid feeling from successfully escaping from the Gilligan clan member completely disappeared at this moment.

Jian Chen tightened his embrace of the white tiger cub and gently rubbed the soft fur of the cub unawaringly. The cub was just so pitiful. Even though it was the a divine beast of antiquity, it was still a powerless cub. As soon as it was born, it had embarked on such a difficult path. Not only did it lose its father forever, its mother was also heavily injured and forced to leave the Cross Mountains, currently hiding in somewhere unknown. Also, other

than this, there were the powerful forces of the Beast God Continent and the guardian clans that eyed it covetously. It was destined to lead an extremely difficult life.

Also, Jian Chen did not even know how he could possibly protect the tiger cub in the future when Beast God Continent and guardian clans started to move.

Looking at Jian Chen's serious expression, Tian Jian sighed softly, "There's not much time left, Jian Chen. You must quickly get the Winged Tiger God to mature. Only when you or it is truly powerful do you possess the power to resist the guardian clans."

"Senior, just what do I need to be able to resist the guardian clans and the Beast God Continent?" Jian Chen asked.

"Before the guardian clans and the Beast God Continent, only Saint King have the right to speak. And that's only the right to speak." Tian Jian stressed the latter part very much.

"If you want to resist against the guardian clans and the Beast God Continent, you must be a peak Saint King, or even a Saint Emperor that has exceeded Saint Kings."

Jian Chen remained silent for a very long time. A feeling of despair slowly bloomed in his heart.

Only Saint Kings had the right to speak to the guardian clans. As for him, he had only just reached the First Heavenly Layer as a

Saint Ruler. He did not even know how long it would take to become a Saint King, and even if he had become a Saint King, he only possessed the rights to speak.

Whether he could protect the tiger cub was something extremely difficult. Although Jian Chen had the confidence that he could resist against peak Saint Kings, or even Saint Emperors, in the future, he just did not have the time to power up, as the higher he climbed, the more difficult it became to power up, unlike how it was before.

Tian Jian paced around in the room with his eyebrows furrowed. After thinking for a while, he said, “Right now, the current situation has not developed into the worst case scenario. Although the Beast God Continent has already learnt about the Winged Tiger God, as long as they don’t start moving on a large scale and disturb the guardian clans, the dangers the Winged Tiger God will be facing should lessen by quite a lot. When I return, I’ll personally organise some people to guard the coast and prevent the Gilligan Clan from sending messages to the Beast God Continent.”

“But this is only temporary measure, because the Gilligan clan possess secret techniques to communicate with the Beast God Continent. Once they learn that their messages aren’t going through, they definitely won’t hold back and will pay a large price to use the secret technique to send information to the Beast God Continent. Jian Chen, take advantage of this time and get the Winged Tiger God to grow quickly.”

“Senior, then do you know of any methods that can let Xiao Bai grow faster?” Jian Chen looked at Tian Jian hopefully, hoping that

he could find out another method in speeding up Xiao Bai's growth from Tian Jian.

Tian Jian shook his head gently, "Currently, there are no ways other than feeding it heavenly resources."

Jian Chen was disappointed. Even though he had plenty of heavenly resources on hand, the tiger cub was only a Class 5 magical beast currently. Even if consuming heavenly resources allowed it to grow faster, for it to go from Class 5 to Class 7, or even Class 8, would just take up too much time. Right now, what he lacked the most was time. The Beast God Continent and the guardian clans definitely would not wait until he was powerful enough before moving against him.

Tian Jian passed a Space Ring to Jian Chen and said, "Jian Chen, in there contains basically all the heavenly resources our Mercenary City has gathered in the past few years. Under the agreement of the second elder, the fourth elder and me, we've taken it all out to help the Winged Tiger God grow. We wish it can quickly grow up to handle the calamity in the future."

Jian Chen did not reject it. He accepted the ring from Tian Jian seriously and thanked, "Thank you senior!"

"Don't thank me, I'm just carrying out an order set down by the city lord from before. This is probably all my Mercenary City can do." Tian Jian replied calmly.

Afterwards, Tian Jian explained some things to Jian Chen again,

before leaving through a Space Gate that had formed when he directly ripped open the space, leaving Jian Chen to stare blankly in bed with the tiger cub in his hands.

Jian Chen sat in bed and stared blankly for two hours, before finally returning to his senses as the tiger cub woke up from its slumber.

“Mrrrrrrrrrr...” The tiger cub had already gained intelligence so when it woke up and realised the bloodstains on Jian Chen’s clothing, it immediately gave out constant purr as it stared at Jian Chen with its bright little eyes. It seemed to be caring for him, feeling sorry for him or even giving out sounds of crying.

Jian Chen used his hand to softly rub the cub’s small head. He stared into the cub’s small, bright, sincere eyes with a complicated gaze and said softly, “Poor Xiao Bai, perhaps such peaceful times will not last much longer.”

The cub blinked and stared at Jian Chen vacantly. It did not seem to understand just what Jian Chen was talking about.

Seeing how innocent-looking Xiao Bai was, Jian Chen sighed softly from the bottom of his heart. Afterwards, he took out a large pile of thousand-year heavenly resources and placed them in front of Xiao Bai without holding back in the slightest. He said, “Xiao Bai, you should quickly eat, eat all of it. Don’t waste any time, you must quickly increase your strength.”

The tiger cub did not even listen to what Jian Chen said. Its two

small, bright eyes had landed on the large pile as soon as it appeared and excitement flashed across its eyes. It gave out a cry of happiness and immediately dived into the pile of heavenly resources. It began munching on them with an expression of happiness.

Very soon, over twenty of the thousand-year heavenly resources were all consumed by the cub. After eating it all, the tiger cub gave a satisfied burp before closing its eyes. It lay down on the bed without moving, falling asleep to digest the heavenly resources again.

Jian Chen stared at the sleeping cub for a while, before carrying it gently out of the room.

In a guest room, Ming Dong and a group of people currently gathered there. They were currently waiting and none of them had left. When Jian Chen appeared, he was immediately discovered by the people who had spent the entire time waiting. He was instantly surrounded by them, and they all asked about his health. They cared for Jian Chen very much.

Feeling the concern from everyone for himself, Jian Chen could not help but feel the warmth in his heart. He said, "Everyone doesn't need to worry. I've already fully recovered." The regeneration ability of the Chaotic Body really was shocking. After just a little more than two hours, the injury from the Gilligan Clan member had already fully recovered. Right now, other than the fact that Jian Chen's clothes were still covered by blood, he was already fine.

Afterwards, they asked about everything. The sudden visit of the Gilligan clan member had caused great shock to everyone, and at the same time, it brought an extremely great pressure upon everyone, so they all wanted to understand just exactly what it was about.

Everyone was also extremely curious about the white tiger cub's true identity..

Jian Chen did not explain too much in order to answer everyone's questions. The identity of the tiger cub definitely could not be revealed. The fewer people who know about it, the better it was. Otherwise, once the news about the beast of antiquity, the Winged Tiger God, leaked out, the problems would instead come sooner.

At this moment, Jian Chen suddenly raised a hand to stop everyone's discussions. Shortly afterwards, the voice of a guard resounded from outside, "Reporting to the captain, there is someone called Qin Wujian outside who says he has to see you for very important matters."

"Qin Wujian? Why has he come?" Jian Chen was slightly surprised. After muttering to himself, he called out to the outside, "Let him come to the central conference hall. Treat him as an important guest."

"Yes captain!" The guard responded before leaving.

Jian Chen stood up from the chair and said to the people in the

room, “Everyone can go off and do their things. I’ll go change first.”

Chapter 698: Troubles Of The Tianqin Clan (One)

Jian Chen showered and changed into clean clothes before heading towards the hall to see Qin Wujian. When he arrived, Ming Dong, You Yue and Bi Lian were currently talking with Qin Wujian.

Seeing Jian Chen walk over, Qin Wujiam immediately stopped his conversation and stood up. He bowed respectfully to Jian Chen and said, “Qin Wujian pays respects to the Imperial Protector!”

Jian Chen laughed gently. He did not go up and sit at the end of the table, but instead just sat down casually, “Qin Wujian, you don’t need to be so polite. I wonder, why have you hailed from the distant Gesun Kingdom to come here?”

Qin Wujian did not ramble and got straight to the point, “Reporting to the Imperial Protector, the four other Imperial Protectors have invited Imperial Protector Jian Chen to pay a visit Qinhuang Kingdoms. There are important matters to be discussed.”

Hearing that, Jian Chen was slightly surprised, He pondered over it shortly before asking Qin Wujian with bright eyes, “Qin Wujian, do you know just what the four Imperial Protectors want to discuss with me?”

Qin Wujian shook his head with a bitter smile, “That I do not know of.”

Jian Chen lowered his head and thought for a while. He could not help but think over the fishy occurrences at Qinhuang Kingdom, which clearly pointed to the fact that something important was about to happen. He nodded, “I understand, I will quickly head to the Qinhuang Kingdom.”

Qin Wujian stood up from his seat and clasped his hands, “Sir Imperial Protector, since the message has already been conveyed, Qin Wujian’s mission is also complete. I will be leaving first and returning to guard Gesun Kingdom.”

Qin Wujian did not stay for long. He left the Flame Mercenaries to return to the Gesun Kingdom as soon as he conveyed the message to Jian Chen.

“Jian Chen, the Imperial Protectors of Qinhuang Kingdom definitely have already learnt that you became a Saint Ruler. Since they want you back so suddenly, might it be because something bad is about to happen?” Ming Dong guessed.

Jian Chen nodded slightly, “I’ve had that premonition long ago, perhaps the Qinhuang Kingdom has encountered some problems. It just happens to be that there isn’t anything major happening with the Flame Mercenaries, so I’ll pay a visit to the Qinhuang Kingdom some time. I want to know just why exactly the four Imperial Protectors are looking for me.”

“Brother, you must be careful about that Gilligan clan. Although senior Tian Jian has repelled that king of the Gilligan clan, who

can guarantee that they will not send other people to go against you. In my opinion, you should take senior Nubis, senior Jiede Tai and grandpa with you on this trip to the Qinhuang Kingdom.” Bi Lian said with concern.

Jian Chen shook his head, “Lian’er, you don’t need to worry. With your brother’s current strength, basically anyone below a Fifth Heavenly Layer Saint Ruler is no longer a threat. And if I do happen to meet people stronger than that, they won’t be able to do much, even if I brought them along. Also, what happened before with the Gilligan clan has alerted senior Tian, so members of the Gilligan clan definitely won’t step onto the Tian Yuan Continent again. How can your brother be in danger?”

Bi Lian realised it was indeed true, so she stopped persuading him. However, she could not help but repeatedly warn Jian Chen about being safe.

The news of the Gilligan clan member intruding into the Flame Mercenaries did not spread and was completely locked in, all because the magical beast did not create too large of a commotion. Otherwise, if he did make a scene, everyone would have known about it and it would become very difficult to prevent the spreading.

Jian Chen spent a night at the Flame Mercenaries. In the morning of the next day, he exited the resting room with the tiger cub and bid farewell to everybody outside.

“Jian Chen, come back early. Remember to be careful on your way. Right now, you’ve pulled really ahead of me, but the three

year period is almost coming to an end. After you leave, I'll immediately go into isolated cultivation and try break through to a Heavenly Saint Master before you come back." Ming Dong said carefully. Reaching the end, his tone contained excitement and expectation that he struggled to conceal.

He had already anticipated becoming a Heaven Saint Master for three years.

Five minutes later, Jian Chen departed with the sleeping tiger cub in his hands in front of everyone. He travelled using Spatial Force, where he seemed to transform into a bolt of lightning, rushing up to a high altitude at an unbelievable speed. He immediately arrived at an altitude of several kilometers, before fusing with the surrounding space. He turned into a blur, flying off into the distance at an even greater speed and in a breath's time, he had completely disappeared.

Jian Chen sped up and soared freely through the vast sky. Looking down at the blurry landscape of mountains and rivers below, he actually relaxed slightly and the psychological pressure from the Beast God Continent and guardian clans slowly decreased.

After close to a day of travelling, the setting sun was finally about to disappear. Jian Chen arrived at Walaurent City and descended several kilometers away from the city, entering it by foot.

He only went to Walaurent City because he wanted to visit the first young master of the Tianqin clan, Qin Xiao, who he had not seen in quite a while. Last time when he went to Longevity Valley

to pick up Little Fatty, he wanted to go straight to Walaurent City to take Qin Xiao along with him. However at that time, the tungsten alloy mine had been exposed and the Flame Mercenaries were endangered. Time was extremely tight, which was why he could not take Qin Xiao and instead directly took the Space Gate in Qinhuang Kingdom back to the Flame Mercenaries.

Now, since he was passing through the same path, he had to go pay Qin Xiao a visit no matter what, as well as give him an explanation. After all, Jian Chen truly regarded Qin Xiao as his own brother and not as an outsider.

Jian Chen entered the city without any obstructions. The hubbub and liveliness of the streets immediately attracted Jian Chen's attention, which gave him a feeling of nostalgia. Especially from seeing the busy merchants and tired-looking mercenaries on the streets, Jian Chen could not help but think about how he was before. He immediately sighed in his heart.

Several years ago, was he not the same as those people? He was busy everyday, walking beside life and death in the forests full of magical beasts, to battle so hard for his own future. It could be said that every expert had walked down a bloody road formed from the corpses of countless lives.

Unknowingly, Jian Chen had already arrived before the front door of the Tianqin clan. This time, he did not even need to use his presence to clearly feel where Qin Xiao was. At this moment, Qin Xiao was with a large group of people in the conference hall of the Tianqin Clan. They seemed to be discussing something important and even the atmosphere of the entire hall seemed rather heavy.

At the same time, Jian Chen could also feel that in the Tianqin clan, there seemed to be a solemn atmosphere. Even the guards at the door had been increased by a lot.

Jian Chen swaggered into the estate, but the guards at the entrance did not seem to discover that he existed at all. Even their eyes did not move, allowing Jian Chen to enter through the front door extremely easily. It was as if Jian Chen was completely ignored by them.

Jian Chen swaggered into the courtyard of the Tianqin clan as he was fused with the world. Even though he brushed past many people, no one noticed him. Very soon, Jian Chen arrived at the hall of the Tianqin clan. Just at this moment, his fusion with the world silently disappeared and he returned to normal.

All the people in the hall immediately noticed the unwelcomed intruder. It caused them to all be slightly surprised. However, there were clearly many people who recognised Jian Chen, since as soon as they saw his face clearly, they could not help but stare blankly before recovering their slight seriousness.

“Brother Jian Chen, you’ve actually come. Weird, how did you get in? Why weren’t there any guards to report to me?” Qin Xiao immediately stood up from his seat and arrived in front of Jian Chen happily.

Chapter 699: Troubles Of The Tianqin Clan (Two)

Jian Chen said with a smile, “Brother Qin Xiao, Jian Chen has come without any warning, so he may be interrupting you.”

“Hehe, it’s fine, it’s fine. Brother Jian Chen is a valued guest of my Tianqin clan. The welcomes you very much.” Qin Xiao’s father, the patriarch of the Tianqin clan, stood up from his chair and said kindly. He then extended his hand to gesture at a empty seat not far away, “Brother Jian Chen, please sit, please sit.”

Jian Chen clasped his hands with a smile, “Many thanks, patriarch!” Afterwards, Jian Chen did not hold back, directly walking over to the empty seat and sitting down.

With Jian Chen’s arrival, the heavy atmosphere of the hall became slightly warmer. The many high-ranking Tianqin clan members would glance at Jian Chen from time to time. They seemed to be interested in him and were thinking about something.

After sweeping his gaze around the entire hall, Jian Chen hesitated slightly before clasping his hands at the patriarch who sat at the end of the table, “Patriarch, everyone seems to be worried and heavy-hearted. Perhaps you’ve encountered a troublesome problem?”

The patriarch sighed lightly, “Brother Jian Chen is correct. My Tianqin clan currently is indeed facing a few troubles.”

“I wonder if the patriarch can tell me about it. Qin Xiao is one of the best brothers of Jian Chen. Even if you have encountered problems, Jian Chen will do his best to help out in favor of brother Qin Xiao.” What Jian Chen had said secretly raised Qin Xiao’s position in the Tianqin clan. Even though he already knew about Qin Xiao current strength and the fact that he would be the next patriarch, his action still helped Qin Xiao very much.

Hearing what Jian Chen had said, Qin Xiao who sat on the other side could not help but feel warm. He gazed at Jian Chen with gratitude and secretly thought that he indeed was not in the wrong for having such a brother.

What Jian Chen had said created some unavoidable changes to many of the people in the hall in regards to Qin Xiao. The Qin-surnamed people looked at Qin Xiao delightfully, while the gazes of the Tian-surnamed member became slightly complicated, with various emotions like envy mixed in.

Meanwhile, the patriarch observed everyone’s expressions without any change in his own. He laughed aloud, “Brother Jian Chen, for Xiao’er to have such a friend like you is Xiao’er’s honor. This time, the trouble my Tianqin clan has encountered perhaps really does require brother Jian Chen’s assistance. Qin’er’s safety will completely depend on brother Jian Chen.”

Jian Chen’s interested was piqued and so he asked, “Patriarch, perhaps something has happened to miss Qin Qin?” Qin Qin was the young lady of the Tianqin clan.

The happy expression of the patriarch gradually disappeared. He nodded solemnly, “Brother Jian Chen has guessed correctly. Qin’er has indeed encountered some problems this time. Half a month ago, on an outing, she was actually kidnapped by the Flood Dragon Bandits of Coiled Dragon Mountain and she’s going to be forced into marriage with the bandit boss’s only son in two days.”

Hearing that, Jian Chen’s expression became serious. Although his relationship with the young lady could only be considered as acquaintances, she was still Qin Xiao’s sister, so no matter what, he could not have such a magnificent girl being forced into marriage with an unknown man by bandits.

“Are the Flood Dragon Bandits really powerful?” Jian Chen asked.

The patriarch nodded seriously, “They are really strong. They are the largest bandit group in a radius of several tens of thousand kilometers and have already existed for eight hundred years. They are so strong that they can even fight the Zhuya Kingdom just by themselves. Also, the bandit group has many experts, with four known Heaven Saint Masters.”

“And according to rumors, the number of Heaven Saint Masters in the bandit group definitely is much more than that, since many Heaven Saint Masters who were well-known several centuries ago have gone into seclusion away from worldly affairs on Coiled Dragon Mountains. If you include those people, then the number of Heaven Saint Master should reach over a dozen. Also, with their boss who is already a peak Heaven Saint Master, their strength is so powerful that even the Zhuya Kingdom has to be aware of them,

not to mention the fact that we're just the strongest clan in a city."

The Tianqin clan member beside Jian Chen continued, "The strength of the Flood Dragon Bandits has caused the neighboring kingdoms to worry, especially how the boss of the bandits is the publicly-renowned as the strongest in this region. Not only is he a peak Heaven Saint Master, he also has a Heaven Tier Battle Skill, essentially making everyone in the radius of several tens of thousand kilometers useless if they do face off against him. Also, the boss has this extremely powerful golden soft mail. With the protection of the soft mail, even Heaven Saint Masters struggle to pose a threat to him, which has basically allowed the boss of the bandits to become the strongest person beneath Saint Rulers."

"Our Zhuya Kingdom once formed an alliance with the other kingdoms and sent out a dozen or so Heaven Saint Masters in attempt to wipe of the Flood Dragon Bandits. But in the end, they returned with defeat. Not only did they fail to wipe them out, they even lost five Heaven Saint Masters, and all five of them died by the hands of the bandit's boss." Another elderly man spoke.

"Looks like the boss of the Flood Dragon Bandits is quite strong." Jian Chen muttered quietly.

"Not just strong, he's basically become the strongest person beneath Saint Rulers. He has a Heaven Tier Battle Skill and with his golden soft mail, basically Heaven Saint Masters can't injure him at all." The patriarch said with a low voice.

Chapter 700: The Flood Dragon Bandits

“Currently, the great elders of my Tianqin clan have already gone to Coiled Dragon Mountain to negotiate with the boss of the Flood Dragon Bandits in attempt to save Qin Qin. But we don’t know what the outcome is, and if the negotiation fails, Qin Qin will...” Reaching the end, the patriarch of the Tianqin clan secretly sighed. The Flood Dragon Bandits were so strong that even the Zhuya Kingdom did not dare to casually provoke them, so if the negotiation failed, Qin Qin could only be forced into marriage with the son of the Flood Dragon Bandits’ boss.

Qin Xiao suddenly stood up and said, “No, we have to save sister no matter what. She definitely can’t marry the son of that bandit boss, or her life will be completely ruined.”

“Xiao’er, sit down. You need to understand the current situation. How can you be so hot-headed and attempt to do something above your abilities? If you act recklessly, you’ll pull the Tianqin clan into eternal damnation.” The patriarch of the Tianqin clan swiftly looked at Qin Xiao and scolded him with a low voice. Qin Xiao’s position as the future patriarch of the Tianqin clan was something already established, so he did not allow his son to be so hot-headed.

“Father, do we really have to watch sister getting married to a bandit while we can’t do anything?” Qin Xiao refuted unrelentingly.

The patriarch sighed, “Xiao’er, don’t worry right now. The great elders have already headed to Coiled Dragon Mountain for negotiations and should return very soon. Who knows, perhaps

there is still chance to save Qin Qin.”

As soon as he finished speaking, Jian Chen felt two powerful presences approach the Tianqin clan from far away. In the end, they entered the Tianqin clan, heading directly for the hall.

Jian Chen saw two elderly but ruddy men in long white robes walk in. On their faces, they revealed a sliver of helplessness and regret mixed in with some anger.

All the high-ranking members of the Tianqin clan sitting in the hall stood up and clasped their hands respectfully at the two great elders, “We greet the great elders!”

Jian Chen sat without moving in his seat and gazed indifferently at the two great elder. He was unfamiliar with the two great elders as neither of them were the person who had accompanied them to Mercenary City.

“Two great elders, I wonder how the negotiations went. Were the Flood Dragon Bandits willing to release my sister?” Qin Xiao stared at the two great elders anxiously. The two of them carried all the hope there was.

A great elder shook his head, “The boss of the Flood Dragon Bandits is determined in making Qin Qin marry his son. Even with the generous request we had mentioned, they were unwilling.”

Qin Xiao began to become gloomy. He clenched his fists tightly

and fumed with gritted teeth, “Since the Flood Dragon Bandits are unwilling to let my sister go, we have to make them pay a big price.”

“The third elder has already gone to contact other experts. Perhaps he can convince them to join forces with us and fight the Flood Dragon Bandits. If we raise enough power, we can try fighting with the bandits.” The patriarch of the Tianqin clan said softly.

When the Flood Dragon Bandits had kidnapped an immediate member of the Tianqin clan to marry with the bandit’s son, it was basically slapping the Tianqin clan in the face. If the marriage really did happen, just what dignity would the Tianqin clan still possess to remain established in Walaurent City?

“I reckon third elder will definitely return with failure. The experts of the surrounding countries know exactly how strong the boss of the Flood Dragon Bandits are. Why would anybody risk their lives to offend the bandit boss?” A great elder sighed lightly.

At this moment, another powerful presence flew towards the Tianqin clan from far away, arriving at the hall not long after. The newcomer was also an elderly, ruddy man in long white robes. He was the Heaven Saint Master that had accompanied Jian Chen to Mercenary City.

As soon as he entered the hall, he sighed. With a helpless expression, he said, “I’ve already contacted the Heaven Saint Masters of several large clans. They all fear the boss of the Flood Dragon Bandits, so they’re unwilling to work with us in handling

the bandits. Looks like this time, our Tianqin clan really will have to just accept the humiliation.”

Hearing what was said, everyone in the hall became gloomy.

At this moment, Jian Chen stood up from his seat. He clasped his hands at the three great elders and said, “Three elders, I wonder where the Flood Dragon Bandits are. I am willing to head to Coiled Dragon Mountain to save lady Qin Qin. I definitely won’t let lady Qin Qin be disgraced.”

Everyone’s gaze immediately gathered on Jian Chen and the three great elders were not exceptions either. However, two of the three had never seen Jian Chen, so they could not help but reveal a sliver of doubt. Closely afterwards, their eyes began glowing with a light, observing Jian Chen’s strength. However, no matter how they looked, they were unable to see Jian Chen’s strength because to them, Jian Chen was just an extremely ordinary person, not a cultivator in any shape or form. However, they soon felt an indescribable grace from Jian Chen, as if he was fused with the world, where he represented the world.

The two great elders looked at each other with a rather solemn gaze. Although Jian Chen seemed like an ordinary person to them, they naturally did not believe Jian Chen was as ordinary as he seemed.

“Brother Jian Chen, it’s actually you!” As the third great elder had seen Jian Chen before, he recognised Jian Chen with a single glance and immediately revealed a surprised expression.